



MY DISCIPLE DIED YET AGAIN

BOOK 01

Yóu Qián

EPUB CREATION BY LISA HAYES

My Disciple Died Yet Again

(我家徒弟又挂了)

by

Mrs. Ago

(Yóu Qián)

(尤前)

Synopsis

The Revered Master, Yu Yan, known as the number one in the cultivation world, waited for sixteen thousand years, and finally took in a disciple. He taught her carefully, and took care of her diligently.

He watched her slowly grew stronger as she comprehended the laws, and just as she was about to soar into prominence... she died!

Hence, he once again took in another disciple, carefully taught her, diligently took care of her, and then... she died again!

Thus, he took in another disciple, and not long after... she still died!

Yu Yan: ...

Disciple: ...

(Why do I always get picked up by the same person every time I reincarnate? Haaaa...)

Copyright © 2016 by Lisa Hayes

All rights reserved.

English Translation by Scrya @ [Scrya Translations](#)

ePub conversion by Lisa Hayes @ [Hasseno Blog](#)

This is a free eBook. You are free to give it away (in unmodified form) to whomever you wish.

No part of this eBook may be reproduced or transmitted in any form or by any means, electronic or mechanical, including photocopying, recording or by any information storage and retrieval system, without written permission from the author.

This book is a work of fiction. Names, characters, places, and incidents either are products of the author's imagination or are used fictitiously. Any resemblance to actual persons, living or dead, events, or locales is entirely coincidental.

Arc 01

Chapter 1: [A Peasant Woman, a River, and a Little Field](#)

Zhu Yao felt she had crossed over into another world, and it all happened without warning. Just a moment ago, she was still chatting with her friend on the computer, discussing about the loophole in the new online game her company developed. In the next instant, she was already inside this thatched house, while still holding onto the white mouse.

For a full ten minutes, she did not react at all. She looked at the mouse in her hands, and subconsciously looked for the CPU and the monitor which suddenly disappeared. However, she could do nothing but stare at the worn-out table in front of her. What computer? What monitor? She could not even find her freaking keyboard.

“Stinky brat, why are you still sitting around here for?” Someone pushed open the door, and a hand came hitting towards her. She subconsciously dodged, the mouse that was in her hands was slapped away. It then rolled onto the floor and disappeared without a trace.

Zhu Yao then raised her head and looked at the person beside her. She was a very skinny woman, the creases on her forehead was deep, and the deep-colored clothes she wore was greyed out, as though the color faded after being washed many times. Her entire body was emitting out a ‘I’m a peasant woman’ atmosphere. The main factor was the ancient-styled clothes she was wearing.

“Who are you?”

The woman instantly flared up. “Who am I? Have you become muddled from sleeping too much!? I’m your mother! Hurry up and boil some water, the sun is already shining so bright it’s burning my buttocks, and you’re still lazing around in the house! Do you want to get smacked?”

The woman’s first strike missed, but with her other hand, she picked Zhu Yao up, and pulled her out of the room without giving any explanations.

Zhu Yao felt that she had to explain to her, unfortunately, she could not find the opportunity, and when she returned to her senses, she had already been thrown into the kitchen.

Looking at the firewood which was stacked up to half the height of the wall, and the clay furnace, Zhu Yao felt that there was definitely a problem with her world-crossing method. She was still wearing her own pyjamas, with not a single change. This proved that she crossed over with her own body, then how did that mother of hers appear? Even though she crossed over with her body, it used the setting of a soul crossover. Was this really alright? The most important thing was, she did not even know how to start a fire, let alone boil water!

Although she knew crossing over was like buying groceries recently, a very trending phenomenon, she never expected there would come a turn for her. She’s nothing but a technology geek, after all.

Because she was interested in computers ever since she was young, after graduating, she had been working in jobs related to developing games. With a bunch of single friends, they came together and developed a game. The game <<Deity Royal>> which they created became one of the hottest games in the country, and as the game matured, safeguarding the game became her main job in her company.

Investigating the loopholes and bugs that existed in the game, coming up with fixes, etc. She was one of those legendary GMs. There's not even a single benefit to having a person like her crossing over, is there? Just which bastard made me cross over into another world? Come out! I promise I won't beat you to death!

Three months went by in a flash, Zhu Yao had crossed over into this world for three months now, and she had gotten a better understanding of the situation around her. The place she was living in was a small village, and because most of the people living in the village had the surname 'Zhu', it was called Zhu Village. Her name was also Zhu Yao, and the middle-aged woman back then was her mother. She was one of the widows in the village, and according to what she found out, the mother and daughter had relied on each other for decades.

She had once tried to explain her origin to this mother-in-name of hers with hand-drawn pictures. Unfortunately, she did not believe it, and Zhu Yao was even forced to visit Doctor Wang near the village entrance, saying she needed a few jabs.

Looking at the kind-looking middle-aged doctor stroking his beard as he took out dozens of needles with the thickness of a

thumb, Zhu Yao instantly threw aside her integrity, hugged onto her ‘mother’, and bursted out crying. “Mother! You’re my biological mother!”

“Your mind is finally clear now? Don’t ever spout such nonsense again.” With a pained look, ‘mother’ wiped away Zhu Yao’s tears, and did not forget to give Doctor Wang a word of praise. “Doctor Wang is really a genius doctor. The moment your needles came out, my daughter instantly recovered.”

“You flatter me!” Doctor Wang laughed really proudly, as he spun the needle in his hand. “Mrs. Zhu, you’re too courteous. As insurance, allow me to jab Yao-er two more times, to prevent relapses.”

“...” [Your sister will relapse.](#)

In short, Zhu Yao threw her past away, and from then on, she never dared to bring up the topic about her crossing from another world, and lived peacefully in the Zhu Village as an old missy! That’s right, she’s an old missy. When she crossed over, she was twenty-eight, and in this world, not being married even at the age of twenty-eight, she was extremely old for a missy.

As to why she did not marry, her ‘mother’ never brought it up, and Zhu Yao had it easy. She was extremely afraid that a husband would somehow appear out of nowhere, and if that were to happen, even if Doctor Wang were to stab her with a wooden club, she would not care less.

“Yao-er, you’re heading off to wash your laundry?” As she was about to head to the riverside, she met Doctor Wang along the way, and he was giving her a [smile like a sunflower, which smelled like chrysanthemum.](#)

“Un... Uncle Wang!” Zhu Yao instinctively took a step back, afraid that he would pull out a needle from somewhere.

She blocked her chest with the wooden basket filled with clothes. “Mother said the sun is good today, so she wants me to wash the beddings.”

“Is that so!” Doctor Wang laughed, and then sighed. “What a diligent girl. If not for...” He paused mid-way through his sentence, and as though he had brought up something he should not have, he looked at her a little apologetically.

“Is there something you need of me, Uncle Wang?” Seeing his hesitant look, Zhu Yao had no choice but to take the initiative.

Doctor Wang smiled apologetically, and pushed the little boy next to him. “It’s like this. I heard there’s deities coming to the city to select disciples, and everyone is allowed to try it out. I wanted to have my child test his luck, but my wife just happened to be ill, and I can’t leave, so...”

Zhu Yao looked at the boy he was holding onto. He looked about seven or eight years old, and had a pretty delicate-looking and tender little face. Currently, his cheeks were inflated, and he was looking at her with pouted lips, which made Zhu Yao feel like

pinching him.

Zhu Yao raised her head and looked at Doctor Wang. They evidently did not look alike at all.

“Uncle Wang, you want me to bring him over in your stead?” Uncle Wang nodded, and became even more embarrassed. “I know this might interrupt your work, but these deities only come once every ten years. Although the number of people they select each time never amount to more than a handful, there is still a possibility. If one were to be selected, that person can become a deity, after all.”

Becoming a deity? Zhu Yao had always been allergic to these unscientific things, as though she was able to faintly smell the scent of frauds.

But after all, she and Doctor Wang both lived in the same village, and it's not like she was able to return back to her own world any time soon. And since both of them frequently met each other, it's not a problem to help out from time to time. Hence, without saying another word, she accepted his request.

After Doctor Wang gave her plenty of thanks, he took over her basket, saying that he would return them in her stead, and pushed the kid, who was evidently angry, to her. Then, he left happily.

After he walked a couple of distance away, the little boy suddenly flung her hands away, and with a pout, he looked at her with contempt. “Let me tell you this, even if you help me, I will not

marry you.”

Zhu Yao was startled, and was momentarily amused. She could not help but pinch his pink and tender cheeks. “You little wimp, you’re not even that old yet, what nonsense are you talking about?”

“I’m not speaking nonsense!” The little boy dodged her hands, and rubbed his aching cheeks. “I have already heard all about it. No one in the village dares to marry you, so you’re not married even at the age of twenty-eight. All men must stay away from you, otherwise, if they were to be depended by you, their lives will be ruined.”

No matter how desperate she was, she would not lay her hands on a kid, right? “Tell me clearly. How will I ruin their lives?”

The little wimp became even more haughty. “You can’t give birth to any kids, whoever marries you will have their lineage cut off, you will obviously ruin their lives.”

Infertility! Zhu Yao was stunned by this shocking revelation. That’s impossible. Even though she was a technogeek, she would still go for check-ups every year. How would she not know about being infertile? Even if God planned on rationalizing how a twenty-eight year old unmarried woman could cross over to this world, he should not have the need to do it this badly, right?

“I’m the only son of my family, I will not marry you, so give up!” The little wimp placed his hands on his hips, and once again

emphasized with a serious tone.

“Ay! What haughty attitude is this!” As expected of a spoiled brat, [three days without a beating, and a child will scale the roof to strip the tiles](#)! He’s basically asking for a beating! Rolling up her sleeves, she scooped up the little wimp with a single arm, and with her other hand, she gave his buttocks a sound smacking. “This is what you get for having no manners! This is what you get for spouting nonsense! This is what you get for calling me infertile! You’re infertile! Your entire family’s infertile!”

The little wimp finally knew of fear, and desperately began to struggle. But, he was but a child of seven or eight years old, how could he compare to Zhu Yao, who was a twenty-eight-year-old adult (unmarried)? A dozen of slaps came smacking down, the little wimp’s snow-white buttocks had already puffed up and turned bright red.

He had also began to cry out loud after his initial struggle, and finally, he gave up on resisting as well. Come on, cry out loud, cry louder. Doctor Wang had already walked pretty far away anyway, even if you were to cry your lungs out, no one would come and save you. Wakakakakakaka... kuh... There seems to be something wrong with this scene?

Only after about half an hour, did Zhu Yao finally release the boy, whose face had already been utterly tear-ridden. She looked at him as he wiped off his tears while he pulled up his pants. The feeling of teaching a spoiled brat a lesson, is simply incomparably refreshing.

“I will let this one time slide, if you were to show such an impolite behavior one more time, I will...” Zhu Yao dragged out her warning, satisfyingly looked at the trembling spoiled brat, and laughed even more happily. “I will make sure you won’t be able get off your bed, understand?” Eh? This line sounds a little strange? Ah, I don’t care anymore. “Let’s go. We’re going to the city. Make sure to follow me!”

Zhu Yao took the lead as she walked over to the main road. After walking a distance of about five steps, the spoiled brat then limped after her, and it looked as though a kettle could be hooked onto that pouted lips of his.

This title came from a saying. In the ancient days, a girl’s dream is to become a peasant woman, live by the river, and have a small little field.

‘Your sister will relapse’ – basically, it’s like how people say ‘Your momma’s fat’.

‘Smile like a sunflower, which smelled like chrysanthemum’ – Basically, there’s hidden intentions hidden beneath his smile.

‘Three days without a beating, and a child will scale the roof to strip the tiles.’ – A chinese idiom, it means, a child will cause mischief if not properly watched over.

Chapter 2: The Deities' Disciple Selection

Probably because of the so-called deities' disciple selection, along the way, Zhu Yao encountered several people holding onto their kids, as they rushed to the city. They all looked really excited, and their topics of discussion were all about the deities' descent and the disciple selection. Zhu Yao silently praised the frauds' appeal, they're actually able to gain the deep trust of this many people.

Zhu Village was actually not that far from the city, in just an hour on foot, they had arrived at the city gates. Because there were too many people entering the city, she had no choice but to hold onto the little wimp's hand, to prevent losing him from her sight. The little wimp, however, did not resist, he only instinctively tug his hands a little, and after that, quietly allowed Zhu Yao to pull him along. It's just that he still had that huge frown on his little face.

They finally arrived at that disciple selection venue, only to find the place already packed with a large number of people. In the center of the crowd, a huge stage was erected, and on top of it, were four men. Every single one of them wore a clean set of white clothes, and on the corner of clothes, cloud-like symbols were embroidered, which gave a very divine feeling. Unexpectedly, the four of them were very young, and they were more bearable to look at than the white-bearded old men in her imagination.

Zhu Yao silently gave them a praise in her heart. She did not expect these frauds to be so professional. Just by looking at the uniform set of clothes, she understood that these people were definitely part of an organization, and there were standard rules set in place. Just by this ostentation alone, it was inevitable that

there would be this many people who would be fooled to take part and observe.

A long queue of people were at the right of the tall stage. Although there were both men and women in the crowd, every single adult was holding onto one or two children, and their age ranged from those who had only just began to learn how to walk, to those who were half an adult's height. But most of them were children who did not look more than ten years old. Zhu Yao guessed that was the registration queue. Although she was not entirely interested in this obvious fraud activity, she still had to complete Uncle Wang's request. In any case, she was not the one being scammed, so, she did not hesitate and stood at the end of the queue.

This time around, little wimp was really obedient, and followed after her to the end of the queue. Earlier, he still had that huge frown on his small face, but now, it was replaced with a face filled with high expectations, and he would occasionally stretch out his little head to look at the front of the queue. After all, kids would always be curious when it came to new things.

Not long after, among the four people on the stage, a middle-aged man stood up, took a few steps forward, and cleared his throat. "Everyone, every decade, there will be a day when our Ancient Hill Sect will take in disciples, and that day is today. There's no restriction in gender, nor in birthright. May the participants please proceed forward to take the test."

This guy sure was direct. Zhu Yao thought that he would not miss out on a long drawn-out speech, but she did not expect he

would immediately start the selection after only saying a few words. This caused Zhu Yao to even grow a little curious. Just what kind of arrogant fraud organization is this?

“First person!” The middle-age man called out, and the woman, who was standing right in front of the queue, held onto a little child on each hand, and walked forward. On the stage, a younger white-clothed deity waved his hand, and a round crystal ball suddenly appeared at the center of the stage. The people on stage exclaimed at the sight of this.

There was not the slightest of change in the youth’s expression, as he coldly said to the two children on the stage, “Place your hand on it!”

The two children took a step back out of fright, and finally, the children’s mother, pushed the two of them from their backs. “What’s there to be afraid of? If you’re selected, you two will instantly rise into prominence. Hurry, go!”

Only then did the two children put their small hands onto the clear round ball, but unfortunately, the ball did not show any sort of change.

The white-clothed middle-aged man shook his head. “No Spirit Veins, next.”

The woman sighed, and she momentarily had a slight face of disappointment. However, she did not argue, and held onto both her son and daughter as they walked down the stage.

Zhu Yao, however, was a little dazed. This scene... Why did it look so familiar? Hey, isn't this the commonly seen disciple selection scenario in Xianxia novels? In every introduction of Xianxia stories, the scenario of testing one's Spirit Veins would always appear! She had always thought that she had crossed over into a peasant life novel, and would only be able to live as a peasant woman for the rest of her life. But looking at the current situation, did she happen to enter the Xianxia route? But... Zhu Yao looked at herself, and then, once again looked at the little turnips queueing in front of her. Kuh... Did she not cross over a little too late? Only to begin cultivating at the age of twenty-eight, even if she were to climb, she would not be able to climb faster than these bunch of little turnips, right!?

It was only the first time she had ever crossed over, and Zhu Yao had already begun to feel absolutely disheartened.

“Hey, hey...” Zhu Yao felt a slight tug on her hand, and when she turned to look, she realized the little wimp beside her had been pulling her.

“What is it?” You should not interrupt a woman who was currently dejected over her own beauty.

The little wimp pointed to the stage right in front. “Hurry and go, it's almost our turn.”

Only did Zhu Yao realized that a large empty space appeared right in front of them, as she hurriedly brought little wimp over to

close the gap.

The test for Spirit Veins progressed really quickly, but unfortunately, not many children had Spirit Veins. “No Spirit Veins, next.” That middle-aged man had also been repeating this over and over. A large number of children went up, but only three to four children were left on the stage, and all of them were either Tetra or Penta Spirit Veins holders. Looking at the expressions of the four deities on the stage, she doubted they were really good Spirit Veins as well.

“Next!”

A kid who was entirely covered in dirt climbed up. He looked extremely weak and frail, as though he would fall with a gentle breeze of the wind. His clothes were even utterly torn and ragged, there was not a single complete patch of cloth anywhere, and he was not accompanied by any adults. Evidently, he was a little beggar. The people below could not help but pinch their noses, as though they were a little disgusted from the smell.

However, the four men on the stage did not show any change in their expressions, as though they did not even notice the boy’s ragged look. They had cultivated for many years, and had never made fun of others because of their looks. One might be living in poverty now, but who would know for sure that he would not rise into prominence the next day?

The middle-aged man pointed at the round ball on the stage. “Place your hands on it!”

Although the kid was dirty, he did not mind the gazes from everyone else, as he walked straight towards the center and placed his hand on the ball. The ball which was clear and transparent earlier, slowly revealed a green light. As the green light was about to fill the entire ball, another ray of golden light flashed, which filled the rest of the ball.

“Metal and Wood Duo Spirit Veins!” The three youths sitting behind suddenly stood up at the same time, and their blank expressions earlier had instantly changed. They looked at that poverty-stricken boy with faces of joy.

“I did not expect to encounter a disciple with Duo Spirit Veins this year!” The four men nodded at the same time, and even their tone had become extremely courteous. Someone with Duo Spirit Veins was definitely able to enter the inner sect. “This little junior, please first head over to the side and have some rest. After the end of the test today, you will return to the sect with us.”

The little beggar nodded. Strangely, his little face did not show any joyful expression like the four men. He simply obediently stood beside the rest of the children who stayed, and his expression looked as though he had known the outcome before he came for the test.

Zhu Yao glanced at the calm-looking little beggar, and momentarily felt a little strange. She could not describe it in words, and simply felt there was something wrong about him.

“We’re up next!” The little wimp beside him was completely unable to sense the change in Zhu Yao’s mood, and simply pulled her hand with an excited expression.

“Next!”

“It’s our turn!” The little wimp pulled her along as he sprinted excitedly up the stage. Without even the slightest hint of nervousness, he instantly placed his hand on the round ball.

Zhu Yao lowered her head and looked at the little wimp beside her, and then, he once again looked over to the little beggar on the stage. She finally understood, the less Spirit Veins one had, the better one was. But a Duo Spirit Veins holder was already this amazing, just what would their reaction be if someone had only a single Spirit Vein?

While having this thought in mind, suddenly, she heard a large uproar coming from her surroundings. Even the four white-clothed deities, who were standing far away earlier, suddenly closed in tightly around them, and they looked disbelievingly at little wimp, who was beside her.

“Heavenly... Heavenly Spirit Vein!” The middle-aged man actually stuttered, as he snatched the child away from her hand, as though he was about to carry him up. “He’s actually a Fire Heavenly Spirit Vein holder!”

“Hey, hey, hey. What are you doing?” Zhu Yao became really anxious, and no longer cared whether they were actually real

deities or not, as they actually tried to snatch a child away from her. If she were to lose this little wimp, Doctor Wang would definitely stab her to death when she returned! She forcefully took little wimp back from the white-clothed man. Human traffickers, get away from him!

Little wimp seemed to be a little frightened as well, as he hid his head in her chest.

The four of them finally regained their senses. When they saw Zhu Yao's protective figure, the middle-aged man stood forward, cleared his throat and said, "Miss, you have misunderstood. We were simply too agitated after seeing a talent that would only appear once every thousand years. What your child possess is the Heavenly Spirit Vein, and it only appears once in a million."

It must be known that, let alone Ancient Hill Sect, even the entire cultivation realm had not seen a person who possessed the Heavenly Spirit Vein for thousands of years. The moment this child returns with them, he will definitely become one of the elders' direct disciple. How could they not be agitated?

The corner of Zhu Yao's lips twitched, she momentarily felt an immense blow, which was capable of pushing her to the ground and prevent her from getting up, coming from the two words 'your child'. Did she really look like someone who could have such big child? She thought of the age when women would give birth in ancient times. Alright, she did indeed look like it.

"He's not my child!" This point was something she had to make clear of.

The middle-aged man was startled. He sized Zhu Yao up from head to toe, and his brows began to slightly crease.

Hey, hey, hey! What's with that expression as though you're looking at a human trafficker? "I was requested by his parents to bring him here in their stead." You're the human trafficker, you bastard!

The middle-aged man finally nodded out of realization, but he still held a hint of suspicion. "With a Spiritual Vein this extraordinary, he will definitely experience great success in the future. We will be staying here for another day, so there is still enough time for him to say his farewells to his parents."

How would she be sure that he would not be sold if she were to leave him here? No, she had to hurry and bring little wimp back home.

"Deity, are you saying, I have been selected?" At the key moment, little wimp actually came out of hiding. When he saw the four men nodding their heads, he instantly got out of Zhu Yao's embrace, and before she could even react, he had already happily stood at the center of the row of selected children. As he ran, he happily chimed, "This is great!"

This traitor! Zhu Yao's face slowly darkened. However, it was a good thing that they were going to stay for another day. After this, she would simply return little wimp to Doctor Wang, and it would no longer be something she had to care about.

Left without any other options, she simply followed after little wimp and took a few steps back. Seeing the excited little wimp chatting with the rest of the children, she silently sighed.

“You don’t have be this sad!” Little wimp seemed to have felt her depression, as he suddenly approached her, and pulled her hand. “Don’t worry, earlier, I asked the four uncles. They said I’m allowed to bring someone back to the sect. So, I have forced myself to bring you along!”

Zhu Yao was startled. She suspiciously looked at the child who was only half her height. This little wimp wanted to bring her along to the sect? When did he become so thoughtful?

Chapter 3: Curiosity Kills The Cat

However, under her gaze, little wimp's face slowly reddened, stuttering, "In... In any case, you have touched... touched me. My dad said, a man must be upright, so... I will take responsibility. Along our way here, I have already decided that, if I happen to get selected, I will definitely bring you along!"

Zhu Yao was even more mystified. This little wimp couldn't be referring to... her smacking his buttocks, right? Because she touched his buttocks, he decided that he had to take responsibility? For a moment, Zhu Yao was at a loss of words. Little wimp, at such a young age, you actually have such a large hole in your brain. Does your parents know about it?

"In... In any case, I will definitely not throw you aside!" Little wimp stamped his feet, and he began to look even more awkward.

Zhu Yao suddenly felt like teasing him a little. "Then, what will you do if you did not get selected?"

The little wimp startled for a moment. Scratching his head, his small lips evidently began to pout unhappily, as though he was a little discontented with her distrustful attitude. He snorted, "If I had not been selected, I would still take responsibility. Once I grow up, I will definitely marry you." Before Zhu Yao could even feel moved, he raised his head, looked at her, and added another line, "As my concubine!"

Bloody hell! I really feel like beating him up so badly, to the point

his mother won't be able to recognize him! As though little wimp knew that she would get angry, he turned around, sprinted off and squeezed into the bunch of kids on the stage. He even turned back and made a face at her.

Zhu Yao clenched her fists, and endured. Little wimp, just you wait. After this, I guarantee I won't beat you to death. Taking a few deep breaths, she calmed her emotions down. Looking down to the stage below, the queue did not look like it would be decreasing any time soon, as there were even more people joining in. However, the number of children staying on the stage, were still not as many.

Including little wimp, there were still not even ten of them. It seemed like children who possess Spirit Veins were extremely small in number, giving a rough estimate, not even one in a hundred possess one. And, among them, children with Tetra and Penta Spirit Veins made up a larger number.

Looking at the floating ball at the side, Zhu Yao could not help but grow a little curious. Not only could it float by itself, it was able to change in color. Earlier, when little beggar touched it, it was green and gold in color, while it turned red when little wimp touched it. She wondered what color it would be if she were to touch it.

Out of curiosity, she stretched out a single finger, and poked it. In an instant, multiple colors began to spiral within the ball. Green, blue, gold, orange, and red. Five different colors instantly filled the entire ball.

“Penta Spirit Veins.” The middle-aged man in-charge of the test, noticed her small movement, but was not angry at all. There would always be parents who could not contain their curiosity, and wanted to test for their own Spirit Veins as well. He had already grown accustomed to it. And this person was the lady who brought the talented boy with the Heavenly Spirit Vein, naturally, he would not fuss about it. She even possessed Spirit Veins as well, but unfortunately, it was the worst Penta Spirit Veins, and she was already at such an old age, even if she were to start cultivating now, her prospects of becoming a deity were hopeless.

Hearing “Penta Spirit Veins” from him, Zhu Yao sighed. She was after all, someone who crossed over from another world. She thought that she would possess some overly exaggerated, heaven-bending Spirit Vein, but it was actually the worst Penta Spirit Veins. It seemed like the peasant life was still the most suitable route for her to take. But God sure was petty. Why did he not give her a Spirit Vein that’s a tad bit special!?

Zhu Yao was a little disappointed. Just as she was about to retract her finger, suddenly, the ball which was already filled with five different colors began to stir. The five colors mixed about, a small little flash of lightning suddenly appeared, and it began to spread to the entire ball. Suddenly, with a ‘pata’ sound, the clear ball shattered on the floor.

Uh...

Zhu Yao was still in the position where she had her finger stretched out, and she froze on the spot. This... She could not have been the one who broke it, right!? That... Even though, earlier,

nothing happened when such a large number of children placed their hands on it, why did it break when she gave it a simple poke?

“I... Will everything be fine if I apologize?” Raising her head weakly, she looked at the four white-clothed men. However, none of them answered, and they were simply looking at her with dumbfounded expressions. Zhu Yao suddenly had the impulse to turn tail and run. They were not going to make her pay, right!? She’s nothing but a peasant woman! Could she pay it off with a river and a field?

“It... It wasn’t intentional!” Whatever the case, let’s try admitting her mistake first.

“You... You’re...” The middle-aged man, still with that dumbfounded expression, stretched out his hand shakily and pointed at her.

Zhu Yao weakly took a step back. She was about to cry out of fright, you know? “I don’t have any money on me!”

“What we just saw... Was it actually...?” Another white-clothed man took a step forward, staring straight at Zhu Yao. Great, even if she wanted to run now, it was too late.

“There’s no doubt about it!” White-clothed man number three came around her as well, and was much calmer than the two before him.

“We have to contact the sect about this immediately!” White-clothed man number four, who was also the youngest out of the four, sized her up seriously. “This issue is of the utmost importance, we must immediately return to the sect.”

“Yes, senior-martial uncle Li.” The three of them responded together.

Currently Zhu Yao did not have the mood to care about why the youngest-looking man had the highest seniority among them. Because, she was about to be kidnapped by these four men.

The youngest out of them, who was referred to as senior-martial uncle Li, summoned an item with a wave of his hand, and suddenly, a gigantic piece of leaf appeared. Stably stopping in mid-air, the other three men then did some hand seals. The children on the stage who were selected earlier, along with her, suddenly felt light on their feet, and they flew towards that piece of leaf.

When she regained her senses, she was already standing on the leaf. Hey, hey, what happened to staying for another day?

Uh... They were not actually thinking of kidnapping her back to the sect and have her questioned for her crimes, right!?

“Wait a minute... I can explain.” It really wasn’t intentional, you can’t blame the user for the product’s poor quality, you know?

Unfortunately, the four men completely ignored her, as though

they were anxious to report her back to the sect. With a wave of their hands, a transparent barrier-like thing enveloped her and the children's surroundings. Then, the four men walked to the very front of the leaf, manipulated their arts, and flew the leaf towards the skies. They completely did not give Zhu Yao the opportunity to explain.

Zhu Yao's face darkened. Sitting at the center of the seven to eight little turnips, she had a really bad feeling about what's coming next.

As she thought, the surrounding little turnips were staring at her in annoyance. Hey hey, you, the kid with the big buttocks, you don't have to look at me with such a hateful expression, do you?

"You broke the deity's treasure! You're a bad person." A little girl with twintails was the first to condemn her.

"Uh... Big sister didn't do it intentionally!"

"You did a bad thing, and you still don't admit it. As I thought, you're a bad person." Another little boy spoke up and denounced her.

What the hell, what does this have to do with you!

Seeing someone taking the initiative, the other children moved closer as well, and began to criticize her without pause. Zhu Yao suddenly felt a slight headache. Please, she was not sure of what

happened herself, why were you little wimps getting so agitated for?

“We will pay for it, you lot are not allowed to bully her! Whoever bullies her, I will beat that person up!” At the critical moment, little wimp Wang suddenly appeared, blocking right in front of her. He even raised his small fists in a threatening manner. Zhu Yao suddenly felt a little moved. At least you’re conscientious, as I thought, I didn’t help you for nothing. “She will be my concubine in the future, so if anyone were to bully her, it will be the same as bullying me!”

Damn it, I really feel like beating him into a pulp!

As though they were frightened by little wimp Wang, the other little turnips no longer surrounded her.

“I told you I will definitely take responsibility!” Seeing everyone dispersing, with a prideful look, little wimp said to her.

Zhu Yao simply looked towards his small face, and began pinching his cheeks. Emphasizing on every single word, she hatefully said, “Then I really have to. Thank. You. My. Little. Husband. Wang.”

Little wimp struggled to break free, weakly took two steps back and moved away from her demonic claws. With an inconvenienced look, he rubbed his small face. “I have a name! I’m called Wang Xuzhi! We... We’re not married yet, you can’t... you can’t call me that!”

After saying that, with a flushed face, he ran.

Yo, you actually know how it's like to be embarrassed?
Speechless, Zhu Yao simply shook her head.

Chapter 4: Entering The Mountain Sect

Looking at the four men who were concentrating on controlling the flying leaf in front, she instantly grew anxious again. Just what the hell did these people want with her? Was that round ball really that important? In the cultivation world, were these objects used to test Spirit Veins not everywhere? Even if it's destroyed, there should not be a need to arrest her and send her for questioning, right!?

Imagining how she, as a pure and innocent person, was about to go into debt in an instant, and was probably going to spend the next half of her life paying back her debt, she began to feel extremely terrible. Mom... I want to go home.

Just as Zhu Yao was feeling restless, the scenery in front of her suddenly changed. Earlier, while she was flying in the air, she could only see an endless sea of white clouds. However, in the next instant, as though the curtains had been pulled open, the clouds scattered, and a mountain range could be seen floating in the air. Like thin silver ribbons, streams of water flowed down from the peak of the mountains, falling into the ocean beneath.

Zhu Yao was instantly dumbfounded by this game-like background scenery in front of her. She did not expect that, in reality, she would actually be able to see such a scenery.

The leaf they were sitting on, flew towards the the largest mountain within the mountain range. Stopping a few hundred feet before the mountain, Senior-martial uncle Li, the youngest looking youth out of the four, took out a wooden tablet, and threw it into

the air. Then, in the space surrounding the mountain, a layer of plastic firm-like substance tore open, and a crack big enough for the leaf to pass through revealed itself. After passing through, it automatically closed itself, and could no longer be seen. Zhu Yao guessed that it should be something similar to a great formation used to protect the mountain range.

Only after entering, could she see the big and small residences in the floating mountain range. And, the place they were heading to, was exactly the plaza in front of the largest residence.

Finally, she was able to step on solid ground, but, she realized there were already a sea of little turnips standing around in the plaza. When she looked carefully, there were more than a hundred of them. They were separated into clusters, and four white-robed men stood in front of each cluster. Zhu Yao instantly understood that these were the children who were selected from various other cities.

After senior-martial uncle Li landed, he gave a simple greeting to the rest of his companions. She was unsure of what he said to the rest of them, but, not long after, all the white-robed people at the plaza, without any exception, looked straight towards her.

Zhu Yao suddenly felt immense pressure, and intentionally tried to hide behind the crowd. However, the people present were all turnips who were merely half her size, there's no place for her to hide even if she wanted to, unless she were to pile up two turnips over each other. She turned and looked towards her little friend Wang Xuzhi, who had a small and thin body, and started pondering the feasibility of this idea.

And as though he felt her intentions, he quickly plunged into the crowd, and distanced himself far away from her.

Little wimp! You unfaithful brat!

“Senior-martial uncle Li, this is a matter of utmost importance. There’s no matter if we disregard the rules in this case, let’s hurry inside and inform the Sect Master.” The white-robed people seemed to have finally come up with something, as a female disciple suggested while she pointed to the hall, and then, she turned back and gave Zhu Yao a weird glance.

The white-robed man named Li seemed to have accepted her proposal. He gave Zhu Yao a glance as well, then, he turned and quickly entered the hall.

Zhu Yao became even more anxious. Why did she feel like this issue was turning out to be more serious than she initially imagined it to be? Was it too late to run? Even though there’s an ocean beneath her, she knew how to swim...

“I’m Chen Ying, a disciple of the Glory Hall of Sword Mountain. Junior-martial sister, I wonder how I should address you?” The woman who was speaking with senior-martial uncle Li earlier, walked over, and asked with a light smile.

See, here they come. They have begun the questioning. “My name’s Zhu Yao! Umm... Ms. Chen, that thing about the crystal ball, I really didn’t do it intentionally!” Girl, you must believe me!

Chen Ying actually gave an even gentler smile. “Since you have entered the Ancient Hill Sect, we belong to the same sect, so it’s fine if you call me senior-martial sister. Junior-martial sister, don’t worry. About this issue regarding the sect, Sect Master will give his judgment soon.”

“Ah, I still have to see the Sect Master?” He will not be making her stay behind and work to pay off her debts, right?

Chen Ying nodded. “According to the sect’s rules, initially, new disciples must first spend one month at the Commandment Hall to learn our sect’s laws. Then, they will be taken in as disciples by the various Mountain Lords, and their talents will then be fostered. However, junior-martial sister’s situation is a little special, so there’s a need to first inform Sect Master, and have him make a decision.”

Special... Especially bad, right? They’re actually claiming debts the moment I step into the sect.

Chen Ying talked about some other things as well, but unfortunately, Zhu Yao’s mind was filled with thoughts regarding the broken ball, and completely could not absorb what she was telling her. The female disciple seemed to have realized Zhu Yao was distracted as well, and simply stopped talking. Not long after, Senior-martial uncle Li, who had entered the hall earlier, came out.

“An order from the Sect Master, he wants you to enter the hall.”

Senior-martial uncle Li told her.

Zhu Yao took in a deep breath. In any case, I have to pay sooner or later, let's just go then. She gritted her teeth and followed after him.

“Umm... Senior-martial uncle Li, is the Sect Master really angry?” She had to make mental preparations.

He turned and glanced at her. Towards her question, he no longer had the high-class cold look like earlier, rather, he answered really gently. “Our Sect Master has a gentle temperament. How can he be angry?”

“Oh.” It's good that he wasn't angry, there was still hope for discussion then.

Only after they entered the hall did she realize that there were actually six people seated inside. Five people were seated at the bottom, while a single person was seated at the middle floor, he must be the so-called Sect Master. He looked around forty years of age, and had a smile on his face. Just as senior-martial uncle Li had said, he did indeed look like a very gentle person.

“This lady is...” Seeing Zhu Yao entering the hall, the Sect Master turned to look towards senior-uncle Li who brought her in.

“To answer Sect Master, it's indeed her!”

When he heard his reply, the Sect Master's expression became even more surprised. He sized Zhu Yao up from head to toe, and then asked. "She... Why is she so..."

"Old?" The corner of Zhu Yao's lips twitched. She was momentarily unhappy. You should be glad I'm not even despising you. What right do you have to call me old? "Uncle, I'm twenty-eight this year, thank you!" Did you not know asking a lady's age was taboo?

The Sect Master was startled for a moment, as though he did not expect that she would talk back to him. And, as though he realized his question was indeed a little inappropriate, he coughed, and with a wave of his hand, a ball, which looked similar to the crystal ball she broke, suddenly appeared in the center of the hall. However, the ball was much bigger, and clearer, than the previous one.

"Miss, place your hand on the ball."

Zhu Yao's eyes suddenly widened. She looked at the ball in front of her, and silently took a step back. She had a phobia for balls.

"Umm... Earlier, I accidentally broke one. I'm afraid..." She weakly stretched out her finger. "So... I think it's best if I don't place my hand onto it."

"No worries! Just place your hand onto it!" Sect Master thought that she was afraid, so he gave her an encouraging smile. "Don't be afraid, I will guarantee that no harm will be done to you."

“You won’t blame me if it breaks?” It seemed like they had a big stock of them. Then why did they bring her here?

“Naturally, I won’t blame you.”

“Then, the one I broke in the city earlier?”

“I won’t blame you for that either!”

“Say that earlier!” They actually made her heart pound wildly for the entire journey. So they were not trying to make her pay for the crystal ball. Zhu Yao instantly placed her hand on the ball. As long as they were not going to make her pay, forget about a single hand, if they wanted her to hug it, she would do it too.

The moment her hand touched the crystal ball, streaks of lightning once again instantly filled the entire ball. In less than five seconds, like the previous ball, it shattered.

“She really is!” Sect Master uncle suddenly stood up, and he was already showing a very excited expression. He turned and looked towards senior-martial uncle Li below. “Hurry! Go to Jade Forest Mountain! Inform Ancestral Grandmaster of this matter!”

“Yes!”

Only after senior-martial uncle Li had left the hall, did the Sect

Master finally calm down his excitement. His face, which was initially already gentle, became even more kind and pleasant when he looked towards Zhu Yao. “What’s your name?”

“What’s your name, uncle?” Knowing that she did not need to pay for her debts, Zhu Yao momentarily felt much better, and blurted out.

A certain uncle: “...”

“What audacity!” A red-clothed lady, who was seated at the bottom, yelled, and looked at Zhu Yao with a criticizing look. “Do you not know of the person who’s currently sitting in front of you?”

“I don’t know?” If she knew, why would she have asked?

“You...” The red-clothed lady became furious. “With such arrogance, how can you become successful? Currently, you’re still nothing but a mere mortal, but if you were to make achievements with your cultivation in the future, won’t you be capable of offending your master and destroying the reputation of our ancestors? Senior-martial brother, I think there’s still a need for further discussion regarding this matter.”

“Junior-martial sister, do not be impatient.” Sect Master waved his hand and said. “You know that someone with a potential like this is hard to come by as well. In these ten thousand years, there has only been one.”

The red-robed lady, was still unsatisfied. “Even if that’s the case, this woman’s age is already way past her prime. Even with such great potential, I’m afraid it will be hard for her to form her Azoth Core before her lifespan is spent. By then, aren’t we simply flogging a dead horse?”

“Junior-martial sister, this...”

“Hey, hey, hey! When you guys are talking, can you please think about the person in question?” Zhu Yao could not help but raise her hand. When talking bad about someone, who would say it in front of the person in question? Were they testing the limits of her patience, or were they testing their guts?

Chapter 5: Bro, Who Are You?

The red-clothed lady became even more furious. “What audacity! You did something wrong, yet you still do not attempt to amend your mistakes. You actually made the same mistake of cutting into someone’s conversation twice. Did your mother not teach you the word ‘etiquette’?”

Yo! Such bad temper! Do you think you’re the only one who knows how to scold someone’s mom!?

“Then where did your mom learn her etiquettes from? Before talking about others, has she ever looked at herself in a pool of her own piss?” Balls. I have never gotten this angry ever since I was born.

“You...” She began to flare up.

“This red-clothed miss.” Zhu Yao did not give her the opportunity to talk back. “If interrupting someone’s conversation, is considered to be a lack of etiquette, then, earlier, when you interrupted my question to the Sect Master, doesn’t that mean you lack of etiquette as well? As strangers, asking each other’s names is a usual thing to do, yet you suddenly cut in and scolded me for being audacious? I was curious, so I simply asked. How was that audacious? Then, may I ask, where did your etiquette go?”

The face of the red-clothed lady turned green. “You... As a disciple who has yet to officially enter the sect, you actually directly asked for our Sect Master’s name. If that’s not audacious,

what is?”

“He was the one who first asked for my name. Before asking for someone’s name, one should introduce himself first, isn’t that proper manners? And you have already said it yourself. I’m a disciple who has not officially entered the sect, and since I have yet to join your sect, I’m still not one of your disciples. I’m just a third party, someone that’s completely unrelated to you people. What does he being a Sect Master has to do with me? Why can I not directly ask him of his identity?”

“You... What fallacy!”

“You’re calling my words a fallacy when you don’t have the ability to rebut them. When you’re able to rebut my words, you call me audacious. May I ask, miss, how did your mom teach you about ‘etiquette’?”

“You... You...”

“Allow me to give you a piece of advice, miss. Do not take yourself too seriously. Not all people will simply go along with you. Do you think everyone in this world is your mom!?”

“Impudent!” The red-clothed lady seemed to have flown into rage. Summoning a ball of flames with her hand, she then threw it at her.

Zhu Yao, this is what they call turning someone’s feelings of

shame, into anger. A fight is about to break out, yo.

“Junior-martial sister!” At the key moment, the Sect Master uncle intervened. Summoning a flow of water, it extinguished the ball of flames. “Do not be rash.”

The red-clothed lady took in a few deep breaths, and finally calmed down. However, she was still staring daggers at Zhu Yao, looking as though she could pounce at her and eat her at any moment.

Only then did Zhu Yao feel a little afraid. The hell, how could she forget that this was a Xianxia world? These people were all existences capable of killing her with a snap of their fingers. But how could she scold her mom the moment she started talking to her? In which child’s heart, is his or her parents not a taboo? Furthermore, she was someone who had crossed into another world, and she might not be able to see them for the rest of her life. And that lady just had to cross the line, so why would she not bite her to death!?

“Little miss, you have to calm your emotions as well. I believe you’re able to guess that your potential is unordinary as well.” The Sect Master began to act as the middleman. “If you enter our sect, you will have to give your utmost to train yourself. Are you willing?”

“Not willing!”

“Kuh kuh kuh...” The Sect Master almost choked himself.

“What.. What did you say?” With her potential, she would definitely enter the Jade Forest Mountain. Everyone in the entire cultivation world would rack their brains for every method possible to be a part of that place. Even though her current age was indeed a little over the prime, with that person’s capabilities, there should be completely no problems in having her to reach Azoth before her lifespan ends.

“Do you know that, the place you’re about to go, is Jade Forest Mountain?”

“I don’t want to know!” What did it have to do with her?

“Why?”

Zhu Yao courteously gave the uncle a pair of rolling eyes. “Do you think I’m dumb? I have offended this junior-martial sister of yours today, if I were to really join your sect, wouldn’t she be able to torture me to death!?”

The Sect Master uncle’s face distorted a little. Although what this miss said was not impossible... Did she not put it out too bluntly? He glanced at his junior-martial sister, whose face was already pale and dark. Was it really alright to say such words out loud? Was it really alright?

“Kuh kuh, do you really not want to cultivate as a deity? This is a great opportunity, you know!”

“I don’t want to!”

“Uh...”

“So, let’s just leave it at that...” Zhu Yao shrugged, and said. “I will go back to where I came from. Bye bye!”

“Wait... Wait a minute!”

Before the Sect Master could stop her, Zhu Yao had already happily begun to run out of the hall. This lady, why did she not follow the standard procedure?

Suddenly, a fierce gale blew, and a white-clothed man suddenly appeared at the entrance. Before Zhu Yao could even see him clearly, she smashed head on with him.

And then... A bun grew. Flames of anger welled up inside her.

“Do you not open your eyes when you walk!? Move away!”

“...” The entire hall was instantly filled with silence.

Only a moment later, did the man who had collided with her, slowly take a step to the side.

Only after that did Zhu Yao go out of the entrance. Before

walking away, she did not forget to give him a pair of rolling eyes. So what if you have muscles? Hmph!

“Ancestral Grandmaster, that miss has the Lightning Spirit Vein!” The Sect Master called out immediately.

When the man at the entrance heard this, he instantly grabbed onto the person who just left. Zhu Yao was walking really hastily, so, when she was suddenly pulled, naturally, she once again collided with the man. Hence... another bun grew.

Zhu Yao stroked the two bumps which suddenly grew on her head, raised her head, and looked at the man, who had a cold look. “I say, bro... Do you have something against me?”

The man was startled for a moment, and then, he replied with absolute seriousness. “None!”

“If you don’t, then why did you pull my yarn for!?” Are you picking a fight!?

The man lowered his head and pondered for a moment. And then, he replied with even more seriousness. “I did not pull any yarn. What I pulled was your hand.”

“.....”

Take a deep breath... Don’t be angry, don’t be angry. The sky looks so wonderful today, it’s not good to be angry like this!

“I will just treat it as my bad luck. I have to trouble you to move away by going around there. Don’t block my path, alright? Thanks!”

The man frowned, and rejected her request decisively. “Can’t do.”

“Just what the hell are you planning?” So, causing her to have two big lumps on her head was not enough, he was planning to add a few more lumps?

“Kneel! Accept me as your master!”

“Let me kneel to your sister instead!” Who said she was going to be his disciple?

The man frowned even more deeply, and still said with the same cold tone. “I’m the one who will be your master, I don’t have a sister!”

“.....” Bro, you win. Just which planet did you come from? I can’t communicate with you at all.

Chapter 6: Admitting Into The Jade Forest

“Greetings to Ancestral Grandmaster!” The Sect Master uncle and the rest came over as well, and gave a very respectful bow to the man at the entrance. Looking at Zhu Yao, he then continued. “Ancestral Grandmaster, are you planning to take this woman as your disciple?” He initially thought that, given this woman’s age, he would at most take her into the Peak as a inner sect disciple. He did not expect he would directly take her as a disciple.

The man calmly looked at the group of people, and corrected him. “Personal succeeding disciple.”

“What?”

The red-clothed lady had a face of disbelief, took a step forward, and said. “Ancestral Grandmaster, even if she’s a rare holder of the Lightning Spirit Vein, you can only take in one personal succeeding disciple... Given her age... isn’t it a little inappropriate?”

The man turned and looked towards the red-clothed lady, with a face that was still as cold as ever, he sounded out skeptically, “What does this have to do with you?”

“.....”

The red-clothed lady was at a loss of words, the only thing she could do was to shift her gaze, staring fiercely at Zhu Yao who was beside him. She did not even do anything, and was simply standing

there the entire time, so why the hell was she staring at her? For a moment, she suddenly had the feeling that she was in a mental hospital the entire time.

“Admit me as your master!” The certain ice caveman adjusted his muzzle aim, and continued to fire at Zhu Yao.

Zhu Yao’s expression silently darkened. “Umm... I say, bro, why don’t we take some time to discuss about this? Why do I have to definitely admit you as my master?”

“Because you’re a Lightning Spirit Vein holder!” The cold-looking caveman said coldly.

“Oh!” Zhu Yao nodded. “May I ask, is there a rule or law that states that, as a Lightning Spirit Vein holder, I have to definitely admit you as my master?”

The ice caveman frowned even deeper, but he still truthfully shook his head.

“Then where did your mom get the confidence that, I will definitely admit you as my master?” Do you believe I will spit a mouthful of cola onto your entire face?

This cold-looking caveman seemed to have been troubled by this question, and only after a long while did he slowly voice out. “Only my Jade Forest Mountain, possesses the Mystic Arts Lightning Spirit Vein holders train in, so you definitely have to admit under

my guidance.” He lowered his head, and looked directly into her eyes. “What does this have to do with my mother having any confidence in this matter?”

“...” Take a deep breath, one must not bite someone in a harmonious society. “Why do I have to definitely train in these Arts?”

He said naturally. “If you want to become a deity, then you have to learn this set of Arts.”

“Hohoho!” Zhu Yao pulled her hand back, and laughed coldly. “I’m sorry, I don’t wish to become a deity. Thank you. Bye!”

The ice caveman seemed to have been shocked by her way of thinking, as he stood rooted to the ground, totally stunned. Hence, Zhu Yao took this opportunity to happily sneak away. Unfortunately, not even two minutes later, the ice caveman suddenly came chasing after her again. It was not because she was not doing her best, rather, her opponent was simply too strong. Although Zhu Yao ran, as though he was the wind, the ice caveman instantly caught up to her. Without speaking anything else, the moment he grabbed onto her, he flew towards the skies, and headed towards the mountain with the tallest peak.

Zhu Yao simply saw blurred images in front of her, and her head once again struck onto the ice caveman, naturally... she received a third lump!

The hell!

When she regained her senses, she was already standing on a green plains, and the ice caveman was even standing right in front of her.

“Admit me as your master.”

“Brother Ice, can you please change your lines?”

The ice caveman paused for a moment, and said, “I’m taking you as my disciple!”

“...” Is there a difference?

“My surname is Yu, not Ice.”

“.....”

“My given name is Yan. Since you’re now under my guidance, you will naturally have to use my surname as well. I bestow you the name... Wang.”

“Your sister’s ‘[Desire](#)’!” Who told you to bestow me a name? I simply do not want to become a deity.

“You’re ‘[Yu Wang](#)’. I told you before, I don’t have a sister.”

“...” The hell, I never thought that it would be so difficult to communicate in Mandarin. Zhu Yao began to cry in her heart. “Bro, I beg you, please, let me go. I really don’t wish to become a deity. Please allow me to scram back home!”

Yu Yan was startled for a moment, before answering with the same icy tone. “I’m taking you as my disciple, not as my sister. You should be calling me master, not brother.”

“...” Where’s the nearest cliff!? Please, tell me!

Yu Wang /玉旺, sounds exactly the same as 欲望, which means ‘desire’ in English.

Side note: In Wuxia/Xianxia, masters have the tendency to bestow new names to their disciples, and the disciples will use their masters’ surname as well. The master’s name 玉言, if directly translated into English, is Jade Word, while the name he bestowed to Zhu Yao, 玉旺, is Jade Prosper.

Chapter 7: Don't Look For Trouble, And Trouble Will Not Come

Yu Yan really could not understand this disciple he just took in. Since she possessed the innate Lightning Spirit Vein, she was already destined to have the potential to ascend. Even though she was a little old, it was not really a big problem. As people who cultivate into deities, their bodies were merely vessels. Although the younger you were, the more successful you would be in cultivating, he was confident that, with his knowledge as the lord of Jade Forest Mountain, he would definitely be able to help her form her Azoth Core before her lifespan ends. Then, once she gained the ability to shapeshift, there would no longer be a problem regarding her age.

His Jade Forest Mountain had been passed down for many hundred thousand years, yet, the disciples who had entered it were minuscule in number. However, more than half of these successors had already ascended into the world of deities. The main reason was that they only took in disciples with Lightning Spirit Vein, and the Lightning Spirit Vein was the most mystical Spirit Vein in this entire world. As long as you're someone who were cultivating to become a deity, you would have to progress through a total of six stages – Essence, Foundation, Azoth, Nascent Soul, Demigod, and Ascension. In every stage, they were further categorized into eleven levels. The first to fifth levels were known as the elementary-stage, the sixth to ninth were known as the intermediate-stage, the tenth level as the advanced-stage, and there was the Paragon, these four small stages. In the Azoth-stage and the two stages below, whenever one were to breakthrough into the next stage, that person will definitely draw in lightning strikes. A small breakthrough will draw in weak lightning strikes, while a large breakthrough will draw in extremely powerful lightning

strikes. The Heavenly Lightning was made up of the cleanest and purest lightning spiritual energy in this world, and was capable of destroying all life forms in the world. So, when the lightning strikes were drawn in, the practitioner could only endure them by drawing out all of the energy inside his body to defend against them.

But, even if one was able to endure all of these lightning strikes, there is still the nine types of tribulations one must go through when he or she attempts to ascend. The strength possessed by each one of the eighty one Purple Extreme Heavenly Lightning, is tens of thousands times stronger than the strength of a regular lightning strike. In this world, many highly capable practitioners fell under the power of the Purple Extreme Heavenly Lightning, and even some Demigods who had reached the limits of their lifespan, did not dare to pit themselves against the Purple Extreme Heavenly Lightning. Other than Lightning Spirit Vein holders!

Lightning Spirit Vein holders had the innate ability which allowed them to naturally absorb lightning spiritual energy. Hence, the tribulations, to them, were basically not life-threatening challenges, but simply a way to take in a large amount of spiritual energy. With such a heaven-bending Spirit Vein, even if they did not want to ascend, they had no choice but to do so.

But, this type of Spirit Vein is extremely rarely seen. The last time a Lightning Spirit Vein holder appeared, was sixteen thousand years ago, and that person was Yu Yan.

He was taken in as a disciple at three years old, and reached the Essence Paragon stage at five years old. When he was ten, he

became a Foundation-stage practitioner. At twenty, he formed his Azoth Core, and he reached the Nascent Soul stage in a hundred years. In a thousand years, he became a Demigod, and reached the Demigod Paragon-stage in just six thousand years, becoming number one in the cultivation world. There's a need to say that he became a legend of the cultivation world due to his frightening cultivation speed. But a legend like this, just happened to remain as a Demigod for exactly ten thousand years. It was not because he was incapable of ascending, rather, it was because, in these ten thousand years, he actually did not manage to find a single Lightning Spirit Vein disciple. And in the entire cultivation world, only the Jade Forest Mountain of Ancient Hill Sect, possessed the cultivation method for Lightning Spirit Vein holders. If he were to ascend, there will no longer be any successors to his line. Hence, even though he had long possessed the body of a deity, he continued to stay in the lower realm, so as to wait for someone capable of succeeding him.

And that successor finally appeared, but, she actually seemed to be really unwilling. Even when he bestowed her a name, she revealed a very strange expression, and she only had the thought of returning to the mortal realm in mind. Was she telling him that his Jade Forest Mountain, the one and only capital of the deity cultivation realm, could not compare to the filthy lands of the mortal realm?

Yu Yan, was really unhappy.

“Please, I really don't wish to become a deity. Please let me go, and allow me to happily roll my way out of here!” Zhu Yao was about to cry. She did not want to be called Desire.

Yu Yan lightly frowned. An idea came into his mind. He chanted an incantation, and Zhu Yao, who was still trying to persuade him earlier, was now kneeling on the ground with a light thud.

“What are you planning to do!” Zhu Yao was shocked. He was not trying to kill her due to anger, right? Just when she was thinking of getting up, she was no longer in control of her body. Facing the ice caveman, she kowtowed in front of him three times. Before she could even react, Yu Yan extended out two of his fingers, and lightly tapped on her forehead. She simply felt a chilling energy infiltrating into her mind. A moment later, a warm feeling welled up inside her entire body, and, on her forehead, a flower-like marking surfaced.

“From today on, you are my personal succeeding disciple, this imprint is the proof that I have accepted you as my disciple. Tomorrow morning, arrive at the top of the Jade Forest Mountain. I will personally pass down the cultivating techniques to you.” After saying that, his figure flashed, and Zhu Yao could no longer see his figure in front of her.

Raising her hand, she touched her forehead which still had a slight icy chill. Zhu Yao felt like crying. You can't forcefully buy me like that.

Zhu Yao who was forced to cultivate, was very unhappy as well.

She let out a huge sigh. It seemed like talking sense to him would not work, the two of them were basically on different wavelengths. She looked at her surroundings, and when she could only see a long stretch of lush grassland, and a range of mountains, she felt

like crying even more. Where is this? At least point me a direction... Is it really alright to disappear this irresponsibly?

I wonder how's little wimp coming along? When she thought that she had initially planned on doing a good deed, and in the end, seemed to have dug a grave for herself instead, she felt that it was really difficult doing good deeds in this day and age. It seemed like she had no choice but to walk on the route of becoming a deity now.

But the current problem was... Where did she have to go?

Earlier, the ice caveman told her to find him at the top of the Jade Forest Mountain. Zhu Yao glanced at the mountain peak which had pierced through the clouds in front of her, and momentarily went crazy. The hell! This mountain looked exactly the same as Mount Everest! You must be kidding me, right?

At this moment, Zhu Yao finally understood what the idiom 'do not look for trouble, and trouble will not come', really meant. She really regretted rejecting the ice caveman's request to take her in as his disciple earlier. If she had not done so, he would not have forcefully purchased her out of anger, and even more so, he would not have thrown her onto this barren land and have her fend for herself.

She was simply taken in as a disciple, that's all. She did not really make a loss. And seeing the attitude those people at the hall had towards him earlier, this master of hers was definitely someone of extremely high caliber. With someone like him backing her up, it was not really a bad thing. Even if she offended that red-clothed

lady earlier, she probably wouldn't dare to cause her any trouble. But, if she had returned to the mortal realm, she might have found ways to torture her. He's evidently her savior who descended from the heavens!

After thinking this through, Zhu Yao's resentment towards this wonderful master of hers completely disappeared in an instant, rather, a feeling of gratitude surged inside her, and she even gained the motivation to climb the mountain.

But this gratitude completely disappeared when she reached the base of the mountain. No matter how far she climbed, she felt as though she could not reach the top no matter how long she took. The hell, she finally understood why that ice caveman told her to find him in the next morning. Because, she spent an entire day and night climbing the mountain.

Only when the sun had risen right up to the top on the second day, did she finally reach the top of the mountain. Dog-tired, she collapsed onto the ground, and could no longer move a single limb.

As for the certain master, who sat in his room for the entire night, anxiously waiting for his disciple to report, when he finally thought of personally investigating why she had yet to arrive, he opened the door, and saw a body lying straight on the floor in front of his house. A body covered entirely in dirt, her hair was in a mess, and on her pale face, there was spots of purple, as though they were traces of her smacking into something.

If he had not been able to sense the anger that was still emitting out from her body, he would have really thought that this

Lightning Spirit Vein disciple of his, whom he finally managed to obtain, was gone just like that.

Chapter 8: Jade Forest Mountain Peak

In just a single night, how did she tire herself so much? Yu Yan frowned, and did a few seals with his hands. Zhu Yao, who was tired to point of being incapable of moving earlier, suddenly felt a surge of warm energy filling her entire body. The fatigue within her body disappeared in a single sweep, and even her ragged breathing earlier had calmed down. So this is Mystic Art? How mysterious.

Looking at his new disciple finally getting up, Yu Yan was finally relieved. He looked at her from head to toe, and suddenly thought of something. Unless...

“You climbed this mountain by foot?”

Zhu Yao pouted her lips. “How else?” She did not know how to fly, after all.

Yu Yan looked at her strangely. “Why did you not use the teleportation formation?” Unless, she did it to train herself, and to also demonstrate her determination to becoming a deity? With this thought in mind, Yu Yan’s expression was momentarily much better, and was a little satisfied with this disciple who would usually speak nonsensical things. This disciple, even though she did not seem to be very bright, she was rather hard-working.

A certain hard-working disciple: “.....” In her mind, she was already flipping an unlimited number of tables. What the hell! If there’s a teleportation formation, say so from the start!

After taking in many deep breaths, Zhu Yao finally suppressed her urge to scratch his face. As he was her superior, she had no choice but to take a step back, and furthermore, he was her future pillar of support.

“Master, your disciple greets you.” Zhu Yao lowered her body, and gave him a proper bow.

“Mn!” Yu Yan nodded, his heart was momentarily filled with large amount of satisfaction. It’s been more than ten thousand years, and he finally had a disciple of his own. Before his master ascended, he had constantly reminded Yu Yan to find a successor to the Jade Forest, and Yu Yan finally did not let him down.

Unconsciously, his disciple in front of him was becoming more pleasing to his eyes, and he had the urge to rush over and hug her. He sized Zhu Yao up a little. If she had been a little younger, it would have been better. Haah! Why did she not become my disciple a little sooner? Many thoughts spiraled in Yu Yan’s mind, but his face was still as icy cold and expressionless as ever.

With a wave of his hand, Zhu Yao’s clothes which was dirty beyond hope earlier, was restored to its former look in an instant. Even those old stains which she could not washed off in the past had disappeared.

“Amazing.” Zhu Yao curiously pulled her clean clothes. A strong laundry detergent? Becoming a deity was actually this much fun. “Master, are you going to teach me this Mystic Art?” With this, she

would no longer need to wash her clothes in the future. It would be so convenient for her.

“The Dirt Removing Art is only an entry-level Mystic Art. Once you learn how to absorb spiritual energy, you will naturally know how to use it.” Yu Yan said lightly. “You have just arrived, first familiarize yourself with the surroundings. Spiritual energy will be the most abundant in the early morning, so I will only teach you how to absorb spiritual energy into your body tomorrow morning.”

Zhu Yao nodded. She would be staying here for a long time anyway, even though she was curious about cultivation, it was not something she had to rush for.

“Follow me.” Yu Yan passed by his disciple in front of him, and walked towards the direction she came from.

We’re beginning with the familiarization already? Zhu Yao raised her spirits up, and hurriedly followed after him. Along the way, she worked hard to memorize the surrounding places, so as to prevent herself from losing her way in the future.

The Jade Forest Mountain was very quiet in the afternoon. Occasionally, there would be chirping and crickets, but there were mostly just trees around. Not long later, Zhu Yao gave up on memorizing. She could not possibly memorize how all the trees look like, right? Hence, she simply followed behind him obediently.

Yu Yan was not a person of many words, she knew simply by looking at his cold-looking face. And since Zhu Yao was not really comfortable with talking to people she did not know, the two of them did not have a single conversation throughout the walk.

After four hours, Zhu Yao was finally unable to take it any longer. “Master, are we not there yet?” If they were going to keep walking any longer, the sky would turn dark.

Yu Yan turned back and looked at her. “It’s right in front, we’re almost there.”

Zhu Yao did not say anything else. Yet another two hours passed, even if it’s a downhill walk, her legs were already about to give way. However, the person in front of her, still did not have the intention of stopping at all. Didn’t you say we were almost there? Her mind was filled with suspicions, but she could only grit her teeth, and simply swept her gaze across her surroundings.

Eh, why does that slanted tree look a little familiar? And that piece of stone that looked like a turtle looks rather familiar too. I even think I have seen that monkey with the red buttocks from somewhere as well.

“We’re here!”

The person in front of her stopped and Zhu Yao took a look at her surroundings. The hell, was this not the base of the mountain she was at yesterday? Master took her on a walk for the entire afternoon, just to return to this place? She looked really good

climbing the mountain, so he wanted her to climb it again? Master, you can't play your disciple for a fool like this.

“Master...” She felt like crying.

Yu Yao looked at her pitiful expression. Why did she give him such a face for? His disciple was being stupid again, it seemed. Calmly deciding to ignore her, he pointed to a patch of grass three meters to his right. “That's the teleportation formation. You cannot simply enter within the Jade Forest Mountain using a flying sword. Through this formation, you're able to reach the peak of the mountain.”

Ah, so the reason why he brought her on this trip, was to show this formation to her. Zhu Yao looked at the patch of lush grass. There doesn't seem to be anything different about it though.

Under Yu Yan's signal, she followed after him towards the place he pointed to, and stood there. A flash of light suddenly appeared under her feet, a circular formation lighted up, and inside the formation, a few symbols were faintly moving. Immediately after, the white light became even brighter, the scenery before her changed, and she was already standing on the mountain peak. What a mystical formation.

Zhu Yao became really interested. She circled around the formation that was still emitting a faint light a few times, yet, she still could not understand the theory of how it worked. As she thought, becoming a deity was a luxurious and majestic path.

“This formation can be used to transfer both ways. You can also use it send yourself down the mountain.” Seeing that his disciple was interested in the formation, Yu Yan took the initiative to explain.

“Really!?” Zhu Yao became a little excited, and hurried into the formation. Just as he said, the light once again grew brighter, and with a whoosh, she once again stood at the side of the formation at the base of the mountain. She stood on the formation again, and with another whoosh, she once again returned to the mountain peak. Zhu Yao playfully jumped in and out of the formation a couple of times, and could not help but admire the wonders of mystic arts. If she were to compare them, cars and airplanes were basically so much weaker compared to this formation.

Eh, wait a minute! She turned to look at her master, whose face was still as cold as ever. “Since this formation can teleport both ways, then why did master bring me on a walk for the entire afternoon earlier?”

Yu Yan was startled by her stare, and seemed to have realized this problem as well. Slightly turning his head away, he avoided the question. “Have an earlier rest today. Tomorrow, I will teach you how to absorb spiritual energy into your body.”

After saying that, he turned around and entered the house, closing the door as he went in. He was definitely influenced by his disciple’s stupidity, it was definitely not because he did not think of using the formation to head down the mountain.

Zhu Yao’s face darkened. Does master have a skill called, ‘Play

your disciple for a fool’?

At a loss of words, she looked at the thatched cottage in front of her. That’s right, a thatched cottage. This crazily cool-looking master of hers, was actually living in a thatched house, and it was the only thatched cottage on the entire mountain peak. Everywhere else was just barren land.

In that case, there was a problem. Hole-digging technique... Ah, [pui](#)! Where was she going to rest tonight? Master, did you forget something?

After silently inspecting the terrain for a long while, she determined that there were no other place on the mountain peak she could stay for the night. Thus, Zhu Yao had no choice but to knock on the thatched house’s door.

Just after three light knocks, with a creak, the door automatically opened. The interior of the house was relatively simple, other than a bed, there was nothing else inside. And her master was currently meditating on the bed.

“What is it?”

“Master, where do I stay tonight?” Zhu Yao asked honestly.

Yu Yan was startled for a moment. Only then did he realize that his disciple was still a mortal, and unlike practitioners, it was impossible for her to casually pick out a cave and cultivate inside.

It was an oversight on his part.

'Pui!' : Zhu Yao spitting because she said something wrong.

Chapter 9: Gold Nest, Silver Nest, Dog's Nest

Getting up, along with his disciple, he walked out. He looked at the position of his own thatched cottage, and then, from the storage pouch he took out from within his clothes, he took out an item. Throwing it onto the ground, a refined three-story building, shining with golden brilliance, appeared next to the thatched cottage, dying the entire night sky with sparkles and a magical atmosphere.

“Mas... Master.” Zhu Yao pointed her trembling finger at the building that was capable of blinding one's eyes. “Living... in a house like this, isn't really a good idea, right?”

“You don't like it?” Yu Yan raised an eyebrow. He obtained this house from a toad spirit that have cultivated for a thousand years. Back then, when he took it away, although he personally did not like it, when he looked at the toad spirit's regretful eyes, he concluded that it was still something pretty good, so he believed his little disciple would like it.

Yu Yan lowered his head, continued searching through his storage pouch, and casually threw out another item. This time, it was a courtyard made out of jade. Under the moonlight shine, it emitted out a faint silver light, and from outside, the luxurious designs and furniture inside the building could be vaguely seen.

Zhu Yao could not help but to use her hand to support her jaw, which was about to fall off. It seemed like... she had been taken in as a disciple by an unbelievable tycoon. She looked at the golden building on the left, then, she looked at the jade building on right,

and then, she looked at the dirt-filled thatched cottage at the center.

“Pick out whichever you like, and just live in it.” Yu Yan said indifferently.

Zhu Yao looked blankly at her own master, as though she saw him turning into a river god, and with a golden house on one hand, and a silver house on the other, asking her, “Oh, courageous girl, the house you threw, was it this golden house, or this [silver house](#)?”

Zhu Yao swallowed her saliva, and deeply suppressed the vanity in her heart. That Aesop’s fable had taught her that, to be human, it’s necessary to keep to a low profile. Since her master was living in a thatched cottage, no matter how it looked, it would be inappropriate for his disciple to live in either the golden or silver house.

“Master... I think it’s fine if you give me a house that’s similar to yours.”

Yu Yan tilted his head, gave his disciple a strange look, and sighed, revealing an ‘as I thought, my disciple is really an idiot’ expression. With a wave of his hand, the two buildings were retrieved. And then, with some unknown arts, a thatched cottage was being built at a speed visible to the naked eye on the ground.

Not even a moment later, a thatched house that looked exactly the same was built. Zhu Yao thanked her master, and entered her

own house. She found out that, the interior was exactly the same as her master's, other than a wooden bed and a blanket, there was nothing else.

After being fatigued for two days and one night, Zhu Yao did not really care anymore, and simply lied on the bed and entered her dreamland.

The next day, Zhu Yao woke up really early. It was not that she was diligent, rather, the bed in her room was simply too hard. She momentarily regretted rejecting those two exquisite houses back then. As I thought, one should not try to put up a front, and take the offer when one has to.

Opening the door, Zhu Yao realized her master was already waiting outside for her. His eyes swept past her deep and heavy bags under her eyes, lightly frowned, and signaled her to sit on the empty ground in front of him.

She was going to start cultivating just like that? Zhu Yao raised her spirits, immediately ran over, and sat cross-legged in front of her master.

“Today, I shall teach you how to take in spiritual energy into your body.” With a single finger, Zhu Yao tapped on Zhu Yao's forehead. “Close your eyes!”

Zhu Yao obediently closed her eyes, and simply felt a familiar flow of energy entering from her forehead, and then, the energy slowly flowed within her entire body. After that, it converged at

her [cinnabar](#), causing her entire body to feel warm, and she felt fresh and spirited.

“This is the method to circulate the spiritual energy inside your body. Remember this method. When you’re able to sense the spiritual energy around you, you can use this method to take in spiritual energy.” Seeing that she had comprehended, Yu Yan retracted his hand.

“Then, how can I sense spiritual energy?” Zhu Yao asked.

“That will depend on your own comprehension ability.” Yu Yan said indifferently. Spiritual energy was the world’s biggest uncertainty. Everyone had their own comprehension of it, and everyone looked at it differently. There were people who are capable of sensing in an instant, and there were people who were unable to feel a hint of spiritual energy in their entire lives. As her master, he could only guide her, and was unable to sense it for her. “Close your eyes. Clear your mind of all thoughts. Use your heart to feel it, and you will naturally be able to sense it.”

Zhu Yao once again closed her eyes, and slowly removed all thoughts from her mind. However, she was merely submerging herself into darkness. Ten minutes later, forget about feeling spiritual energy, she simply felt like sleeping.

And her master simply gave her an advice not to be anxious, and left, leaving her to silently meditate by herself.

However, she meditated from morning till noon, and still did not

produce any results. During the process, she had almost fell asleep several times, and other than her body feeling sore, she could not feel anything else. Zhu Yao could not sit still any longer, and decided to take a stroll and get some fresh air before continuing.

Just when she used the formation to teleport herself down the mountain, she saw a person riding on a flying sword as he flew over from afar. Wearing the sect's white robe, he seemed to be a male disciple in his twenties, and he even looked a little familiar.

When he saw Zhu Yao on the ground, he politely gave her a smile, only then did Zhu Yao recalled who he was.

“Senior-martial uncle Li?” Was he not the youth who brought them to the sect?

The youth stopped in front of her, and was a little startled, before giving her a greeting. “This disciple isn’t worthy of being referred to as senior-martial uncle. Grand-martial aunt, please refrain from referring me that way, and simply call me by my Daoist title, [Li Lin](#).”

“Ah?” Did those little turnips not addressed him that way?

Seeing that she was skeptical, Li Lin continued. “Sovereign Yu Yan has the highest seniority in our sect, and even Sect Master has to address him as Ancestral-martial uncle. You’re Sovereign Yu Yan’s disciple, so, according to seniority, this disciple should be addressing you as Grand-martial aunt.”

So her status was actually this amazing, Zhu Yao suddenly felt as though she had used a cheat.

She immediately asked Li Lin a few questions, and found out about some inside details.

The sect that she had admitted in was called Ancient Hill Sect. It was the most famous sect in the cultivation world, and was the sect which had the most disciples as well. In the sect, they had three Demigod-stage elders, and dozens of Azoth-stage disciples. The sect was separated into two portions, the Inner and Outer Sect, and the Inner Sect was further divided into six mountains, Beast-Taming Mountain, Sword Mountain, Talisman Mountain, Weapon-Refining Mountain, Medicine Mountain, and Jade Forest Mountain which she currently resided in. Every mountain had their own specialty, for example, the Sword Mountain specialized in using swords, and the Talisman Mountain specialized in using talismans, etcetera. There were not less than ten thousand disciples in each Mountain. Among them, the Sword Mountain had the most disciples, and undoubtedly, it was the strongest out of the six. In Sword Mountain, all the disciples cultivated in the way of the sword, and the Lord of Sword Mountain was also the Sect Master of Ancient Hill Sect, Reverend Zi Mo. He was the one who tested her Spirit Vein the other day at the great hall. Every Mountain Lord was at least at the Nascent Soul level of cultivation, and thinking back, the other people who were seated at the hall back then, were definitely the other Mountain Lords.

And the lady whom she had offended then, was the Lord of Medicine Mountain, Reverend Hong Chou. The Medicine Mountain specialized in refining divine medicine, and the Mountain Lord was even a Ninth-Grade Pellet Refining Master,

rarely seen in the cultivation world. As people who cultivate into deities, it was hard to avoid borrowing the use of pellets to aid in one's cultivation. Hence, many practitioners would seek help from the Pellet Mountain, which also meant that, not many people would easily offend a Pellet Master, let alone one at the ninth-grade. But, she just had to have offended one!

When she realized this truth, tears began to flow down from Zhu Yao's eyes.

Reference to the Aesop's Fable – The Woodman.

Basically, it's the name he uses as a deity practitioner.

Chapter 10: Meeting The Little Turnip Again

The reason why Li Lin came up to the mountain this time, was to look for Zhu Yao, have her undergo the sect's entry procedures, and receive her own identity jade tablet. Every new disciple of the Ancient Hill Sect had to undergo lectures about the sect for a month, something that was similar to an induction programme. Then, the various Mountains would select a couple of people with good potentials as Inner Sect disciples. Those who were not selected, would enter the Outer Sect, and only after they built their Foundation, would they enter the Inner Sect. However, these people might not be taken in as disciples by the Mountain Lord. Initially, Zhu Yao had to undergo the same process as well, but, her Spirit Vein was too unique. Hence, she did not have to undergo the same process, and was immediately taken in as a disciple, a personal succeeding disciple at that.

Li Lin looked at the divine imprint, which could only belong to personal succeeding disciples, on Zhu Yao's forehead, and could not help but feel envious in his heart. Usually, practitioners would only have a single personal succeeding disciple, and unless the disciple were to die, there would be no other successors. However, how could he blame her for being a Lightning Spirit Vein holder?

As Zhu Yao did not know how to use a flying sword, Li Lin had no choice but to take out that giant piece of leaf he used back then, and carried her to the Main Mountain.

“Grand-martial aunt, please, this way.” Li Lin guided Zhu Yao into the hall, his manner was so respectful, she was starting to feel a little embarrassed.

“It’s fine if you just call me Zhu Yao.” It kind of felt strange being called grand-martial uncle by someone of about the same age.

Li Lin simply smiled, he did not reject it, nor did he dare to directly accept her request, and simply said a few words to someone who seemed to be the manager of this hall. The expression of that aged uncle instantly tensed up. He wobbly walked over to her, gave her a huge bow, and called out, “Ancestral Grand-martial aunt!”

Zhu Yao: “.....”

“Grand-martial aunt, you do not need to care about it too much. In the cultivation world, one’s superiority is dependant on one’s level of cultivation. Since you’re Sovereign Yu Yan’s disciple, this sort of situation will be a usual occurrence in the future.” Li Lin gave some consoling words and guided her to a chair at the side. He then had the uncle leave to do his own work, and continued to explain to her. “Jade Forest Mountain’s identity jade tablet will require some time to finish, so I have to humbly ask Grand-martial aunt to wait here for a short moment.”

Zhu Yao nodded. Sitting on the chair, she curiously looked at her surroundings. This place should be a junction specialized in dealing with matters regarding the sect, and there were not many people. Occasionally, there would be one or two people charging towards Li Lin to greet him, and then, they would head to the place at the center similar to a counter. Sometimes, they would take out something, hand it over to the person at the counter, and leave after that.

“This is the place where missions are managed in our sect.” Seeing that she was interested, Li Lin pointed to the tablets hanged around the room, and explained. “Our sect frequently issue out missions, and, as long as you have the ability, you can accept them. After you have completed your mission, you can receive contribution points from the sect, and use them to exchange for goods.”

So it's an exchange market. Zhu Yao had a sudden realization, and once again, saw people entering the place and charging towards Li Lin, greeting him. There were people calling him senior martial-uncle, and there were people calling him ancestral senior martial-uncle. After they finished greeting him, they would also curiously look at Zhu Yao who was beside him, but they did not inquire about her.

It was good that Li Lin did not explain her identity to those people, otherwise, she would have to look at a bunch of people, both young and old, calling her ancestor. She simply would not be able to accept it. But Li Lin's status seems to be pretty high as well. I wonder which Reverend his master is. It would be best if he's not from the Pellet Mountain. As someone who is blacklisted, I can't happily play around with people from the Pellet Mountain. (—) !

“Senior-martial uncle Li!” While she was in her own thoughts, someone suddenly charged over. His steps were a little hasty, and seemed to have been rushing throughout his entire journey. He glanced at Zhu Yao, and then, whispered a few words into Li Lin's ear. Li Lin who was still gentle and calm earlier, became heavily tensed.

“Grand-martial aunt, a small matter seemed to have come up at the Sword Mountain, if possible...”

“Go, I will wait here.” Zhu Yao waved her hand.

Li Lin hesitated for a moment, called out to a disciple in the hall, and only after telling him to have the manager send her back after the tablet was finished, did he finally bring along the youth, who just entered, and leave.

Zhu Yao waited for about half an hour, and the manager had yet to appear. It seemed like it indeed required a long time to finish her identity jade tablet. Just when she was about to take a stroll, the moment she went out of the entrance, a bunch of familiar little turnips came walking over. Especially that little wimp with the round face who was walking right at the front with a lowered head, was he not Doctor Wang’s son?

“It’s you!” The little kid Wang Xuzhi saw Zhu Yao as well, momentarily, his eyes sparkled, and he charged straight over like a cannonball. Zhu Yao spread out her arms and was planning to embrace him, however, at the critical moment, the little turnip actually stepped on the brakes. Glaring at her, he pursed his lips, and began to furiously lecture her. “Where did you run off to? I... I looked for you everywhere. Let me tell you this, if you’re lost, I... I won’t come looking for you, alright!? Hmph!”

Uh... Why is this kid’s words so contradictory? First, you said you looked for me everywhere, and then later, you said you’re not

going to look for me. Zhu Yao awkwardly put down her empty arms, and stroked Little Wang's head. Looks like little wimp is rather worried about me, huh.

Looking at his inflated little face that was about to burst out of anger, and his eyes that looked like it could tear up at any moment, Zhu Yao's heart momentarily softened. Squatting down, she rubbed his cute little cheeks. "What are you crying for? Look, didn't I come back? Were you so worried about me?"

Wang Xuzhi startled for a moment, and then, in an instant, like a lighted up firecracker, he huffed. "Who's worried about you? If not for the fact that you're going to be married to me in the future, I wouldn't care the least bit about you! My dad once told me, you suddenly disappearing like that, is called a wife not doing her duty."

Zhu Yao's hands stopped, and then, began to pinch his cheeks. Your sister's not doing her wifely duties! As I thought, he's a spoiled brat, a day without a beating and he will scale the roof to strip the tiles.

"It hurts, it hurts, it hurts..." Little wimp kept trying to pull her hands off, but unfortunately, he did not succeed.

Only after Zhu Yao was satisfied with her pinching, did she release her hands from his reddened little cheeks. Pointing to the little turnips queueing in front of the counter behind him, she asked. "What are you guys doing here?"

Little Wang placed his two hands on his little cheeks, rubbed them, and said with an irritated expression. “Senior-martial brother Qin brought us here to receive our identity jade tablets.”

He pointed to the youth who was currently leading the group of children.

So they’re here to receive their identity jade tablets as well. Zhu Yao was about to ask about what they did for the last two days, but she suddenly saw a commotion among the little turnips. A familiar-looking little turnip was pushed onto the ground.

While a little kid which was a little fat was currently sitting on the little turnip’s body, waving his fists about, another little girl was actually crying at the side. The other little kids simply looked on anxiously, none of them took a step forward to stop them. Even the youth who had brought them here, simply looked away, as though it was not his problem.

“What are you guys doing!” Before Zhu Yao could make clear of the situation, Little Wang beside her had already called out to them, and had successfully stopped the little fatty who was giving the kid on the floor a beating.

Little Wang angrily walked over, pointed at the little fatty, and asked. “Little fatty Zhao, why did you beat him?”

The little fatty looked a little unsatisfied, but he still got up from the little kid who he beat up. He pointed at the little kid on the ground who was already completely stained with dirt, and said.

“This kid dared to cut into my queue. I was simply teaching him a lesson!”

“No... It’s not like that...” The little girl who was crying hurriedly shook her head. “Little fatty said he wanted to be the first to receive his identity jade tablet, and stopped me from receiving mine. Big brother Xiao Yi stood out to help me.”

Chapter 11: Master's New Skill

The little fatty's actual intentions were exposed in front of everyone, yet, he became even more complacent. "I have already reached the first level of Essence, while you lot have yet to start cultivating at all. Naturally, I should be the first one in queue."

Everything was clear now. It was actually a case brought about by the matters regarding the queueing for identity jade tablets. Zhu Yao was about to step forward, but, her sleeves was suddenly tugged. She was stopped by the white-clothed disciple beside her, and he was exactly the disciple who brought the little turnips to receive their tablets. Little Wang seemed to refer to him as senior-martial brother Qin.

"This junior-martial sister, it's best not to step into matters like this." The disciple surnamed Qin gave her an eye, pointed to that little fatty, and said with a low voice. "He's the son of the first disciple of the Weapon-Refining Mountain. He possesses the Water and Wood Duo Spirit Veins, and is destined to enter the Inner Sect. It's best to step aside, and prevent yourself from getting into trouble."

So it's actually a matter of status, huh. It's no wonder no one is intervening. Just that, is it really alright to not teach him a lesson after he just beat up someone? They're kids, after all. As she thought of this, the Little Wang over there had already finished dealing with the matter, by settling the queue order according to height, with the shortest standing at the front. It was evident that Little Wang was held in high esteem among this bunch of kids, as the little turnips seemed to have taken him as their leader figure.

In the end, little fatty was queued second from the back, and as Wang Xuzhi was the tallest, he was queued right at the back. Although the little fatty was a little unsatisfied, he did not directly express it out.

“Hey, hey, wife, you stand here.” After Wang Xuzhi got into his position, he pointed to his back, and beckoned Zhu Yao to come over.

He succeeded in causing the corner of her lips to twitch. Looking at the surrounding strange eyes directed at her, she suddenly had the impulse to pinch him to death. Wang Xuzhi looked at her unmoving figure, thinking that she was unsatisfied with being right at the back, he gritted his teeth, painfully took a step back, and pointed to the now open position in front of him. “If not, I can permit you to stand in front of me as well!”

Zhu Yao’s expression darkened even more. However, seeing his serious expression, she had no choice but to walk over. She then scooped Little Wang up, and strongly spanked his buttocks a few times.

Little Wang took in deep breaths due to the pain, yet, strangely, he did not yell out. He looked at Zhu Yao with a mysterious expression, and then slowly turned his head to the side.

Hey, hey, what is a youngster like you blushing red for?

Not understanding the spoiled brat’s thoughts, she decided to

ignore it, however, she suddenly felt being bumped by someone. Looking forward, standing in front of her was little fatty, and coincidentally, the child who was beat up, was queued just right in front of him. Little fatty took the opportunity when no one was looking, and with a squeeze of his buttocks, he successfully squeezed into the third position from the back. He even turned his head back and made a face at the kid behind him.

That child called Xiao Yi, did not get a good footing, and almost fell again. Barely holding up, he looked at the little fatty in front of him with a face filled with hatred. Tightly gripping the tiny fists in front of him, he lightly muttered out something. His voice was soft, it was not loud enough for anyone else to hear, but, Zhu Yao, who was standing right behind him, was able to hear him very clearly.

“One day, I will have everyone in this world crawl beneath my feet.”

Zhu Yao suddenly felt a familiar yet strange feeling. She was unable to describe what it was, she simply felt something was wrong. When she looked at the child in front of her carefully, she finally recognized him. Was he not the little beggar with Duo Spirit Veins back at the city? Back then, his calmness and seriousness which were different compared to the rest of the children were even highly evaluated by Li Lin. Zhu Yao wondered which master would he be taken in by?

But why did she feel strange when she was looking at him? Just what was wrong with him?

Zhu Yao sank deep into her thoughts, however, no matter how much she thought of the matter, she was unable to find a single reason. Her thoughts were then interrupted by the manager, who respectfully handed her tablet onto her hands.

She then simply explained a few things to Little Wang, telling him she was under a different master from him, and would often come over to see him. As he gave her a “you’re not going to do your wifely duties again” expression, following the manager, Zhu Yao returned to Jade Forest Mountain.

The life of cultivating was extremely dull. Ever since the morning her master taught her how to take in spiritual energy into her body, he had never appeared again. Just where did he go? Zhu Yao tried to sense spiritual energy in the house for an entire day, and was finally unable to sit still any longer. If she was going to continue sitting like this, forget about spiritual energy, she was about to starve to death.

Zhu Yao had searched the entire house, yet, she did not find anything that was edible. She had even searched her master’s house as well, forget about food, even he had disappeared. At how things were going, she was definitely going to starve to death. Master could not have forgotten that she needed to eat, right?

She looked at the lush forest of trees at the base of the mountain, and considered relying on herself to look for food. But, someone like her who could even forget to pour water into the electronic rice cooker, even if she were to go out for a hunt, she would not be able to cook, right? Furthermore, she did not have any hunting skills either.

Master... Hurry and come home, your disciple is about to starve to death.

Hence, when a certain master returned from his closed-door meditation three days later, he once again obtained another collapsed body in front of his house. Yu Yan frowned. Did his disciple perhaps possess an eccentric personality, and like to lie on the ground at random moments?

Silently casting the Dirt Removal Art on his disciple, and also inserting some spiritual energy inside her body, the fallen body on the ground finally got up.

Seeing Yu Yan, Zhu Yao could not help but burst into tears, and she instantly hugged onto his legs. “Master!”

Yu Yan stiffened. He was really not used to being hugged like this. However, when he thought that the one hugging onto his leg was the disciple he had finally longed for, he suppressed his feelings of flinging her away. His little disciple seemed to like him quite a lot, she was actually this moved after leaving for only a few days.

“You’re finally back, I was about to starve to death.” Zhu Yao began her accusations while she was still in tears. If not for that final line that still lied in her heart, she would have already went to bite on the tree barks. As someone who had never starved since young, she was really not used to it. “I want to eat!”

Yu Yan instantly rejected her request. “As a practitioner, one must not savor on food. There are too many impurities in the food of the mortal realm which will easily influence your cultivation.”

“But Master, if I don’t eat now, I will really starve to death!” How the hell was she going to cultivate if she died?

Yu Yan was startled, only now did he recall that his disciple had yet to even learn how to take in spiritual energy into her body. It seemed like... it would not do if she did not eat. Yu Yan went into a moment of silence, and looked at his crying disciple who was clinging onto his leg, his face was filled with melancholy, as though it was saying “Why is my disciple so weak?” He sighed, and then, his figure disappeared in a flash. Zhu Yao was left alone on the grass field, and a gentle breeze blew past her.

So hungry...

Just when she thought that her master had decided not to care about her any longer, in a blur, her master who had just left, returned with a big bag of stuffs. With a shake of his hand, a large number of fresh cabbages, carrots and other vegetables fell out. So he went to look for food for her, but... how was she going to eat them raw?

Just as she was skeptical about this, her master picked up a carrot and a few other vegetables, opened the kitchen’s door, pulled up his sleeves and began to cook.

Zhu Yao stared blankly at the white-clothed man. With a hand

holding onto the carrot, and with a knife on the other, he began to slice the vegetables, making ‘dong dong dong’ sounds on the chopping board. He was actually performing this daily life scene with such overflowing divinity. Master, when did you put skill points into your life skills?

Chapter 12: Network Delaying Auntie

In less than ten minutes, on the stone table in front of the thatched cottage, five dishes comprising of four plates of vegetables and a bowl of soup, were neatly placed. Their aroma floated in the air. And, throughout the entire process, Zhu Yao's mouth was wide open, and had yet to recover from that state, as she looked at that certain non-deity-like person in front of her.

“Eat!” Yu Yan indifferently said a single word. Sitting right across her, he passed her a bowl of white rice, and signaled her to start eating.

Zhu Yao mechanically took the bowl, a bunch of exclamation marks were still crazily scrolling through her mind. “Master, you know how to cook?”

Yu Yan passed her a pair of chopsticks, paused for a moment, and then said. “Your grandmaster once taught me.”

Oh, so it's a skill inheritance. Silently, she began eating. After finishing three bowls of rice, she was finally full, and she put down her bowl and chopsticks. I'm stuffed. She felt as though she was resurrected from the dead.

Throughout the entire process, Yu Yan simply sat across her, watching her eat. When she finally placed down her chopsticks, he began to clear the bowls and plates on the table. Before Zhu Yao could even stop him, he had already finished cleaning them in the kitchen. Along the way, he even took the rest of the vegetables

piled up outside the doorway and placed them neatly in the kitchen.

Zhu Yao simply looked on with sparkling eyes, and had almost wanted to write the two words “Virtuous House-husband” on her master’s forehead.

Her master was actually capable of doing anything!

Yu Yan looked at Zhu Yao’s expression, and knew that she had yet to take in any spiritual energy. Yet, he did not press her, and simply gave her some encouraging words, telling her not to rush her cultivation and things like that. The more Zhu Yao heard those words, the more moved she was. She felt that she had really struck a pot of gold, as she actually encountered a master with such all-round capabilities.

Her will to cultivate was filled with even more vigor, and she confidently returned to the house to sense spiritual energy.

Unfortunately, even though she had the motivation, reality was cruel. Zhu Yao meditated for an entire night, although she did not fall asleep this time around, she still could not feel a hint of spiritual energy. Looking at the sun which had already risen, Zhu Yao felt a deep sense of powerlessness.

The last time she went out, she had already found out that, the little turnips who had followed her to the sect, had all sensed spiritual energy, hence, they were able to receive their identity jade tablets. Because, things like jade tablets, can only be opened

after inserting spiritual energy into them. And that little fatty, had even cultivated to the first level of Essence. As for Little Wang, he had even reached the second level of Essence. This was also why the rest of the little turnips treated him as their leader. As for Zhu Yao, she did not even possess the ability to open her own identity tablet.

So embarrassing. Where's the promised cheat of a Lightning Spirit Vein holder?

Zhu Yao let out a long sigh. She felt that she had to find her master next door and talked to him about life, so as to console her broken heart. Just when she got up, a familiar flow of warmth rushed out from her lower body. As though thousands of horses were galloping across her, it was aggressive and endless.

Zhu Yao's expression paled, and felt like crying. Before she could even greet her [auntie](#) she had not seen for a long time, an excruciating pain came from her lower abdomen, robbing her consciousness. [Momma's egg](#), why the hell does it hurt so much!

She had always have a bad defect, her period would always hurt, and it was even the very excruciating type. Every month, in the few days before her auntie arrived, she would always make sure not to take any cold drinks, and only then could she calmly let it past. As long as she took in a sip of cold water, she would have to definitely be sent to the hospital and be jabbed with painkillers.

But, in the couple of months after she arrived at this world, her auntie mysteriously disappeared. She had even slightly rejoiced about it once, thinking that there might not be such a cruel

creature such as an auntie in this world. How would she have known that she was simply unacclimatized to this world, which caused a network delay? A few months worth of aunties were just waiting for her!

Including the entire night of cold breeze she endured when she climbed the mountain a few days ago, it seemed like the excruciating pain she was suffering this time around, would not end anytime soon.

A while later, Zhu Yao had already curled up into a ball due to the pain, yet, she was still unable to lighten the sense of pain. And, the bed had also been stained with countless red dots of blood. And just when she felt she was about die from the pain, the door banged open. A white figure appeared in front of her bed.

On his cold expression, his two brows deeply creased, he looked strangely at her rolling figure, and Yu Yan was really startled by the smell of blood suddenly permeating into the air. “You’re wounded?” Who was it? Who dared to harm my disciple who was under my supervision?

“Master!” Zhu Yao silently pulled over her blanket to cover her two legs. There was nothing more embarrassing than having her period seen.

“Who wounded you?” Yu Yan reached out his hand, grabbed her wrist, and started to check her pulse. A large amount of blood loss, it seemed like she was injured very severely.

“No... It’s not that!” Zhu Yao embarrassingly pulled her hand back. He could not have not noticed it was just her period, right? “Master, take your leave first. I will be fine in just a moment. Oh right, if it’s not inconvenient for you, do you mind boiling me a bowl of brown sugar water?”

Brown sugar water? What’s that? Yu Yan was entirely clueless. Looking at her hesitant expression, he could not help but guess that, did she perhaps have a reason for not telling him? Or did the person who harmed her threatened her with something? A certain master was enraged. There was actually someone in this world capable of threatening his disciple.

“You do not have to be afraid, tell master what’s the matter. I will personally help you do justice.”

“...” How the hell was she going to explain about her auntie? “Master, I’m really alright?”

Yu Yan frowned even deeper. Seeing that she was determined to not voice out about it, he had no choice but to take the next best option. “Let your master see your wound.”

“Eh!?” Are you serious? I don’t have a wound though?

However, Yu Yan had already pulled her blanket away, and looked over to her legs. Because of that earlier action, her auntie’s blood splurged out even more, and in just a moment later, streams of blood had already flowed down her thighs, staining her entire pants. In Yu Yan’s eyes however, her injuries seemed to have

worsened, because the smell of fresh blood was even more dense than before. He reached out his hand to take off his disciple's pants, wanting to investigate her wound.

Zhu Yao suddenly reacted, pressing on his hand, her entire face had already paled from his attempted action.

“Master, I’m really alright. This is normal.”

Yu Yan still had the same serious expression as he looked at her. With reproachful eyes, he pulled her hand away. “You’re injured to this extent, how is this normal? Release my hand, let your master have a look.”

“No!” Zhu Yao was so frightened, she even forgot about the pain. She instantly leaped up, and hid to the corner of the bed. Ever since she was young, this was the first time her pants were being righteously stripped off by someone, who the hell could be calm about it?

Yu Yan’s face momentarily darkened. His expression which did not possess any warmth in the first place, had turned even colder. “Come over here!”

Zhu Yao shook her head furiously. If she were to go over, her chastity and virginity would disappear, alright!?

Yu Yan waved his hand, and Zhu Yao simply felt her body stiffening. As though she had lost control of her body, she flew to

the front, and landed nicely in Yu Yan's embrace. With a simple pull, Zhu Yao's pants were pulled down, revealing a white **** which was stained red with blood.

Zhu Yao simply felt a chill on her lower body, and momentarily, embarrassment, awkwardness, astonishment, humiliation, different types of feelings burst out from her heart. A shriek which she could not suppress rang throughout the clouds, and then, out of reflex, with her right hand, she gave a tight slap into the face of the person beside her.

“Ah————— ****!”

‘Auntie’: A chinese internet slang for a girl's period. As to how this term came about... ahem, it seems they derived it from English. From what I understand, it went like this: When a girl hits puberty, she will have to wait until it comes every month. Unti sounds like Auntie. Hence, female netizens would always say ‘My auntie has come.’ when their period arrives. Yeah, chinese people are weird. There are funny variations as to how the term came about as well. If you guys are interested, I will post them up when I have the time.

‘Momma's egg’: Another variation of ‘what the hell’ or any other curses. I could have simply changed it to one of the English variations, but I decided to keep it this way, 'cause of some wordplays in the future.

Chapter 13: Master Has Good Skills

Sovereign Yu Yan, as the person who was titled number one in the cultivation world, it had been many thousands of years since he last suffered injuries, to be precise, it had been many thousands of years since someone ever dared to act against him. People who dared to act against him, had either been turned into bones, or had already ascended. However, he was smacked once again just yesterday morning. And this person who dared to act against him, was the precious disciple he had waited for ten thousand years. With a ‘pa’ sound, a strong and solid slap landed on his left cheek. His face was fine, but his disciple’s hand reddened.

Yu Yan completely could not understand. He simply wanted to look at his idiot disciple’s wound, why did she have such a large reaction? Not only did she not allow him to look, she even acted against him? Truth to be told, he was a little frightened by his disciple’s piercing scream. Thus, he had no choice but to take the next best option, leaving behind a few medicine that could stop her bleeding.

He had to think clearly, just what was wrong with his disciple? Although he had always known that his disciple was not very bright, this was still the first time she had such a violent reaction. And the word she clearly shouted, “****”, was that referring to him?

Ever since he was young, he had lived in the Jade Forest Mountain, the number of people he had contact with was very limited. Although he had often went for training in the outside world when he was young, it had been a long time since then, and most of time was spent staying in the Jade Forest Mountain,

waiting for a Lightning Spirit Vein disciple to appear. So, the things he knew about the outside world were rather limited. Just what was the meaning of “****”? His master had never taught that to him before!

So as to protect his prestige as her master, and to clearly understand the reason for his disciple’s odd behavior, the Sovereign Yu Yan who had holed himself up for more than ten thousand years had decided to make a visit to the mortal realm.

With the spirit to learn, he underwent a field investigation. (Of course, he used the Invisibility Art) After spending an entire day flying around the world, he finally understood that his disciple was actually not injured, but was a natural phenomenon that only occurred to women. The mortal realm termed it “period”.

Yu Yan heaved a sigh of relief, he was finally able to settle down. It’s good that she’s not injured. However, a new problem surfaced again. Why did his disciple not allow him to look? Since it was a natural phenomenon, why did she have to hide it? Was it because she was afraid of being scolded? But he had never scolded her a single word before. No matter how hard he thought, Yu Yan was unable to understand his disciple’s thoughts. In the end, he could only deemed it as, his disciple was really an idiot. (– –)

After he had understood a few precautions, Yu Yan left the mortal realm, and returned with extreme haste. The moment he entered the room, when he smelled the stifling dense smell of blood, Yu Yan frowned even deeper. He simply cast a wind-type mystic art, and the smell of the blood lightened.

And that idiotic disciple of his, had already fainted on the bed, which was completely stained with blood. Yu Yan closed in, and used the Dirt Removal Art to remove the bloodstains her body and the bed. Then, he raised her up from the bed, and fed her with a bottle of Blood-Raising Essence Building potion. Seeing that her twisted brows had loosened a little, he was finally relieved. He placed her nicely on the bed, and then, covered her with her blanket.

Looking at her, he was still not able to settle down. He took out the Millennium Ice Silk from the storage pouch he kept with him, transformed it into a blanket, and covered it nicely over his disciple. After confirming that she would not catch a cold, he waved his hand, lighting up the candle-lights. Then, he silently took out another white fabric that was glowing with a faint light, and a pair of scissors.

When Zhu Yao woke up, she momentarily thought that the days she spent living in the cultivation world was just a nightmare. Because, she felt like she had returned home. The thing in front of her looked like the wooden square table she had used for many years in her house, under the table were four metal-plated stools, and her thrifty mother was currently sewing while sitting on the stool.

Eh, wait a minute. When did her mom become a man? And she was even wearing a weird white robe.

“Mas... Master!” She finally recognized the person who was currently sewing in front of her. For a moment, she was unable to control herself, and her jaw was once again in danger of dropping.

The hands of the person in front of her paused, and then, he calmly looked at her. “You’re awake.”

Then, his fingers moved. After smoothly tying a knot, he bit off the head of the string. His movements were crisp and precise, he was even more skilled than her own mom by a couple of levels.

“Master... You... You...” Oh my god. What did she just witness? Her master was actually capable of needlework! Master, please tell me, just which skill have you not added skill points into!?

Yu Yan did not seem to have noticed her astonishment. After calmly keeping the sewing kit into his storage pouch, and clearing up the dozens of rectangular-shaped fabrics he had finished sewing, he walked over. Reaching out his hand to check Zhu Yao’s pulse, he asked. “Is your body feeling better?”

“Ye... Yes!” Zhu Yao was still in a state of shock. Only after his hint, did she realize that the auntie which had caused her to faint due to the pain, had already eased by a good amount, however, it was still in a state of turbulence. She unconsciously retreated a little.

However, this time, Yu Yan did not mind her movements, and passed her all the sewed products in his hands.

Zhu Yao curiously took them. The fabrics were soft and smooth, the texture were really great, and they were unbelievably light. With just a glance, she knew they were not ordinary products.

And, his work was really precise. Even though there were stitches everywhere, she was completely unable to find any spaces between the heads of the strings. Evidently, he was skilled with his handicraft.

“What is this fabric?” It looked extremely expensive.

“Southern Sea Sharkman Rawsilk.” Yu Yan answered without any mind. “Your master only has this fabric material on hand. Make use of it first. If you don’t like it, I will help you look for some better ones tomorrow.”

“For me? What is it for?” Zhu Yao stretched the fabric. It’s so small, is it a handkerchief?

Yu Yan once again gave her a ‘why is my disciple such an idiot’ expression, and said in a resounding voice. “Sanitary pads.”

Zhu Yao’s hands trembled, and she almost fell off the bed.

Sanitary pads!

Auntie pads!

The reason why he sat on the stool and sewed for such a long time, was to make her auntie pads!!!!

Yu Yan completely did not realize his disciple was close to

turning into a stone, and patiently continued to explain.

“Don’t worry, I have done my research. A woman’s period lasts for at most five to six days. These are enough to last you for this entire month. If it’s still not enough, I will make more for you then.”

“In times like this, women will be fatigued and physically weak. Regarding the matters about your cultivation, there’s no need to rush.”

“If there’s any other inconvenience, you’re permitted to tell your master directly. I will not scold you.”

“The brown sugar water you spoke of, I will boil some for you tomorrow.”

“Have a good rest for today, your master will come see you again tomorrow.”

After saying all that neatly and orderly, he stood up and left.

As for the certain person whose hands were stuffed with auntie pads, she was still in a stoned state. She did not regain her senses for a long while, and her heart was so confused, it was as though she had been struck by a hurricane.

Is... Is Master really alright?

There's something wrong with my master's brain, what do I do? Emergency, someone, please help!

Yu Yan had never been a master before, this was his first time. When he broke through into the Azoth-stage, his master had already ascended. It had been far too long since then, and the memories of his interaction with his master had long been unclear and foggy. Hence, he had completely no experience in bringing up disciples, and was a pure first-timer. Adding that his disciple was a little stupid, he was even more worried.

Thus, he decided to gain experience from his grand-martial nephew, who had plenty of experience in bringing up disciples.

Hence, when Ancient Hill Sect Master, Reverend Zi Mo, had finished managing the day's worth of heavy paperwork regarding the sect, and was about to take a nap, he was startled awake by the sudden appearance of Sovereign Yu Yan in his room. The number of times this person left the Jade Forest Mountain in these ten thousand years could be counted clearly with just ten fingers. Yet, this person actually visited his room personally. Is he going to give me some pointers? Reverend Zi Mo was excited. Just when he was about to express his respect to this ancestral-martial uncle of his, this ancestral-martial uncle threw him an odd question.

“How do you make brown sugar water?”

What? Brown sugar water? Is that some sort of new Mystic Art?

Chapter 14: The Sect Master's Headache

“The thing ancestral-martial uncle is speaking of, is it... a type of Mystic Art?”

“Food.”

“Food? Is it an unknown heavenly treasure?”

“No.” Yu Yan frowned. Unless he has never heard of it as well? “It’s a type of drink usually given to people who are experiencing a loss of blood.”

The corner of Zi Mo’s lips twitched. “Is ancestral-martial uncle referring to water that is boiled after the brown sugar has dissolved in it?”

Yu Yan pondered for a moment, and nodded. So it can be done with just dissolving the brown sugar in boiled water. “Do you have brown sugar here?”

“N... No.” Zi Mo coughed a few times, and finally regained his senses. Just why was his ancestral-martial uncle looking for this this late in the night? “But, if ancestral-martial uncle urgently needs it, this disciple can send down a request, and I will have it sent to ancestral-martial uncle tomorrow.”

“Mn.” Yu Yan still had the same cold expression on his face, slightly nodding his head, he agreed to his suggestion. Satisfied, he

turned to leave. After taking a few steps out, he suddenly thought of something, and once again turned his head back. He then asked with a serious expression. “Say, during a woman’s period, other than drinking brown sugar water, is there anything else that needs to be taken note of?”

“Ah!?” Zi Mo’s legs jerked, and he almost fell onto the ground. He... He did not mishear, right? A woman’s period!? “Ancestral... ancestral... martial... uncle, why... why are you asking about this?”

“You don’t know either?” Yu Yan squinted his eyes, lightly looking into Zi Mo’s eyes. His facial expression did not change, however, his expression evidently showed his disdain. So much for having so many disciples under you.

Zi Mo simply felt cold sweat dripping down from his forehead. Biting the bullet, he replied. “This... this disciple did not really conduct a deep research about it. However... I heard that during that period of time, women will experience a huge loss of blood, they cannot be overly exhausted. and they cannot come in contact with anything cold.”

Yu Yan nodded, and silently took note of it. After pondering for a moment, he continued with his stern and serious interrogation. “Then, what material is best for sanitary pads?” When his disciple received the rawsilk sanitary pads, her expression was strange, she should have been unsatisfied with the material used.

“.....” Was his ancestral-martial uncle’s body taken over? Why did he have to ask a man like him, about a woman’s private matters? “This... This disciple thinks that, it should be a fabric

material with good... water absorption characteristic. For example, Fresh Camlet and the like.”

“Fresh Camlet?” Yu Yan was startled. That seemed to be made out of silk spit out from a type of low-grade spirit silkworm. He really did not have any on hand, hence, he turned his head and silently stared at Zi Mo, who had been wiping his cold sweat off the entire time.

“.....” Zi Mo trembled from the stare. Without a choice, he took out his storage pouch, and silently pulled out a bunch of white fabric. “This disciple has a few pieces of them, if ancestral-martial uncle do not mind, you can freely choose...”

“Mn!” Yu Yan nodded, and before Zi Mo could even finish, with a wave of his hand, all of the fabric material were kept into his own storage ring, leaving none behind.

Zi Mo, who was still holding onto the storage pouch: “.....”

I didn’t say I was giving them all to you, right? Ancestral-martial uncle, don’t you think you’re a little too bold? Rubbing his hands with a pained heart, he did not have the nerve to get them back.

“Ancestral-martial uncle, the reason why you’re asking about all this is?” If someone were to tell Zi Mo that this person who had cultivated for more than ten thousand years suddenly had interests in the matters of a woman, even if he was beaten to death, he would not believe it.

Yu Yan answered without a care. “My disciple is on her period. I’m taking care of her.”

Oh, so it’s about his newly accepted disciple.

Wait a minute! Is there a need for him to take care of something like this?

“Ancestral... ancestral-martial uncle, junior-martial aunt... is a woman!”

Yu Yan gave him a chilled glance. Isn’t that obvious?

Zi Mo’s heart cramped, he hesitated how he was going to have ancestral-martial uncle understand the difference between a man and a woman. “This disciple is trying to say, if you’re this worried about junior-martial aunt... is... is she alright?”

Yu Yan frowned, and replied. “She fainted.”

“.....”

“It’s just blood loss, nothing to worry about.” He had already fed her the medicine, and even cast on her a Mystic Art that relieved pain. He was rather confident in his own Mystic Arts.

“.....” He was not referring to that. “Ancestral-martial uncle, do you happen to know, what periods... ahem, mean to women?”

Yu Yan swept his sleeves without a care. He had gotten the things he needed, it was about time he left.

Zi Mo continued. “In the mortal realm, when a girl reaches eleven or twelve years old, or even earlier, they will have... ahem. This means that they have reached adulthood, and they can...” marry.

“Have an early rest.” Before he could finish, unable to wait any longer, Yu Yan’s figure flashed, disappearing without a trace.

Zi Mo, who was about to get to the main point: “.....”

Rubbing his own storage pouch, his heart ached even more.

The reason why ancestral-martial uncle came here late in the night, was just to take away his Fresh Camlet? Although Fresh Camlet could not be said to be a very precious fabric material, it was not something a regular person could afford to wear. And, due to its strong water absorption characteristic, and defensive capability, usually, people would use it to refine water-type weapons. Using a fabric material like that for sanitary pads, was really too unthinkable. The most important issue was, ancestral-martial uncle took all of his stock, and did not even leave a single small piece for him.

Zi Mo painfully sighed. What could he do about it? That person was his ancestral-martial uncle, after all. He could do nothing but to just let it go. Just when he was depressed, on his bed, he actually

saw a piece of white fabric material which was emitting a soft glow, as though the moonlight was shining upon it. It should be something ancestral-martial uncle left for him. Zi Mo picked it up to take a look, and was so shocked, even his hands began to tremble.

This... This... This... This is Rawsilk! The Rawsilk which were produced from Southern Sea Sharkmen could be said to be a rare treasure in the world, and could be used to refine defensive spiritual treasures of a high grade. Their value corresponded to the aggressiveness of the Sharkmen. Sharkmen were born naturally as eighth-grade beasts, which were equal to Azoth-stage of human practitioners, and usually, they move in groups, people would not easily dare to offend them. A Sharkman would only produce a single piece of Rawsilk in its entire life, and it would treat the Rawsilk as its life. In other words, to obtain a single piece, one must possess the resolve to face a Sharkman to its death.

And currently, he had that one piece in his hands. Zi Mo chuckled as he touched the piece of Rawsilk. The depression he had earlier from losing his Fresh Camlet was instantly replaced by a large amount of satisfaction. He would not mind sending ancestral-martial uncle another few hundred pieces of them.

But, the moment he thought of what he had used this fabric material for, an unsettling feeling began to surface again.

Wait a minute, the reason why ancestral-martial uncle left this Rawsilk, was to exchange it for the Fresh Camlet which he did not have, in other words, he only had Rawsilk on hand before this. Then the material he used for the sanitary pads before this was...

Zi Mo momentarily felt uncomfortable all around his body.

As Zi Mo sank into deep frustration, Yu Yan had already returned to Jade Forest Mountain, preparing to sew the sanitary pads throughout the night. He looked towards the direction of his disciple. It was completely dark in the house, it seemed she had already fallen asleep. Hesitating for a moment, with a heart full of worry, he opened the door.

This disciple of his was really too weak, the main point was that her mind was not really that bright. She was hurting that much during the day, yet, she was still unwilling to tell him the reason, not only was she weak, she was stupid as well. If he were to not tighten his watch over her, he was really worried that she might one day die of stupidity.

Inside the house, Zhu Yao was already asleep. Yu Yan stretched his hand out and checked her pulse. Her pulse was much stronger and steadier than it was in the morning, it seemed she would not feel that much pain after this. Heaving a sigh of relief, he once again looked at his silly disciple who had rolled herself in the blanket.

Suddenly, he recalled Zi Mo's words. He said that during this special period of time, women must not catch a cold. After pondering for a moment, he silently took out a blanket and covered it over her. A mortal catches a cold easily, right?

He looked at her again, and was still feeling a little worried. Not

sure if a blanket was enough, he once again took out another blanket and covered it over her.

He glanced at her again, and was still feeling slightly worried. Yu Yan was not a stingy person, hence, he took out a third blanket.

He peeked at her again, taking out a fourth...

.....

Thus, on the sixth morning Zhu Yao was taken in as a disciple, she was woken up from the heat!

Chapter 15: Reunion With Little Wang

Looking at the ten blankets stacking on top of her body, which were restraining her from moving, Zhu Yao felt extremely uncomfortable. Not just that, unclear of when it began, her master was standing next to her, and with his hands, he was calmly raising up the eleventh blanket, looking as though he was about to press it onto her.

“Master...” Zhu Yao was a little disheartened, was this Master’s newly invented method of waking her up? I have to say, you win.

“Mn!” Yu Yan indifferently responded. Without leaving a trace, he kept the eleventh blanket, and from his calm and collected expression, it looked as though he was not the person who had kept watch of his disciple by her bedside throughout the night. “How’s your body?” As he said that, his hand had already reached out to her wrist to check on her pulse.

Zhu Yao, who was questioned about her auntie in the early morning, instantly blushed completely red. But, seeing the serious expression of the person who questioned her, she mustered up her courage and replied. “Much better.” As though she wanted to prove that she was indeed healthy, she tried to get up.

After confirming that there were no abnormalities in her pulse, Yu Yan was finally at ease. Retracting his hand back, he told her to rest more, and not to get up in such a hurry. Looking at the sky which had already turned bright, he recalled his disciple’s request to drink brown sugar water yesterday. He turned, and headed towards the kitchen.

“Master, wait a minute!” Just when he turned his body, the disciple behind him pulled onto his sleeves. He turned his head back and saw his stupid disciple’s face which looked as though she was about to cry, as she pitifully said. “Do you mind pulling me out? I’m being pressed on by the blankets, I can’t get out by myself at all.”

“.....”

Five days later, Zhu Yao’s auntie went away on schedule. During the five days, she was definitely living in pure misery. Forget about her master who spent his entire time sewing and making her sanitary pads, Jade Forest Mountain, which was usually quiet and serene, suddenly became lively. Every day, there would be waves after waves of disciples heading up the mountain for the purpose of sending them brown sugar supplies. Before leaving, they would always give her curious looks. She felt as though the entire sect knew that her auntie was here.

A bowl of brown sugar water would also appear on the table for every meal as well. After drinking so much, currently, she would even feel nausea just from the sight of water. After all, the bowls of brown sugar water were made by her master, there was nothing else she could do but to bite the bullet, and drink them all down. Hence, the moment her auntie left, she clearly, bluntly, and firmly expressed that she no longer need them. Only then did her master finally stop his “poison-feeding” actions.

Because of this incident, Zhu Yao was deeply concerned about her cultivation life after this. This master of hers, looking at him from

all aspects, she had to say, she was not unsatisfied with him. Handsome, high cultivation level, high status, and he even added skill points in every possible life skill. The main point was, he was extremely good to her, his disciple. The only flaw was... he was lacking in a bit of common sense.

That's right, common sense. Just like this incident, if not for his extremely sincere behavior, she would have really believed that he had a hole in his brain.

She really wondered just how he did he manage to survive for so many years.

It seemed like she had to give him reminders from time to time in the future, after all, she was someone that had experienced the lives of two different worlds. With someone who was like a bunch of worries as her master, it seemed like it was not possible for her to live her life quietly as a female practitioner.

Heaving a long sigh, Zhu Yao, who had holed up for another half a month after the auntie incident, decided to head down the mountain to relieve her boredom. Catching a disciple who had just passed by, she had him bring her to the Main Mountain. She had decided to take a look at Little Wang.

After all, both of them could be considered to come from the same hometown, and she was the one who brought him here as well. Naturally, she felt responsible for him, and from their last encounter, the little fellow was evidently worried about her as well. Although he was young, he already had the undertaking to be a real man. Occasionally, a sense of pride would somehow rise

within her.

After making some inquiries along the way, she found out that batch of disciples had already finished their sect-entry lectures, and had been allocated to the various Mountains.

“This senior-martial brother, I wonder if you have heard of a certain child named Wang Xuzhi, and the place he had been allocated to?” Zhu Yao continued her inquiries.

“Wang Xuzhi!” The eyes of disciple who was questioned momentarily sparkled, and his slightly irritated attitude earlier turned extremely enthusiastic. “Are you asking about the Sect Master’s newly accepted chamber disciple? The one with the Fire Heavenly Spirit Vein?”

Zhu Yao nodded. Although she did not really know if Little Wang was taken in as the Sect Master’s disciple, if that person possessed the Fire Heavenly Spirit Vein, then it should be him.

“Mind if I ask, you’re...”

“I’m his big sister.” Zhu Yao casually came up with a reason. So as to not have someone else call her ancestor, along the way, she did not reveal her identity.

Unexpectedly, the moment the disciple heard this, his attitude towards her became much more respectful. “Junior-martial brother Wang had been taken in by the Sect Master, currently, he

should be in the Sword Mountain. If junior-martial sister do not mind, this disciple here can bring you there.”

Naturally, Zhu Yao was happy to have someone lead her there, and thus, she followed him to the Sword Mountain. When she reached, she realized the Sword Mountain was not that far from the Jade Forest Mountain, as it was just floating right under the Jade Forest Mountain. And, there were teleportation formations between the various Mountains, so there was not exactly a need to fly between them.

That disciple brought Zhu Yao to one teleportation formation after another, and finally, they teleported to a small courtyard. Within the courtyard, with just a single glance, Zhu Yao was able to spot Little Wang, who was currently swinging a sword that was much longer than himself.

Zhu Yao bade goodbye to the person who brought her here, and thanked him, before entering the courtyard. The moment she stepped into the courtyard, Wang Xuzhi saw her. A large surprise flashed across his little face which was drenched in sweat. He sprinted towards her right after keeping his sword, and he shouted loudly as he ran.

“Wife!”

Zhu Yao raised her fist and sent a knock onto his small head, a big bun grew on his head. “What nonsense are you shouting? You have no manners at all.”

“It’s not nonsense!” With a pitiful expression, Little Wang rubbed his painful head. Unsatisfied, he refuted back. “My father once told me, a woman treats her husband as her sky, so, I’m bigger than you.”

Just why could he not put that matter to rest? Zhu Yao could not help but forcefully pinch his round cheeks. “It seems a little child like you haven’t been taught well, why is having a wife on your mind every single day? Who would become your wife anyway!”

“Of course, it’s you.” Wang Xuzhi said seriously. “A real man must be upright, and keep to his words. I once said I will marry you, so I will definitely marry you. I won’t despise you. And, I’m already ten years old, I’m no longer a child!”

Aiya, you’re rather stubborn, aren’t you? “Was that something your father taught you as well?”

Wang Xuzhi shook his head. “My master taught me that.”

Zhu Yao felt it was funny, and stroked his head. “Then, did your master teach you this? As someone cultivating to becoming a deity, you must abstain from normal pleasures of life and deny material satisfaction, so you cannot have thoughts of finding love. You’re destined to not have a wife in your entire life!”

Wang Xuzhi shook his head, as though he had thought of something regarding what she just said, he frowned. “But... Master has a wife, big senior-martial brother has a wife too, and senior-martial brother Shushu has a wife as well!”

Uh... Alright, her version of education seemed to be incorrect.

“Ahem... I heard the Sect Master has taken you in as his disciple.”
Zhu Yao changed the topic of discussion.

The moment she brought up the matter of his master, Little Wang instantly had a prideful look, and haughtily raised his head up. “I’m a chamber disciple, you know.”

Chapter 16: Emergency

“Chamber disciple?” Earlier, it seemed like she had heard that term from the person who lead her here as well. However, she was not exactly sure of the specifics.

Seeing that she did not understand, Little Wang, with a serious expression, began to explain to her. “I heard from eldest senior-martial brother that, only chamber disciples are taught mystic arts personally by master. The rest of the Inner Sect disciples are taught by my senior-martial brothers.”

There’s actually a system like this! But, it was understandable. There were so many disciples in the Ancient Hill Sect, other than the talentless Outer Sect disciples, the rest were allocated to the Six Mountains. The number of disciples that belonged under each Mountain Lord were at least in the high thousands, and at most, above ten thousand. If all of them were to be taught by the Mountain Lord alone, he or she would be tired to death. If we put it that way, the high status of a chamber disciple went without saying.

“Not bad, little wimp, you’re sure doing well.” Zhu Yao praised him as she stroked his little head.

Little Wang became even more complacent. Giving her a “I will be the one protecting you in the future” expression, he raised his head up high like a little prideful rooster. As he dodged her hand, he continued to flaunt proudly. “Let me tell you this. I’m already at the third level of Essence. Even big senior-martial brother was not as fast me. Tell me, aren’t I really awesome?”

“Yes, yes, yes. You’re awesome. You’re the most awesome little kid ever.” As she thought, he was still a kid. How could she reject his little eyes which were begging for attention and praise? At the very least, she was the one who brought him here, and she suddenly had the feeling as though she had a son who had just grown up.

Wang Xuzhi became a little embarrassed from her praises, his little face blushed as he scratched his head. “Then, what about you? What level are you at right now?”

Zhu Yao became silent, and the corner of lips twitched a little. Recalling that she had already spent almost a month at the Jade Forest Mountain, forget about stepping into the Essence-stage, she still did not know what the hell spiritual energy was! The absorption of spiritual energy into one’s body her master told her about, she was unable to sense it at all.

Unless she had really aged, and could no longer compare herself to the little turnips at all? A deep sense of powerlessness momentarily filled her entire body, and she could not help but let out a long sigh.

Wang Xuzhi felt the change in her mood, and his sparkling eyes were momentarily dyed with worry. Pulling her hand, he hesitantly spoke out. “You... Don’t be depressed. Even if you haven’t enter the Essence-stage, it’s not really a big deal. Hao Kai who came along with us just managed to sense spiritual energy as well.”

Guh. Comparing her with a little wimp, was he really trying to console her? Zhu Yao felt her mood worsening.

Seeing that she was not livening up at all, Wang Xuzhi scratched his head irritably, walked about in circles, and continued. “In any... In any case, you will definitely be really awesome really soon. If you really can’t enter the Essence-stage, then... then, I... I will support you!”

Puf~~

Hearing a little turnip say that he would support her so decisively, this was the first time it ever happened in the twenty odd years of Zhu Yao’s life. Although this little wimp had always insisted that she was his wife due to the butt-spanking incident, she had always treated it as a joke. Earlier, she intentionally acted depressed, and simply wanted to tease him. However, she did not expect he would say that he would support her with such a serious expression. Zhu Yao could not help but laugh at his serious little face.

“Don’t you laugh. I’m serious. Don’t you believe me?” Seeing her laughing even more loudly, Wang Xuzhi anxiously stomped his feet.

Zhu Yao squatted down, instantly pulled the flustered little turnip into her embrace, and stroked his little head. This little wimp, sure likes to make me laugh, and make me feel moved as well. In response to his words, she nodded heavily. “I do, I do believe you. Then I will wait for you to grow up and support me, alright?”

Little Wang snorted heavily, and finally quietened down, obediently allowed her to hug him.

“Little junior-martial brother.” From nearby, someone that looked about fifteen to sixteen years old walked over. With a face full of smiles, he looked extremely friendly. Looking at the people in the courtyard, a hint of suspicion floated in his mind, however, he walked in without pausing a single step.

“Senior-martial brother Du.” Wang Xuzhi forcefully squeezed himself out of Zhu Yao’s embrace, and he looked at the incoming person with a surprised expression. It seemed like this person was also one of the Sect Master’s chamber disciples.

“Little junior-martial brother, this junior-martial sister is?” The person who came in gave Zhu Yao a light glance.

“This is my w...” Seeing Little Wang who was about to blurt that out once again, with her nimble hands, she quickly covered his mouth. This loud-mouth little wimp, she did not wish to have a legend about her having a may-december relationship spreading around the entire sect the next day.

“Hoho, I’m his big sister. Blood-related!”

“So you’re his elder sister.” The man politely smiled. He sized her up, and realized he was unable to see through her cultivation level. In situations like this where he was unable to see one’s cultivation level, either she had not learn how to take in spiritual energy, or,

her cultivation level was much higher than himself. However, looking at her age, she must have admitted into the sect for a long time, so, he determined it was the latter.

“My name is Du Yuanchen, a disciple under Reverend Zi Mo. Mind if I ask, which Reverend is senior-martial sister under?”

“I’m called Zhu Yao, I’m a... disciple from the Talisman Mountain.” So as to prevent people from calling her ancestor, she made a small lie.

Du Yuanchen nodded, and no longer continued questioning her. He turned and said to Wang Xuzhi. “Little junior-martial brother, it’s almost time. Let’s go look for master together.”

Wang Xuzhi was startled for a moment. He had to look for his master, but, it’s been a long time since had seen Zhu Yao, so he was a little reluctant. Thus, he looked at Zhu Yao with a difficult expression.

“Go on. It’s also about time for me to return. Let’s head out together.”

Only then was Wang Xuzhi satisfied, and followed behind Du Yuanchen. Occasionally, he would sneak a peak at Zhu Yao behind him, as though he was afraid he might lose her. They would also occasionally start up some idle chatter along the way, and Du Yuanchen would timely interject into their conversations as well.

From their conversation, Zhu Yao found out that there were extremely small number of chamber disciples in every Mountain, and only people with especially good talents, would be taken in by the Mountain Lords as chamber disciples. For example, under the Sect Master, Reverend Zi Mo, he currently only had five chamber disciples. Du Yuanchen was the fourth disciple, he entered under him fifteen years ago, and currently, he was at the level of an Essence Paragon. Little Wang was obviously the youngest disciple. Looking at Du Yuanchen, he seemed to extremely like this little junior-martial brother of his. With his protection, Zhu Yao was able to slightly feel at ease.

Along the way, she had encountered many Sword Mountain disciples bowing to the two people one after another. It seemed like the status of a chamber disciple was extremely high in the sect. And Du Yuanchen and Little Wang seemed to have gotten used to it, as they simply walked on while looking steadily forward.

Little Wang, who had a mind of a child, was even more cocky. He held extreme respect to his own master, and along the way, he kept instilling into her his thoughts of his master being “extremely awesome”, and his master being “number one in the world”.

Zhu Yao curled her lips, she could not bear to shatter his passion to chase after his idol. She wondered what kind of expression he would make if he knew that his master had to call her martial-aunt.

“So, like I was saying, your master must be terribly bad, that’s why you’re still not as awesome as me!” As though he had finally found a very legitimate reason, Wang Xuzhi said to her very

sincerely. “Why don’t you have my master take you in as his disciple as well? Master really dotes on me, so he will definitely accept you.”

Little Wang felt as though his words sounded more and more reasonable, and with his small hands, he pulled Zhu Yao over to his master’s cave residence.

Zhu Yao was about to stop him, when suddenly, a loud bang sounded. In front of her, a black figure flashed past, and with a ‘pa’ sound, it fell right in front of them, staining the ground with a pool of blood.

A flying corpse out of nowhere!? What the hell!?

Chapter 17: The Damn Fatty That Fell From The Sky

The person on the ground was no longer breathing, fresh blood was flowing out from his head, and not even a moment later, the ground was stained with a shocking amount of blood. Zhu Yao had lived for twenty eight years, yet, this was the first time she had ever seen such a gruesome sight. And, the person within the pool of blood was a child of only about ten years old.

“Little fatty Zhao!” Little Wang immediately recognized the person on the ground, and exclaimed. Only then did Zhu Yao regain her senses, and with her hands, she covered Wang Xuzhi’s eyes. Little wimp struggled for few moments, and then, he stuffed his head into her embrace, no longer making any sound. It seemed like he was frightened quite a bit.

Zhu Yao was afraid as well, and she recalled the person on the ground was the little fatty she saw when she was receiving her identity jade tablet. She did not expect that, in just a single month, he would lie unconscious on the ground in front of her. She carelessly raised her head, and she actually saw another kid standing about ten steps away. He was a familiar face as well, the little beggar Xiao Yi with the Duo Spirit Veins. Currently, he was panting loudly as he stared at the unconscious little fatty Zhao on the ground with widened eyes. His white robe was already terribly torn, and his body was filled with numerous wounds which blood were still oozing out from. His eyes were still filled with hostility, and the main point was the longsword in his hands, as there were still wet bloodstains on the sword. It went without saying what he just did.

The commotion drew the attention of many people, and numerous disciples had already begun to approach and form a circle around the scene.

“What audacity, you actually dare to harm your brother of the same sect.” Du Yuanchen was the very first to react. With a single leap, he arrived before Xiao Yi, and kicked away the longsword in his hands. Summoning his own flying sword, he restrained him, turned to face the disciples who were running towards them, and instructed. “Hurry and notify master.”

Xiao Yi did not resist, or most probably, he no longer had the strength to resist, and was easily squashed onto the ground by Du Yuanchen. However, in his clear eyes, unyieldingness still shone within them.

More and more disciples crowded over, and began to softly discuss about the scene in front of them. Appearing in a scene like this, Zhu Yao was a little confused as well. She simply covered Wang Xuzhi’s eyes tightly, not allowing him to see the gruesome sight.

“What’s with this commotion!” A loud and clear voice sounded, and it seemed to have come from the sky. A white figure flew over from the Main Hall, and that person was the Sect Master of Ancient Hill Sect, Zi Mo. The scene which were still noisy earlier, instantly quietened down.

Zi Mo’s gaze swept across little fatty Zhao on the floor, and his expression turned cold. Squatting down, he checked his body. Then, with a wave of his hand, he cast an art, and instantly, a

curtain of light enveloped the bloody person on the ground. His head which was still bleeding earlier, instantly stopped, and his wounds were closing at a speed unclear to the naked eyes. After the curtain of light dissipated, Zi Mo fed him a pellet. A moment later, the little kid once again regained his breathing, and then, he turned to question the people in the vicinity.

“His cultivation has been crippled, who was the one who dealt such a deadly hand?” Zi Mo knew this little kid who was injured. He was the son of Yuan Xiu, the first disciple under Reverend Zi Yuan, the Lord of Weapon Mountain. He had heard that his talent was pretty good, so how was he injured to this extent?

“Replying to master.” Du Yuanchen forcefully pulled up the person beside him. “It’s him.”

Zi Mo looked at Du Yuanchen, and then, his eyes landed on the little kid in his hands. His expression momentarily turned utterly cold. “What happened?”

Du Yuanchen bowed towards Zi Mo, and continued. “Little junior-martial brother, junior-martial sister Zhu and I passed by earlier, and coincidentally saw him dealing a heavy blow to junior-martial brother Zhao.”

Zi Mo turned, looked towards Zhu Yao who was currently hugging Wang Xuzhi, and was momentarily stunned. Little martial-aunt, why are you here!? Unless... Out of reflex, Zi Mo tightly held onto his own storage pouch, glanced at his surroundings, and only when he realized that person, whose body constantly emitted a chilling air, was not here, did he finally heave

a sigh of relief. Fortunately, ancestral-martial uncle isn't here.

After covering up his earlier actions with a cough, he instructed to one of the disciples beside him. "Head over to Weapon-Refining Mountain and notify Reverend Zi Yuan and Yuan Xiu. Have them make a trip to the Main Hall." After giving a glance to Du Yuanchen, he hesitantly peeked at Zhu Yao. "The four of you... Follow me to the Main Hall."

After saying that, he carried the little fatty, and headed to the Main Mountain using a flying sword. As one of the witnesses to the incident, Zhu Yao had no choice but to follow after Du Yuanchen and the little kid called Xiao Yi, and headed to the Main Mountain together using the teleportation formations.

Only after reaching the entrance of the Main Hall, did Zhu Yao think of releasing her hands from Little Wang's eyes. It was rare for Little Wang to not throw a tantrum, most probably, he was truly frightened by that earlier scene. His eyes lacked the luster of high spirits back in the courtyard, and his little hands unconsciously grabbed onto the corner of her sleeves.

Zhu Yao's heart softened from the sight of this. The scene earlier even frightened an adult like her, let alone a little kid like him. Stroking his little head, she said. "Don't be afraid, big sister is here!"

Wang Xuzhi was startled for a moment. Raising his head, he looked at her. Only a moment later did he nod his head, and immediately after, he shook it.

Zhu Yao sighed, and then, pulling his hand, they entered the Main Hall.

Inside the Main Hall, other than Zi Mo, there were two other people. One of them looked rather aged, and his entire body was emitting out an unyielding aura. He should be the Weapon Mountain Lord Zi Yuan. As for the other person standing behind him, he must be the father of that little fatty Zhao, Zhao Yuanxiu. However, little fatty was not in sight, most probably, he had already been sent away for his wounds to be tended to.

Du Yuanchen who had arrived before Zhu Yao had already explained to them about what happened earlier. As for Xiao Yi, some sort of mystic arts seemed to have been cast on him, as he was restrained by glowing ropes at the side.

Zi Mo's expression seemed to be a little heavy. His frown was deep, and no matter how much he pondered, he was not exactly sure of how to deal with the matter.

“At such a young age, not only did he disregard the sect's rules, his attacks are even heavy and ruthless. Punishment must be dealt.” Zhao Yuanxiu was already unable to control himself, his two eyes stared ruthlessly at the restrained little kid. “Sect Master martial-uncle, please uphold justice for my son.”

Zi Mo raised his hand, signaling him to not rush the matter. Taking a few steps forward, he looked towards Xiao Yi, whose body was filled with wounds, and asked. “Speak, why did you deal such

a heavy hand?”

With a body filled with wounds, Little Xiao Yi looked at him stubbornly, and replied with emphasis on every single word. “He. Deserved. It!”

Yuan Xiu flared up at that very moment, and rushed over. “Even now, you still do not repent on your actions. What do you take the sect’s rules for?”

Xiao Yi simply snorted coldly, and rebutted. “And when did your son ever take the sect’s rules seriously? Bullying brothers and sisters of the same sect, using his status to oppress people, I simply took the heavens’ place to punish him by beating him up. I only regret that my blows were too light.”

“You!” Yuanxiu was about to act against him due to anger, however, he was stopped by his own master, Zi Yuan.

Zi Yuan simply looked coldly at the boy on the ground, and turned to speak to Zi Mo. “Senior-martial brother, the current matter has already been made clear. Our sect has rules in place, I hope senior-martial brother can deal with this matter fairly.”

“Junior-martial brother Zi Yuan, how do you think we should deal with this matter?” Zi Mo asked.

Zi Yuan stroked his white beard, although he looked like he did not really mind, his words were filled cold intentions. “According

to the sect's rules, he should be expelled from the sect after having his cultivation crippled, and his Spirit Veins removed.”

The moment those words fell, everyone in the Main Hall was startled. Lying on the ground, Xiao Yi's expression was filled with a certain degree of despair, he tightly gripped his pair of small hands, and a hint of blood oozed out from his fists. However, he still gritted his teeth, and did not make any sound.

Zi Mo frowned ever deeper. Crippling his cultivation was still considerable, however, the moment his Spirit Veins were removed, he would never be able to cultivate again. This disciple called Xiao Yi was a rather good seedling, it would be a pity to destroy him as such, however, he was unable to not give face to his junior-martial brother. For a moment, he was in a dilemma. He glanced at the surroundings, and then, the moment his eyes landed on the person holding onto his little disciple at the entrance, his eyes momentarily shone. Following the rules, he bowed towards the person at the entrance, and spoke with a respectful tone. “I wonder if little martial aunt has any wise opinion on this matter.”

Eh? What the hell?

For a moment, Zhu Yao felt as though she had been struck by a ball.

Chapter 18: The Three Collapsed Views

[Three Views: Worldview, View towards life, and Values]

The six pair of eyes in the Main Hall uniformly swept towards her. Especially Little Wang, he was revealing an expression of utter disbelief, and with a swipe of his little hand, he pulled it out from her grasp. The word “liar” were evidently written on his pair of teary widened eyes.

Hey hey hey, this little wimp sure was not appreciative. She had already told him that she belonged to the Jade Forest Mountain, he was the one that did not realize the meaning behind that. You can’t blame the customer if you’re unfamiliar with the business, you know.

“Greetings to senior-martial aunt!”

“Greetings to grand-martial aunt!”

Although Zi Yuan and Zhao Yuanxiu were a little unwilling, according to seniority, hers was still higher than theirs, so, to maintain their faces, there’s still a need for them to greet her.

With an awkward smile, Zhu Yao waved her hand, and had them lift their heads. Out of reflex, she tried to grab onto Wang Xuzhi’s hand, however, he nimbly dodged away. His small face pouted angrily, and he stared at her with widened eyes which were implying “you tricked me”.

This little wimp, why is he throwing another tantrum?

“Yuanchen, Xuzhi, the two of you, leave for now.” Zi Mo timely solved the problem, and had Yuanchen leave with Little Wang, who was still silently staring daggers at her. Taking a few steps closer to her, even though Zi Mo had an affable smile on his face, he back-faced the other two people, and gave her a meaningful look. “Little martial aunt, by coincidence, you were on-site earlier, hence, your opinion over this matter will be most highly valued. I wonder how little martial aunt thinks we should deal with this matter?”

Zhu Yao trembled. Like hell she knew how they should deal with the matter! Was it really alright to pass a ball like this to her?

“Hoho... My master is calling me for lunch!”

Just when she was planning to flee, the door behind her closed with a creak. Zhu Yao ruthlessly stared at the old man Zi Mo. You sly old fox, this is evidently a matter that would offend the other party, and you actually passed the ball to me.

Zi Mo simply gave her an even more friendly smile, and looked as though he was eager to listen to his martial aunt’s teachings.

Zhu Yao let out a long sigh. She had no choice but to bite the bullet now. Squatting in front of Little Xiao Yi, she looked at the little kid whose body was still bleeding profusely, and could not help but frown. “You people, release him for now.” He was still a

child, after all.

Although Zhao Yuanxiu was a little unsatisfied, he still waved his hand, and dispelled the Restraining Art on Xiao Yi's body.

Xiao Yi took a slow breath, however, he still sat on the floor, and was on high alert towards the people around him.

She already had a certain amount of understanding about the conflict between Xiao Yi and little fatty back when she was receiving her identity jade tablet. This started off as a quarrel between two kids, yet, it escalated into an incident which almost caused a life to be lost. Was cultivation the cause of all this? There was a saying that went like this: 'With great power, comes great responsibility.' However, in a world like this, the more power one possesses, the bigger one's temper, every single person would act against someone else whenever he or she see fit to.

"Xiao Yi, why do you want to kill little fatty Zhao?" That's right, it's kill. Back then, if Sect Master did not appear, little fatty might have really died.

With a cold expression, Xiao Yi still strongly insisted. "He deserves to be killed."

"Why?" Zhu Yao continued to ask.

Gritting his teeth, he seemed to have recalled something that he really hated. "Ever since he was admitted into the sect, he had

always been bullying Ling Long. And because Ling Long never fuss about it, his actions became more severe as time went by. Recently, he pushed Ling Long into a cold pool, causing her to be severely ill, and her life is now at stake. Yet, even after all that, little fatty Zhao took away the medicine needed to save her. I have told this to the senior-martial brother who was in-charge of management, but...” He snorted coldly, and looked towards the nearby Zhao Yuanxiu. “Because little fatty Zhao was the son of the first disciple of Weapon-Refining Mountain, they had always ignored these incidents and simply treated them as though they never happened.”

Zhu Yao pondered for a moment. The one he called Ling Long should be the little girl that was with him the other day.

“And because of this, you want to kill little fatty Zhao?”

Xiao Yi nodded, and a faint killing intent surfaced in his eyes.

“Then have you ever thought of this? Even if you kill little fatty Zhao, you won’t be able to save Ling Long, and, because of that, you will be carrying the death of someone on your shoulders.”

Xiao Yi went silent for a moment, before continuing. “Even if that’s the case, I will still avenge her.”

“So you think that killing little fatty Zhao, is correct?”

He continued to nod.

Zhu Yao felt a little powerless. She could not figure out why a ten-year-old kid would have such an extreme way of thinking. He treated slaughter as a matter of fact, and believed dying to kill someone else was also a method to solve problems. This little kid's three views were evidently screwed up.

“Have you ever thought of the consequences if you kill someone?”

“The people I kill, are people who deserve to die!” Xiao Yi's voice instantly rose.

Zhu Yao frowned even deeper. “Who deserves to die, and who doesn't, how do you determine them? People that treat you well do not deserve to die, while people that treat you bad deserve to? Little fellow, you're not the only person in this world, and the world does not revolve around you. No one has the right to determine the life and death of someone else. You told me little fatty Zhao bullied you, and caused Ling Long to fall severely ill, these are indeed his wrongdoings. However, by killing him, you're using an even bigger wrongdoing to repay him. Do you think that's the correct way of doing things?”

Xiao Yi no longer said anything. He simply gritted his teeth, and stubbornly lowered his head.

Zhu Yao knew it was impossible to talk through to him in such a short time as well. When she first saw him, she knew he was a little beggar, and most probably, he never had any parents by his

side since he was very young, thus, the three views centering around himself were formed. And, the mindset of him being always in the right had already sunk deep into his bones. It was basically not something that could be changed in such a short time.

“It’s a fact that Xiao Yi heavily injured little fatty Zhao, and he should take responsibility for his own actions.” Zhu Yao stood up, and looked towards Zi Mo.

Zhao Yuanxiu, who was standing at the side, had an expression of delight. “Grand-martial aunt, your investigation was conducted splendidly.”

“But!” Zhu Yao continued. “The cause of this incident was due to little fatty Zhao’s acts of bullying, so he should take responsibility for his actions as well.” Zhao Yuanxiu’s expression instantly sank, however, Zhu Yao did not give him the opportunity to speak up, and continued. “And you!”

Zhu Yao looked towards Yuanxiu. “As little fatty Zhao’s father, you did not guide him correctly, and simply allowed him to bully his own brothers and sisters of the same sect, thus, causing this calamity to happen. As the saying goes, failure to educate one’s child is the fault of the father. If you have found out about his conflict with his brothers and sisters of the same sect earlier, and dissuade him of his actions, this incident would not have happened. So, you’re also to be blamed for your failure to educate your child.” A child’s three views were enlightened by his or her parents. If we were to say that Xiao Yi’s extreme three views was due to the environment he grown up in, then little fatty Zhao’s atrociousness was caused by his father.

Zhao Yuanxiu's expression instantly darkened. The corner of his lips moved, yet he did directly refute her, and simply brought his hands together and replied. "This disciple thanks grand-martial aunt for her teachings." However, he still ruthlessly glared at the little kid on the floor with the corner of his eyes.

"Alright, I'm not exactly clear of the sect's rules. So, Sect Master Zi Mo, take charge of their punishments." Zhu Yao stretched her waist, and signaled Zi Mo who had been quietly standing at the side to deal with the matter.

Zi Mo instantly smiled like an old daisy, with a respectful attitude, he began to bootlick her. "As expected, little martial aunt is wise. With such an analysis, the incident was instantly cleared up."

Zhu Yao rolled his eyes at him. Hmph, bastard, you wanted me to say that all along, didn't you? Do you really think I don't understand the thoughts of a sly old fox like you? Unfortunately for her, after the Medicine Mountain, she had now offended Weapon-Refining Mountain as well. She totally had it easy.

Chapter 19: Chinese Good Girl Friend

“Kuh kuh kuh...” Zi Mo lightly coughed a few times, everyone’s attention once again gathered onto him, and he gave his verdict with a serious expression. “Xiao Yi, you heavily injured one of your brothers of the same sect, I will now punish you by crippling your cultivation, and you will be expelled from the Inner Sect. You shall have to begin your training from scratch, and I hope, this time, you will cultivate properly and diligently.” After saying that, with a wave of his hand, a ray of light landed heavily onto Xiao Yi’s body. He, who was forcing himself to sit up earlier, instantly collapsed onto the ground. Most probably, his cultivation had been crippled.

“Yuanxiu, the way you educated your son was improper. You will now have to take good care of Ling Long, the girl who was pushed into the cold pool by little fatty Zhao. That will be your punishment. If anything were to happen to her again, you will be held responsible.”

“This disciple obeys.”

“As for little fatty Zhao, he has caused harm to others as well. I shall issue my verdict once he recover from his injuries.” Zi Mo stroked his beard, With a wave of his hand, he called two disciples to enter the hall. “This matter shall conclude here. Everyone, return to your own duties. Bring Xiao Yi to the Outer Sect.”

The two disciples obeyed his instructions. Carrying Xiao Yi who was on the ground, they walked towards the entrance of the hall. When they passed Zhu Yao by, Xiao Yi suddenly raised his head,

and glanced at her coldly.

Zhu Yao's heart suddenly froze. This little wimp could not be hating on her right? The hell, you best be clear about this. Earlier, I was the one who gave face to this old man Zi Mo, and saved you.

With a heavy heart, she returned to Jade Forest Mountain, and Zhu Yao felt deeply saddened. She had only admitted into the sect for about a month, yet, she had already offended the two great Mountain Lords of [Medicine Mountain](#) and Weapon-Refining Mountain. Her life was simply too “wonderful”, and was afraid of being beaten up by people when she headed out in the future. Hence, she decided to seriously become a NEET after this, and prevent herself from heading out too often.

Speaking of which, she and that little kid called Xiao Yi were rather fated, as she encountered him every single time she headed out. And the strange feeling she had towards him, was becoming deeper with every single encounter. She did not know how to describe the feeling. It was neither hate nor love, it was simply a strange feeling that she was incapable of describing.

And adding the warped three views he had, she could not come to like him at all. Especially, the expression he gave her right before he left caused her hair to stand on end. She could not help but get goosebumps, as she could hardly believe eyes like that would appear on a boy whose age was only ten.

“You're back?” A cold voice successfully pulled Zhu Yao back from her thoughts.

Yu Yan was standing next to the stone table in front of the courtyard. A plate of vegetables, emitting out a delicious aroma, was in his hands, as he looked at the person who just returned. The thoughts of being a wedded husband, instantly rushed into Zhu Yao's mind.

“Darling... Wait, no. Master.” Zhu Yao, who loved to eat, instantly swept away her low spirits, and hurriedly ran over. So master was really waiting for her to eat lunch.

Yu Yan did not reply. He simply looked at his idiot disciple who had already begun eating, silently sighed, and sat across her.

Like a fierce wind blowing leaves off a tree, Zhu Yao quickly swept through the plates, and she even burped after finishing them. Looking at her master who had already begun to clear the plates and chopsticks, she felt being taken in by a master who was capable of simply everything was definitely her biggest blessing ever since she started cultivating. PS : If not for his usual crazy antics.

But, her cultivation was simply...

“Master...” A sense of guilt suddenly rose within her heart.

Yu Yan stopped his movements, and lightly looked at her.

“Umm...” For a moment, Zhu Yao did not know what to say.

Feeling a little uncomfortable, she tugged onto the corner of her own clothes. “Even till now, I have yet to sense any spiritual energy, so...” Have you ever regretted taking me as your disciple?

Yu Yan’s brows curled. Casting an art with his hands, the plates and chopsticks on the table automatically flew into the kitchen. He once again sat down across her, and signaled her to continue.

Zhu Yao, in that instant, felt even more embarrassed. “Ahem... I’m saying, it might be possible... it might be that I’m really unsuitable for cultivating into a deity.” When she went down the mountain this time, she found out that even the kid with the least talent had learnt to take in spiritual energy, while she was still unable to sense any spiritual energy. It would be a lie to say that she was not affected by it.

In the beginning, she was seriously forced into admitting him as her master, however, humans have feelings, after all. After living with him for so many days, how could she feel unmoved when Yu Yan was sincerely taking care of her? She could not treat him as her elder, but, he was still qualifiable as a friend, as a brother, ahem... as a girl friend.

She understood how eager he was to have a disciple. She had heard from the disciples’ private discussions, that her master could have ascended very long ago. However, because he had yet to take in a satisfiable disciple, he had been suppressing his cultivation level, and was unwilling to ascend. But she...

“Why don’t you, find another disciple?” She felt guilty for holding him up.

Yu Yan was slightly startled, with his eyebrows tightly knitted together, he was stunned for a moment. Suddenly, he reached out his hand to touch her forehead, and his expression turned even more odd. She's not having a fever.

“... Master, I'm serious.” Zhu Yao pushed away his hand. She was being different for once, could you not give her some face, and be serious about it?

Yu Yan heaved a long sigh, and immediately gave her a ‘why is my disciple so stupid’ expression. Then, with a serious look, he began to instruct her. “In the future, do not head down the mountain as often, to prevent yourself from learning bad things.” She had only left the mountain for a few hours, and she became even more stupid. Yu Yan believed it made a lot of sense, and had hardened his determination to teach her in a closed environment, so that she would not be influenced by others.

Zhu Yao: “.....”

“From now on, until you build your Foundation, you're not allowed to head down the mountain!” Yu Yan sternly ordered.

“Master!” She was being confined just like that.

Yu Yan's expression turned even colder, it seemed there was no room open for discussion. “You admitted into the sect later than most, unlike a child, your mind is unable to focus on a single objective and put everything, and think deeply, into that one

objective. Hence, it's normal for you to have a late start compared to others, you do not have to pay it too much mind. In this period of time, you only have to stay away from distractions, and concentrate on cultivating, you will be able to comprehend in due time. Cultivation is something that goes against the laws of nature in the first place, it's not a matter you can be overly anxious about."

"But what if I will never be able to comprehend it?"

"Then you will continue to cultivate." Yu Yan firmly said. "You do not have to worry. Even if you're incapable of everything, master will still protect you."

"....." So he had never thought of giving up on her. Damn it, what's with this feeling of wanting to cry? Master, you always divert away from common sense, why do you have to say such emotional statements now? Bastard! Zhu Yao rubbed her eyes fiercely, and she only stopped after her eyes turned red.

"Umm... Master, earlier, when I headed down the mountain, I seemed to have cause some trouble." Zhu Yao decided to be entirely honest. Her master was really powerful, however, if people were to really beat her up someday, at the very least, he would know who to look for. "I seemed to have offended someone."

Yu Yan looked at her skeptically.

Hence, as a preventive measure, she clearly explained the entire

incident that happened earlier. Hmph. The old man Zi Mo dared to make use of her? Then, obviously, she would dare to inform on him behind his back.

“Although I was simply following the Sect Master’s intentions, to forgive the child. But, Reverend Zi Yuan will definitely have a grudge towards me due to this incident, so...”

Yu Yan frowned, and went into deep thoughts for a moment. Just when she thought her powerful master would slap his chest and say he would have her back, Yu Yan then raised his head, looked at her firmly, and spoke.

“Who is this Zi Yuan?”

Unable to control herself for a moment, Zhu Yao fell off her chair.

‘Medicine Mountain’, it seemed the author changed the term used here. ‘Pellet Mountain’ will now be known as ‘Medicine Mountain’.

Chapter 20: Master's Telling You To Come Back Home For Dinner

Because of this talk, Zhu Yao understood that her master not only lack common sense, he was face blind as well! Who wouldn't be able to remember the name of a Mountain Lord after living for more than ten thousand years? With such a personality, Zhu Yao reckoned he had already offended every single person that he could have offended, and when compared to him, Zhu Yao was really more kind-hearted and pure. Hence, Zhu Yao felt completely at ease.

But, Yu Yan was a man of his words. When he told her he would not allow her to head down the mountain, in a blink of an eye, the teleportation formation was removed. Without a formation to send her out, and since she did not know how to use a flying sword either, Zhu Yao began to forcefully accept his education in this closed environment. Yu Yan had also begun to stare at her while she cultivated every single hour of the day, but even if he did so, Zhu Yao was still unable to sense a hint of the spiritual energy he spoke of, as though she was born naturally as a spiritual energy insulator.

Her master had told her that, she admitted into the sect later than most, unlike a child, her mind was unable to focus on a single objective, so, it was hard for her to remove distractions, and concentrate on cultivating. If she were to translate it into human words, 'she has grown old, and she thinks too much.' When Zhu Yao realized this truth, tears began to fall.

It was not her fault for being old. At the very least, she was still

not in her thirties, and when compared to the hundreds and thousands of people in this cultivation world, she would still be considered as an infant, you know.

After being confined for three months, she, who achieved nothing, felt deeply saddened.

Suddenly, a ‘dong dong dong’ knocking sound came from the window. Zhu Yao was momentarily puzzled, just who was it? In this Jade Forest Mountain, other than her and her master, there were no one else. And, master had never knocked on the door. (—)

Opening the window, what’s outside was not a human figure, but a delicate paper crane. Flapping its small wings, it stopped before her. It seemed like the knocking sound on her window earlier was due to its pecking. This was the first time Zhu Yao had ever seen such a mystic art, and curiously, she reached out her hand.

The paper crane obediently landed on her palm, and instantly, it turned into a written strip of paper. It seemed like this mystic art was used to send letters.

Zhu Yao picked up the letter. The words on it were a little childish, they were crooked, and were not uniform in size, from the looks of it, it seemed to have been written by a child. And, this was written on the letter.

“Ugly wife, you liar! Senior-martial brother told me to call you grand-martial aunt, but I will never admit it, hmph!” Zhu Yao

instantly realized the person who wrote this letter, and momentarily, her hands were itching to spank a certain little kid, whose surname was Wang, in the buttocks. When did her name turn from nothing but just ‘hey’, to ‘wife’, and then, ‘ugly wife’?

When she carefully read it again, she actually realized there was something else added in at the corner as well. If she had not looked at it carefully, she would not have found it at all. Putting the letter closer to her eyes, and only after staring it for a while did she recognize the words written there. “Thank you, for back then!”

She heaved a deep sigh. Was he thanking her for consoling him back then? Zhu Yao shook her head. The way this awkward spoiled brat conveyed his thanks was really strange as well.

If three months were not enough to prove a person was talentless in a certain field, then, five years would probably be conclusive enough. Within this five years, no matter how Zhu Yao diligently tried to sense spiritual energy, she still could not feel a hint of it, perfectly explaining the profound meaning behind the word ‘loser’. Even she had begun to suspect that it was due to a problem to her world-crossing method. Just why was this happening to her?

Could it be due to the difference in her constitution as a person of two worlds, which was causing her inability to cultivate? But, this world’s Mystic Arts and medicine were able to work on her perfectly.

Standing on the mountain peak, Zhu Yao looked at the endless

stream of clouds in front of her, and silently grieved. From Little Wang's letters, which were becoming more neatly and properly written, she found out that, since a year ago, Wang Xuzhi had cultivated to the tenth level of Essence, and this speed, out of all of the disciples, was the fastest. Reverend Zi Mo even took him in personally as his personal succeeding disciple.

Zhu Yao was happy for him, but, as for herself, all she had was a gigantic sense of powerlessness which was about to completely squash her entire being down. Haah, just what was the meaning behind her coming into this world? It's an emergency, someone, please, tell me.

“Quack, quack. Your master's telling you to come back home for dinner, your master's telling you to come back home for dinner!” The cries of a crane interrupted her thoughts of self-pity, and Zhu Yao raised her head skywards, looking towards the celestial crane whose voice sounded extremely like a duck.

When she received Wang Xuzhi's paper crane five years ago, just for a moment of fun, she went to consult her master about this method of sending letters. However, he misunderstood, and thought she liked this method of sending letters. Hence, a certain master immediately emulated it, however, he felt a paper crane was a little low-class, and was not suitable for his high-class, and cold image.

Thus, he used an actual crane.

.....

“Your master is telling you to come back home for dinner. Quack, quack. Your master is telling you to come back home for dinner. Quack!”

“Are you a celestial crane or a duck?” Zhu Yao rolled her eyes at the crane which only knew how to repeat a single sentence, turned around, and quickly walked back. If she did not head back, she believed that stupid crane would continue to cry out.

Placing down the plate on his hands, Yu Yan looked at his disciple who was lightly jogging back from afar, and sat down satisfyingly. After Zhu Yao gave him a greeting, he watched her as she began to stuff big mouthfuls of food into her mouth, before speaking up indifferently. “I will be leaving the mountain for a period of time tomorrow.”

Zhu Yao was startled, and she looked straight towards him. This ten-thousand-year hikikomori is actually going to step out of his house? “Master, where will you be going?”

“In a few days, it will be the InterSect Tournament that occurs once every hundred years. Every single sect and clan in the world, will be gathering at the Ancient Hill Sect.”

The InterSect Tournament was the most important event in the cultivation world. Ancient Hill Sect was referred to as the cultivation world’s number one sect, and every InterSect Tournament was hosted by Ancient Hill Sect.

“Is Master going to participate in the tournament as well?” Zhu Yao was a little excited. Truthfully, after being here for so many years, she had seen how her master’s cooking figure, her master’s sewing figure, but she had never seen how he looks like when he fights. “Who are you going to fight with? Can master beat him?”

Yu Yan’s brows furrowed, he really could not hold himself back from knocking his stupid disciple in the head. “Many and various people from all over the world will be coming. To prevent devils and monsters from taking the opportunity to mix into the crowd, I have to reinforce the Great Mountain Barrier Formation.” His stupid disciple did not even bother to think that, practitioners who were above the Nascent Soul level of cultivation, had powers capable of moving mountains and splitting seas, and they would not easily battle one another, let alone him.

“Oh.” So he was only heading to reinforce a formation, and here I thought I could see master in action. “Then, who are the participants in the tournament?”

“Every sect will choose three representatives each for the Essence, Foundation, and Azoth categories, and every one of them will fight for the top three positions.”

Zhu Yao’s eyes glinted, no longer bothering to eat, she picked out a chair that was closest to her master and sat right on it. “Master, will it be really lively on that day? May I...”

“No!” Before Zhu Yao could even finish, her words were forced back by Yu Yan, and he dealt another blow to her. “Unless you build your Foundation.”

“Master...” Zhu Yao dragged the last syllable, and pitifully looked at the person in front of her. Wanting her to make a breakthrough into Foundation was definitely an impossible fantasy, she had already been confined for five years without making a single progress.

Yu Yan continued to ignore her.

Zhu Yao felt even more depressed. Master, you’re heartless, shameless and vexatious.

The person in front of her simply kept the plates and chopsticks, and without even looking back, he headed into the kitchen to wash them.

Zhu Yao laid on the table in defeat, and looked at the empty table. Wait a minute. “Master, I’m not done eating!”

Chapter 21: The Unfortunate Person That Bumped Into A Bird

Although Zhu Yao's master treated her really well, he was an extremely stubborn person at times, and when he had decided on something, he would not easily change his mind. For example, when he forbade her from leaving the mountain five years ago, she was seriously confined in the mountain for a whole five years. No matter how she tried to make a scene, look pitiful, throw tantrums, and talk sense to him, he never changed his mind. And, he seemed to have done something behind her back, as in this five years, the number of disciples visiting Jade Forest Mountain decreased as time went by, and even if it was an urgent matter, it would still be sent through paper cranes.

And even that little bastard Wang Xuzhi, seemed to have forgotten her, the only person who came along with him from the same hometown. In this five years, other than the little paper cranes occasionally flying in with short messages, he had never headed up the mountain to look for her. This little kid doesn't have any conscience at all. Next time I see him, I will definitely spank him fiercely in the buttocks.

Depressed, Zhu Yao gazed at the moon and sighed. Only her breathing could be heard in this quiet place. Among the few dumb birds, that were used to call her for meals, flying in the sky, there was one that was especially fat, and it was flying as though it was drunk. It seemed to have crashed into something in the sky.

Eeehhhh!? It's falling!

Zhu Yao instantly stood up, opened the door, and ran to the place where the celestial crane fell. That thing it crashed into earlier, was a human figure, wasn't it!? The celestial crane bumped into a person! Zhu Yao who had not seen a single outsider for a very long time, sprinted the entire distance, as she wondered which unfortunate person would crash into a bird while flying on his sword.

After running all the way to the mountainside, Zhu Yao finally spotted the unfortunate person who fell onto the ground. Wearing the sect's white uniform, he hugged onto his head with his two hands as he rolled left and right. Beside him, a celestial crane which was as tall as a human adult, with its head extended outwards, was pecking on his body.

"Ow, stop, stop, stop. Stop pecking, stop pecking. Peck again, and I will hit you." The youth seemed to have sprained his foot, and was currently protecting his head like his life depended on it.

"Dumb bird, stop." The moment Zhu Yao called out, that extremely aggressive celestial crane immediately spread out its wings and flew towards Zhu Yao. It cried out haughtily, and then, it flapped its wings at Zhu Yao. The way it was acting, it was as though it was trying to boast that it had caught an intruder.

Zhu Yao stroked the celestial crane's neck, and after appeasing it, she looked towards the youth on the floor. A celestial crane was a first-stage Spirit Beast, and it only had a tiny bit of spiritual knowledge. Any Essence-stage disciple could deal with it, yet, he simply dodged and did not retaliate, it was evident that he held no evil intentions to the Jade Forest Mountain.

“Wife!” That person blurted out, and with an excited expression, he walked over to her. With how he addressed her, Zhu Yao instantly recognized him. If he was not Wang Xuzhi, who else could he be?

With a joyful look, Wang Xuzhi tried to pull her hand. However, the celestial crane beside her cried out, and blocked him. Its long beak once again tried to make contact with his body.

“Enough, dumb bird.” Zhu Yao patted on the celestial crane. “I know him. There’s nothing for you to do here. Go and play somewhere else.” The celestial crane looked at her, and then, it once again looked at the youth, before it flapped its wings and flew away.

“Little wimp?” If he had not called her wife earlier, Zhu Yao would not have believed that this handsome youth before her, was the spoiled brat back then.

Wang Xuzhi scratched his head embarrassingly, and complained. “I already told you many times, I have a name, and it’s called Wang Xuzhi.”

Zhu Yao laughed, and sized him up. “Alright, alright. Little wimp has grown up, and you have even grown into such a handsome young man.” In just five years, the child who was only at her chest-height back then, was now taller than her by the size of a head. The round bun-like face back then, was now a little sharpened, as though it had been cut by a sword. The shota back then, had

already grown into such a handsome man.

Wang Xuzhi's face flushed red from her praises. As though he had recalled something, he cleared his throat, and then, abiding to the rules, he gave her a bow. "Greetings to grand-martial aunt."

"Good boy!" Zhu Yao habitually reached out her hand to stroke his head. However, she realized that this action was a little tiring now that he was this tall, and pulled her hand back. "You little twerp, you haven't shown up for five years, so why did you suddenly have the thought of visiting me today?"

"I... I wanted to look for you as well." Wang Xuzhi hurriedly explained. "But, because ancestral-martial uncle set up a formation on Jade Forest Mountain five years ago, and without his approval, not a single person was allowed to enter. This... This time, I was simply circling around the area, but, I did not expect that I would really manage to enter."

So it was a barrier, it's no wonder that the number of disciples visiting Jade Forest Mountain in the last five years was just a handful, and all of them were sent to look for her master, under the orders from the Sect Master. Master was evidently trying to isolate her, wasn't he? Zhu Yao gritted her teeth, and felt like there was a need to talk to that certain master about life.

"Grand-martial aunt... Have, have you been well these last few years?" Wang Xuzhi tried asking. In the past few years, whenever he had nothing to do, he would circle around the vicinity of the Jade Forest Mountain with his flying sword, and looked if it was possible to enter and see her, however, he had never succeeded.

“I think it’s best if you call me big sister instead!” Zhu Yao pulled him over to a large rock at the side, and had him seated. Although she was older than him, she felt as though her youthfulness would disappear if people were to call her grand-martial aunt or ancestral-martial aunt all the time. Back then, she was the one who brought him here to cultivate, so, calling her ‘big sister’ would not be too exaggerated.

Wang Xuzhi smiled, and obediently called out. “Big sister Zhu Yao.”

“Good boy!” Zhu Yao could not help but stroke his head again. His hair which was already in a mess due to the celestial crane’s pecking, was messed up even more. “Tell big sister, how’s your cultivation coming along? Have you been well? Is there anyone bullying you? If there’s someone bullying you, tell me, I will deal with him.”

He shook his head, and obediently replied. “Master and my senior-martial brothers treat me really well, and I have small successes in my cultivation as well. Currently, I’m already an Essence Paragon.”

“Not bad, kid!” In his last letter, he told her he was still at the tenth level of Essence. But, in just a few months time, he actually became a Paragon. Then, his next step would be Foundation.

Wang Xuzhi’s face reddened again, and became even more embarrassed. She would never have thought, in just a span of five

years, that fearless spoiled brat back then, would actually become so shy. Zhu Yao was momentarily mystified.

“When are you planning to build your Foundation?” Every elevation into a new realm had a big risk involved, as one had to use all his spiritual energy in his entire body to break through. If one’s successful, he would soar into prominence. However, if one was unsuccessful, the least that could happen was a fall in cultivation level, while, the most that could happen was Spirit Vein impairment, and he would no longer be able to cultivate again. And, the higher the cultivation level, the higher the difficulty.

Wang Xuzhi’s expression sank. “I plan to wait for a few years, and only consider it after I stabilize myself in the current realm.”

Zhu Yao nodded, this was the right choice. In comparison, the success rate of breaking through into Foundation from Essence was very high. However, there were no shortage of unfortunate people, and even out of those with good foundations in place, the number who succeed was just half. Then, suddenly, she recalled of something, and turned to ask him. “Are you planning to use a Foundation Pellet?”

“Mn!” Wang Xuzhi nodded. “Master had already prepared a Foundation Pellet for me two years ago, however, I wish to use my own abilities to obtain it. Hence, in the Intra-Sect Great Tournament the day after tomorrow, I will be participating in the Essence group, and I will obtain the Foundation Pellet if I earn a place in the top three.”

After hearing this, Zhu Yao's brows curled tightly.

“Big sister Zhu Yao, what is it? Am I not allowed to?” Wang Xuzhi thought she was worried about his safety, and explained. “You don't have to worry, on the surface, the Intra-Sect Tournament is only conducted to select participants to represent our sect in the Inter-Sect Tournament. And, with my cultivation level, I'm pretty confident in getting to the top ten at least.”

Chapter 22: The Storm At Jade Forest Mountain

“I’m not worried about that.” Zhu Yao sighed. “I’m just worried about you using a Foundation Pellet. I heard from master that, cultivation goes against the laws of nature in the first place, using medicine to elevate one’s level of cultivation, will only bring temporary effects, and it cannot be considered as one’s actual abilities, even if one gains strength for a short period of time. But, comparing the usage of external aid and of one’s own abilities, using one’s abilities is much more dependable. Master himself had never used any medicinal pellets to elevate his level of cultivation.”

Wang Xuzhi went silent for a moment. He knew of this logic as well. There were always side-effects to using medicinal pellets, even if they were not that obvious in the early stages, once one reached the later stages, he would encounter a bottleneck. However, compared to that, everyone had habitually relied on medicinal pellets to supplement and increase their success rates in building their Foundation, hence, he had not thought in that direction.

“Big sister Zhu Yao is right. I have to rely on my own abilities to build my Foundation.”

“You have promise, young man!” Zhu Yao satisfyingly patted on his shoulders. She felt extremely happy that this spoiled brat had learnt to care about her and listen to her words. “Of course, if you’re really unable to endure it, use medicinal pellets when you have to. After all, all hope will be lost if you die.”

“Mn, Xuzhi understands.”

So obedient. So caring. As I thought, I did not care for you for nothing.

“Oh right, big sister Zhu Yao, what’s your current level of cultivation?”

She instantly fell onto the ground.

Zhu Yao held onto her glass heart and silently looked away. Did you have to stab her in the heart like this?

Seeing that her expression was not that good, Wang Xuzhi muttered out. “I was not able to see through big sister Zhu Yao’s cultivation level, so I thought it was because your cultivation level was higher than mine, could it be...” His expression was momentarily in a slight panic, as he immediately began to remedy his words. “Big sister Zhu Yao, it... it wasn’t intentional. I didn’t know you have yet to take in spiritual energy... Don’t be mad at me. If I had known that you don’t even have a single bit of spiritual energy in you, I wouldn’t have brought it up. Don’t be anxious, taking in spiritual energy is actually really simple, back then, I learnt it in a single night. I...”

Stab. Stab. Stab. Zhu Yao simply felt a couple of daggers stabbing right through her heart. She could no longer restrain herself from covering the big mouth of the person who was anxiously trying to explain himself. Gritting her teeth, she said. “Can you stop?”

This little twerp is intentionally making fun of me, right!? Don't think just because you have gotten bigger, I don't dare to spank you.

Deep in the night, so as to not get pissed to death by the little twerp who disguised himself as a pure and innocent young man, Zhu Yao quickly kicked him out of Jade Forest Mountain.

As Wang Xuzhi rubbed his buttocks which were hurting from the kick, he waved his hand, and shouted. "You have to definitely come and watch my matches!" Only then did he reluctantly return as he was chased away by countless celestial cranes from the mountain.

Watch his match? How? She had to at least be able to leave to do so. If not for her master having to leave to reinforce the formation due to the InterSect Tournament, Wang Xuzhi that little bastard might not have been able to enter the mountain in the first place. Haah, as she thought, a little bastard would always stay as a little bastard. No matter how pure and well-behaved he looked, it would not change his bastard personality. Zhu Yao had decided that, she would not be replying his letters for three months.

Recalling the kid's cultivation level, and then, when she thought of her own, Zhu Yao sighed. She walked a few steps into the courtyard, sat cross-legged on the patch of grass in the courtyard, and tried to sense the spiritual energy that she had not been able to feel for five whole years.

The deep night in Jade Forest Mountain was utterly silent, and probably because her master had not returned, it felt even quieter.

Zhu Yao took a deep breath, and for a moment, her entire mind was blank.

Faintly sensing something warm was surrounding her, something sparked in her mind, and instantly after, she could feel countless spots of light currently circling around her. What are these spots of light? Even though she did not open her eyes, she could clearly feel them. Could these be spiritual energy particles?

At that moment, Zhu Yao was excited. Five years. After five years, she was finally able to sense spiritual energy. Among the spots of light, there were those which were tiny dots, while there were some that were grouped up together, and all of them were dancing in the air. As though they were alive, some of them were even a little cheeky and approached her, lightly brushing against her cheeks, as though they were demonstrating their affection to her. The spots of light were varied in colors, and among them, there was a type of spiritual energy with a small silver tail attached to it, which she felt extremely intimate to. It should be the lightning spiritual energy particles that she had to take in.

Zhu Yao suppressed the excitement in her heart, and recalled the method to circulate spiritual energy her master had taught her. Using her heart to sense the silver spots of light, she concentrated her thoughts in having them enter her body. Just when she began thinking about it, those spots of light seemed to have been affected by some sort of guidance, and with a twirl in the air, they hastily flew towards her.

Before Zhu Yao could even feel happy about it, like an opened bottle, the shrieking stream of lightning spiritual energy particles

scrambled as they rushed into Zhu Yao's body, and they were basically uncontrollable. In just a few seconds, they had already filled all the tendons in her body. However, the spiritual energy particles did not stop and continued to drill into her body.

Her tendons swelled uncomfortably, and she felt unbearable pain from the top of her head to the tip of her toes. Immediately after, she seemed to have heard a 'boom' sound from within her mind, it sounded like something had been broken, and the spiritual energy particles which had been hindered earlier were smoothly flowing endlessly into her body once again. It continued to fill up her body, and then, it continued to break through. And this cycle continued on and on. Every single cycle, she would experience that unbearable pain, and the pain would increase in severity in every subsequent cycle.

What Zhu Yao did not know was, her cultivation level was skyrocketing at an astonishing rate as well. First level of Essence, second level of Essence, third level of Essence...

Suddenly, an extremely unbearable pain descended. It was pain that could not be described with words, and Zhu Yao felt her body was currently being forcefully ripped apart, as though she was about to be torn into countless pieces. From the top of her head to the tip of her toes, there was nowhere in her body that was not hurting. Zhu Yao collapsed onto the ground, and no matter what she did, she could not expel the pain. Blood was already flowing out from her eyes, ears, mouth and nose, her blood vessels exploded, and her entire body was already completely stained with blood. Zhu Yao simply felt that she might die in the very next moment.

Currently on the sea under Ancient Hill Sect, reinforcing the formation with the Sect Master, Yu Yan's expression suddenly changed. He immediately turned and headed straight for Jade Forest Mountain.

“Ancestral-martial uncle!” Because he suddenly pulled back, the formation showed signs of collapsing. Zi Mo had no choice but to bite the bullet and covered for him. He turned around, only to realize his ancestral-martial uncle's figure had already disappeared from sight. Ancestral-martial uncle, you can't torture your junior like this. I can't hold onto the Mountain Barrier Great Formation by myself, you know.

With his quickest speed, Yu Yan returned to the Jade Forest Mountain. In that short instance, he momentarily felt the imprint he left on his disciple's forehead being activated. That was a type of Sensing Mystic Art that only a master and his or her personal succeeding disciple could have, and it would only activate at the moment when the disciple was at the borders between life and death. His disciple was evidently within Jade Forest Mountain, just what could threaten her life there?

Before he even reached the peak of the mountain, he had already felt the storm of lightning spiritual energy. He was a holder of the Lightning Spirit Vein as well, so he was rather familiar with this type of spiritual energy. However, the current situation looked as though all of the lightning spiritual energy particles between the sky and earth were being guided, and they were pouring towards the peak of Jade Forest Mountain at an overwhelming rate. Even the strongest Spiritual Energy Gathering Formation in the world, would not be able to bring in such a large amount of lightning spiritual energy.

Yu Yan flew closer, and realized at the center of those spiritual energy particles, was his disciple. Covered entirely in blood, she had collapsed onto the ground, and the surrounding lightning spiritual energy particles were endlessly pouring into her body. If this was to keep up, she would definitely die from self-destruction.

Yu Yan swung his sword, momentarily dispersing some of the spiritual energy, and rushed into the center of those spiritual energy particles. Raising his disciple up from the ground, he cast a Mystic Art on her that would forcefully awaken her.

Chapter 23: Great Diarrhea Art

“Mas...ter!” The moment Zhu Yao could clearly see the person right in front of her, that unbearable pain once again attacked her, and she felt like fainting again.

Yu Yan did his best to keep her awake, and set up a formation that could obstruct spiritual energy. However, the surrounding spiritual energy particles were simply too many. After losing their guiding beacon, they instantly began to behave wildly, and attack indiscriminately. “Converge your mind, focus on a single thought, hurry and stop the spiritual energy pull.” Currently, the violent turbulence could only be stopped if his disciple stop her absorption of spiritual energy, otherwise, the entire Ancient Hill Sect would be wrecked by the rampant lightning spiritual energy particles.

Zhu Yao understood that the current situation was extremely grave as well. She crawled up and began to meditate, following her master’s instructions, she stopped her intake of spiritual energy.

After about five minutes, the rampant spiritual energy particles slowly calmed down, and began to disperse.

Yu Yan released the formation, carefully looked at his own disciple, and realized, she was already an Foundation Paragon. Even Sovereign Yu Yan, who had a vast amount of experience, was a little shocked by his own disciple. Just what kind of disciple did he take in?

For five years, she could not even manage to take in a hint of

spiritual energy, and once she learnt how to, she immediately rose by several levels?

“Master?” Zhu Yao could feel that her body was different as well, however she could not understand what was that earlier situation about. Was it her late-coming cheat?

“There’s no need to think too deeply into it.” Yu Yan cast a Dirt Removal Art on her, cleaning up the bloodstains that filled her entire body. Then, he carried his disciple who was completely fatigued into her cottage, and covered her nicely with the blanket. “Have some rest for now. Never bring this incident up to anyone else.”

Zhu Yao nodded. After seeing her close her eyes, Yu Yan then turned and left the cottage. Raising his head up, he looked at the lightning spiritual energy particles that had yet to fully disperse in the sky. This certain master was a little distressed. Improving one’s cultivation depended on spiritual energy, and the amount needed varied for different types of Spirit Veins. As to how much spiritual energy one could absorb, it would have to depend on how much one could sense spiritual energy, and the person’s affinity to spiritual energy. Even when he was promoting into a Demigod, he had never seen such a terrifying turbulence of lightning spiritual energy.

There were only two possibilities to the cause of such a terrifying scene. One, his disciple possessed a heaven-bending God Artifact, which had the ability to gather lightning spiritual energy. However, he had been alive for so many years, and had never heard of such a God Artifact in the world. Even during the

legendary Ancient Savage Era, when it was known to be filled with countless of treasures, was not known to have such a God Artifact. And, when a God Artifact was born, there would definitely be signs about it appearing in the world, so it was impossible for its existence to be kept hidden. And, given his stupid disciple's intellect, where her thoughts were basically written on her face, she would not possibly have the capability to hide it from everyone else, nor would she have the thought of doing so. Otherwise, it would not have been possible for her to not know how to take in spiritual energy for five whole years.

In that case, there was only one possibility left. His disciple's affinity to lightning spiritual energy, was at an unimaginable degree. Hence, the lightning spiritual energy particles would scramble and rush into her body.

Haah, it seemed like he had taken in a very big trouble. But what could he do about it? She was his disciple, after all!

Zhu Yao slept an entire day and night. After waking up, she simply felt her mind was extremely refreshed, and her body was filled endless vigor. It seemed as though, in a single night, her five senses improved. In the past, she had the thought that Jade Forest Mountain was desolated, and even with a good look, she would not be able to see much life around. However, now, as long as she paid slight attention, she would be able to hear birds chirping in the forest, the caterpillars crying on the leaves, the butterflies flapping their wings around the flowers, and she could even occasionally hear the laughter of the disciples that were passing by Jade Forest Mountain.

This was an experience that she had never felt before, and when Zhu Yao opened the door, a feeling of being welcomed into a new world rose in her heart. As she thought, she did not cross into this world just for the sake of touring it, and the feeling of having a cheat was awe-awe-some. As though they had felt her thoughts, even the lightning spiritual energy particles in the air, were lively jumping about.

Zhu Yao stopped her feet, looked at the blurry and dim spots of light in the air as they intimately circled around her. They then lined themselves up in a 'S' shape, and after that, they lined themselves in a 'B' shape.

She calmly waved her hand and dispersed them. Hmph, little bastards. That night, you bastards almost killed me. This time, I will not allow you guys to enter that easily. Even if you guys try to act all cutesy, it's no use.

"Master!" The moment Yu Yan walked out of the door, he saw an unidentified object pouncing onto him. He habitually stepped to the side, and stared as she slammed her face onto the ground. Heaving a long sigh, he gave a 'my disciple is being stupid again' expression.

Zhu Yao slapped away the dirt on her clothes as she got up. She was not angry, after all, he was the one who saved her life.

"Thank you, master, for saving my life. This disciple has nothing to repay you, why don't I give you my love?"

Yu Yan looked at her weirdly. “You’re mine in the first place.”

“Ehh?” What does that mean? Zhu Yao was a little stunned. What did he mean by she was his in the first place? She suddenly imagined herself as a commoner being favored by a rich and cold-looking CEO. No! I only said that as a casual remark!

Yu Yan saw that she had begun to turn stupid again, and explained. “You’re my personal succeeding disciple.” She could only have him as her master in the first place, so naturally, she was his. Love or whatever, was basically non-existent.

Zhu Yao’s face cramped. As she thought, her master was a martian who she could not communicate with. Ah whatever, I’m feeling good today, so I won’t talk back at him. “Master, what are we eating today?” Was it not time for breakfast?

“You’re hungry?” Yu Yan looked at her strangely.

Zhu Yao rubbed her tummy, and shook her head. Logically speaking, after sleeping for an entire day and night, she should have been extremely hungry by now. However, she did not feel the slightest of hunger right now.

“Once you reach Foundation, you will no longer feel hunger. From this day onward, you have no need to eat.”

“Ah, if we don’t eat, won’t we be missing out on one of the many pleasures in life?” As a gourmet, this was simply unacceptable.

“Master, why don’t we occasionally eat, and experience life sometimes?”

Yu Yan was unmoved. “There are too many impurities in the food of the mortal realm, and they do not benefit one’s cultivation. Since you no longer feel hunger, there’s no need for food any longer.”

Zhu Yao was slightly distracted for a moment. She silently decided to eat sneakily in the future, and definitely not have master see her doing so.

“Since you have already built your Foundation, start training in all the Mystic Arts you have memorized in the past.” The certain master began to shift into teaching mode. “Just by having a high cultivation level, without any mystic arts, will not do. First, start by training in the entry-level Body Purity Art.”

“Yes, my liege! No problem, my liege!” Zhu Yao obediently raised her hands.

Yu Yan ignored her nonsense, raised his hand and tapped on the center of her forehead. Zhu Yao felt a large amount of information pouring into her mind, and that was the Body Purity Art he spoke of. Actually, the so-called Body Purity Art, was to purify one’s meridians, remove the impurities in one’s body, which in turn, would allow spiritual energy to circulate more smoothly in one’s body. This way, casting Mystic Arts would be more fluent and rapid.

Zhu Yao closed her eyes and sat down. Following the method stated in the mystic art, she purified her meridians over and over again. However, she underestimated the amount of impurities she accumulated in her body in the last thirty-three years. After purifying them a few times, she felt an unbearable pain in her stomach. Guruguruguru. Her stomach growled. Embarrassingly, she looked towards her master at the side, and realized he was currently looking at her, unmoving. He looked as though he had already known that this would happen.

She gritted her teeth, leapt right up, and speedily rushed into the toilet. Liar! What Body Purity Art! It's evidently the Great Diarrhea Art!

Chapter 24: A Practitioner Who Cannot Fly

Hence, Zhu Yao, who had accumulated impurities for thirty-three years, squatted in the toilet for an entire day. Even if she possessed the cultivation level of a Foundation Paragon, she could barely stand still after the entire thing. When she returned to the courtyard while leaning against the wall, the moon was already glowing and the stars were already shining bright in the sky, and her master had long disappeared.

Zhu Yao mustered the last bit of strength she had in her, and headed to the pond at the peak of the mountain to bathe, before crawling back to her own room. This Body Purity Art almost killed her.

From tomorrow onwards, she would refrain from eating. That was Zhu Yao's firm decision when she got back to her own room.

She slowly closed her eyes. Oh right, I seemed to have forgotten something today? Ah, whatever, let's sleep for now.

If there was one achievement Zhu Yao made in the last five years, it's that she had memorized all the Arts under the Azoth-stage that she could train in. As someone who had experienced an examination-oriented education, and had crossed over that difficult path, memorizing them was simply too easy. And, master had often explained to her the principles of these Arts, so she had accumulated five years of basic theoretical knowledge.

And with her current cultivation level, when she tried to apply

them practically, she was evidently able to use them easily. She basically managed to learn how to control them after a few dozens of tries. Occasionally, when there were a few difficult ones, her master would advise her at the side, and she would be able to comprehend them after that. Hence, in the next three months, Zhu Yao had been desperately learning the Arts she had fallen behind on.

However, there was one Art, that she could never conquer. And that was the Flying Sword Art.

Looking at his disciple who had once again fallen from not even a height of four meters from the ground, Yu Yan heaved a long sigh.

Zhu Yao felt like crying. Crawling up, she picked up the long sword which had fallen beside her, and showed a face of defeat. No matter how strong a deity practitioner she was, she could not conquer her fear of heights!

That's right. Zhu Yao was afraid of heights. Just by being a little high up, her legs would turn jelly, let alone standing on such a thin sword, and flying around on it. It's really scary, alright!?

"Master, can I not use a sword?" As a deity practitioner, it was indeed embarrassing not being able to fly. However, her fear of heights was something she could not deny. "I'm really afraid of heights, just by standing on the sword, my legs will turn jelly. Switching it with a broader weapon is fine as well." At the very least, she would feel safer.

Yu Yan looked at her, and began to seriously ponder about this problem. Actually, in Ancient Hill Sect, there were indeed many different types of weapon users, and the weapons they used to fly varied as well. However, swords made up the majority, as, swords had the strongest attacking power out of all weapons. And, Ancient Hill Sect was famed for its sword techniques as well. Yu Yan himself, practiced in the ways of the sword.

“What kind of weapon do you want to use?”

“My requirements aren’t high. As long as it’s a little broader, convenient to use, and can be used to attack and defend. It’s best if it’s easily retractable too.”

Those aren’t high requirements, you say? Yu Yan heaved a sigh, and deeply pondered for a moment. “I will think of something regarding your weapon. In the next few days, practice more on the rest of your Arts. In a month’s time, you will be following me to participate in the InterSect Tournament.”

“InterSect Tournament!” This meant that she could leave the mountain. Wait a minute. “I’m... I’m participating as well?” She could not even fly with a sword, even if she went, she would probably be disintegrated in a second, right? Was it not the top three winners in the Intra-Sect Tournament who would be participating?

Yu Yan looked at her indifferently. “It’s fine if you just watch.”

“...” So she was simply going there to spectate. Why did she feel

oddly irritated at her master's expression?

“Although you have already built your Foundation, your advancement in cultivation level was too quick, and you're still not familiar with the usage of many Mystic Arts. You will benefit from watching the fights of others.”

Zhu Yao nodded. Indeed, her actual combat experience was equal to zero. Although she learnt the Mystic Arts by memorizing and cramping everything her brain, being able to apply them, was an entirely different matter. Even if her opponent's cultivation level was much lower than hers, once they were to start dueling, she might not be able to obtain victory.

This could be compared to when one first begins to learn the multiplication table. Anyone is capable of multiplying up to nine times nine, and anyone can simply blurt out the answer to the multiplication of single-digit numbers. Everyone knows that two times two equals to four, but what about twenty-two times two? To calculate it in the quickest time possible, it depends on one's experience and the method to derive the answer.

Mystic Arts were the same as well. Although there were differences in the amount of spiritual energy in every person, the speed of casting Mystic Arts, and the methods of using Mystic Arts were different for everyone as well. These were the keys to obtaining victory. And, in these aspects, she was just at the entry-level.

“Master, I understand.” Zhu Yao tightened the grip in her hands. This was the first time she had treated cultivation seriously, ever

since she had crossed into this world.

Yu Yan nodded, and once again began to explain to her the essentials of some Mystic Arts, before turning to leave.

Zhu Yao began to seriously practice these Mystic Arts as well. Most of the Arts she were learning were Lightning Mystic Arts, and their attack power were extremely strong. For example, the Lightning Guiding Art, as the name suggested, once the Mystic Art activates, a strike of lightning would be gathered using spiritual energy. Master had said that, once she formed her Azoth Core, she would be able to comprehend the Great Lightning Guiding Art. When that time came, what would be emitted would not be just a single lightning strike, but tens and thousands of them. There was another Art called Heavenfall, which was the strongest out of all the Mystic Arts she knew of currently. With her current spiritual strength, she could barely cast it once. The difference between the Lightning Guiding Art and Heavenfall, was that, the Lightning Gathering Art used her own spiritual power to form lightning, while Heavenfall, was to directly guide a Heavenly Lightning to descend unto her target. However, a Mystic Art like that would deplete her entire spiritual power with just a single cast, and, if she were to miss, in the next moment, she would simply be lying on the ground as she waited for her death.

Of course, other than these, she knew of other types of Mystic Arts as well. However, she would have to change the lightning spiritual energy in her body to correspond to the type of spiritual energy needed to activate those Arts, before she could use them. For example, she would require to first change her lightning spiritual energy to fire spiritual energy, before being able to activate the Fire Ball Art. Not only was this time-consuming, it was

very tedious as well.

However, a deity practitioner could not simply use a single type of Mystic Arts. Master had told her not to simply concentrate on a single type. As a Lightning Spirit Vein holder, she would only be well-recognized if she was able to master all of the other types of Mystic Arts.

A month later. The day of the InterSect Tournament.

Ever since three days ago, Zhu Yao was able to feel the atmosphere around the sect was different compared to before. There were even more disciples passing by the cold and quiet Jade Forest Mountain as well. Although they were unable to enter the mountain, with Zhu Yao's current divine sense, she was still able to sense them.

Zhu Yao could feel a large wave of festivities approaching, however... she was unable to leave.

Ever since her spiritual energy went berserk, her master once again reinforced the formation, and this time, not even a paper crane could fly in. When she found out this truth, tears flowed out of Zhu Yao's eyes.

Her master had promised to bring her to watch the competition, however, in these last three days, she could not even find his figure at all. She had flipped the entire Jade Forest Mountain, and his figure was still nowhere to be found.

No, to be exact, she had not seen her master for an entire month. Ever since he explained to her about some of the Mystic Arts, he disappeared. Although he had often disappeared without even notifying her in the past, he had never been gone for this long before. If not for the fact that she was unable to leave the mountain, she would have already went to the Sect Master to file a missing person report.

Master, hurry back and fetch your disciple! I want to leave!

Zhu Yao waited bitterly for an entire morning, and only at noon, did her master, who had been lost for an entire month, finally return. Zhu Yao could not restrain herself from shooting him with a resentful stare with a magnitude of a hundred thousand electrical volts.

Unfortunately, the certain master ignored her.

Chapter 25: Who Doesn't Know How To Bully?

Yu Yan reached out his hand, and there was a jade tablet on the top of his palm. Zhu Yao looked at it carefully. Eh? Why does this jade tablet look so familiar? Ah, isn't this the identity jade tablet I received five years ago? Because she did not have spiritual power back then, she had thrown it away in some corner. "Master, where did you find it?" She had forgotten where she placed it herself.

Yu Yan did not answer, and simply told her. "The weapon you want has already been stored inside this jade tablet."

Zhu Yao received the tablet. Using her divine sense to check, she realized, inside the jade tablet, was a few sets of clothes, and a few books regarding entry-level Mystic Arts. These should be the items issued by the sect, and a fan laid silently beside the Mystic Art books. She hurriedly retrieved it. Zhu Yao did not know what the frames of fan were made of, but they felt comfortable in her hands. The fan was dark red in color, although it did not have any flora designs, it gave off a faint soothing scent, and looked extremely beautiful.

Zhu Yao fiddled with it for a moment. It was exactly the weapon, that could both attack and defend, and was easily retractable, she requested for. Zhu Yao came to love the fan instantly.

"When this fan is opened, it can be used as a flying artifact. Its speed is not incomparable to a sword." He was completely disappointed in her Flying Sword Art. If his disciple, the disciple of Yu Yan, were to fall to her death from flying on a sword, it would

be extremely humiliating.

Zhu Yao nodded heavily, and began to love it even more. Touching the fan, she suddenly recalled the few days he had gone missing. “Master, you couldn’t have spent the last month refining this fan for me, right?”

Yu Yan nodded his head indifferently, as though spending a month to create such a convenient weapon for his disciple was not that big of a matter.

Zhu Yao held onto the fan in her hands, and she felt so moved, her mind was completely muddled. “Master, you’re the best! This disciple will definitely be obedient, work hard in my cultivation, and take good care of you when you’re old!”

Yu Yan’s eyes twitched, his disciple was being stupid again. “Don’t you want to leave? Hurry and change your attire, and follow me to the Duel Arena in the Main Mountain.”

“Yes, my liege. No problem, my liege.” Zhu Yao immediately turned, and ran into her room.

Yu Yan watched her run off, and sighed deeply. He was not entirely sure if her personality was a good or bad thing. Everything was written on her face, she was too sincere towards others, and she lacked the cautiousness of a deity practitioner. He was worried that she was going to suffer if she were to encounter a bad person in the future.

Returning to her room, Zhu Yao impatiently pulled out all of the items in the jade tablet. She had already learnt all of the Mystic Arts in the books, hence, simply threw them back in after a single glance. However, those few sets of clothes could be used. They were all the sect's white uniform, and were extremely simple looking. When she took a closer look, clouds were actually embroidered on the uniforms. Mn. ****.

In the past few years, as she was unable to open this jade tablet, the clothes she had been wearing were all given by her master. The designs were much better than these white uniforms. Her master was extremely skilled, after all.

However, it was the InterSect Tournament today, she felt that it would be best to wear this white uniform instead. The rest of her Sect disciples were wearing the same uniform in this big event, naturally, she did not want to be the exception. She hurriedly changed, and followed after her master as they left the mountain.

Only when she finally stood on the fan, did she feel the greatness of this weapon. After inserting spiritual energy into it, the entire fan enlarged by several times, and there was even enough space for ten people. The main point was that, the amount of spiritual energy needed to insert into this weapon was the same as flying swords, and the fan even had a built-in defensive formation. While in flight, not even a hint of wind could blow into them. Zhu Yao silently gave her master a thumbs up.

The Duel Arena for the InterSect Tournament was set up next to the Main Mountain. Zhu Yao had thought that it would be similar to the duel ring in ancient times, and a simple platform would just

be placed at the center. However, she did not expect to see a mountain floating next to the Main Mountain. Calling it a mountain would be a little exaggerated, however, it did indeed had a size of about three football fields.

A tall circular stage was built at the center.

And then, facing towards the ring, was an even taller stage. On top of it, were a few floating chairs, and seated on them were a small number of people. Among the people who were dressed differently there, were five people in white robes. Needless to say, they were definitely the Mountain Lords of the various Mountains in Ancient Hill Sect. The people beside them were probably the Sect Masters of the other sects, who had brought their disciples to the tournament.

Without even looking around, Yu Yan immediately brought his disciple and flew towards the highest point of the stage.

Zi Mo instantly saw him, and was slightly shocked in his heart. He immediately stood up and welcomed him. “Greetings to Ancestral-martial uncle.” This big man had never participated in the InterSect Tournament for thousands of years, why did he suddenly have the interest to appear today?

“Hi, old man!” Zhu Yao appeared behind Yu Yan, and waved her hand at him. She was a little excited after meeting someone she was familiar with for the first time in five years.

Zi Mo stiffened, and then, he coughed for a bit, instantly

understanding the situation. “Greetings to Junior-martial aunt.” So he came to spectate because of his disciple. Zi Mo then looked at her carefully, and realized Junior-martial aunt, who had not taken in spiritual energy five years ago, had already built her Foundation, and was even a Paragon! This terrifying cultivation speed, as expected of a great master to bring up a great disciple. It was no wonder why Ancestral-martial uncle insisted on taking her in as his disciple back then.

The others had realized the situation here as well. Their eyes shone, and they began to stand up and bow one after another. “Greetings to Sovereign Yu Yan.” They were all rather excited in their hearts. After all, Sovereign Yu Yan was number one in the cultivation world, and it was stated in legends that he had not appeared in front of people for tens of thousands of years, and they were actually able to meet him today.

Yu Yan nodded, and he unreservedly walked over to sit on the chair right in the middle

The rest saw that he had no intentions for idle chatter, simply stroked their noses, and returned to their seats. However, they silently lowered their seats a little, giving Yu Yan the highest seat.

Zi Mo, who had his chair stolen: “.....”

He quietly instructed a disciple to bring another chair over.

While Zhu Yao took out her fan, flew behind her master, and stood upright behind him. My master is this cool and dazzling

tyrant, and I'm cool and dazzling tyrant number two.

Suddenly, she felt a chill down her spine, as a cold pair of eyes stared right at her. When she scanned her surroundings, she made eye contact with a cold-faced woman.

Mn, she was rather familiar. Was she not the Medicine Mountain Lord she offended when she just entered the sect a few years ago? Her name seemed to be Hong Chou.

When she recalled that she even scolded her back then, Zhu Yao broke into a grin, and a voice with a sarcastic tone sounded. "Yo, Junior-martial niece."

The lady instantly looked gloomy. After giving her a ruthless glare, she coldly snorted and looked away, showing Zhu Yao the back of her head.

Eh, you're no longer cute if you act all prideful.

This Hong Chou seemed to really take matters like this into heart. The incident happened so many years ago, yet, she still gave Zhu Yao such an expression. However, since she was Hong Chou's martial-aunt, as a benevolent person, Zhu Yao would not fuss about it. Zhu Yao was about to silently watch the matches, however, she suddenly heard the sonorous cry of a bird.

Someone she did not know suddenly said. "The three Sovereigns are here."

The audience on-site, turned to look at the clouds one after another. Three people, two men and one woman, appeared from above. One was stepping on a seven-colored mythic bird, one was stepping on a white tiger, and the last one was even stepping on a bright-colored jade lotus. Their bodies were filled with divine aura, as though they were deities who had descended into the mortal realm from the nine heavens. Especially the female practitioner among them, was as beautiful as the glowing moon, giving off a feeling of elegance and holiness. And, the bird cry earlier, was emitted by the mythic bird she was riding on.

From their imposing aura, they must be the three Demigod practitioners of Ancient Hill Sect.

Before Zhu Yao could even feel astonished from this spectacle which looked as though it was from a Hollywood Production, suddenly, an overwhelming pressure assaulted her. She was just a Foundation practitioner, how could she withstand the pressure from a Demigod? Instantly, her blood rumbled within her body, her meridians began to hurt, and she felt as though her cultivation level was about to be damaged.

A hand was raised out, and it landed on her shoulder. Instantly, the pressure she felt was completely dispersed.

Yu Yan's expression momentarily turned cold. A pressure that was much more terrifying than the previous, which held a heavy killing intent, was instantly sent back at them.

The three of them instantly felt that terrifying pressure, and because they were not prepared, their legs turned jelly. If not for the fact that they had to keep their reputation into account, they would have already fell off from their spiritual beasts. However, they managed to hurriedly circulate their spiritual energy to block the pressure, and only then did they saw Yu Yan, who was staring at them coldly in the eyes.

Chapter 26: Little Wimp's Third Senior-Martial Brother

Their expressions became rather terrible. Initially, the reason why they released their pressure was to simply demonstrate the Ancient Hill Sect's might, with the purpose of frightening the rest of the Sects. However, they did not expect the godly Sovereign to be present, and in the end, everything backfired.

The three Sovereigns, undoubtedly, were a little embarrassed, however, they managed to react, and they hurriedly retrieved their pressure at the quickest speed possible. They then moved forward and bowed. "Greetings to martial-uncle."

Yu Yan simply glanced at the three of them, and then, continued to send his stupid disciple some spiritual energy. After confirming that she was alright, only then did he pull his hand back, and respond indifferently. "Mn!"

Sovereign Yi Ran was the first to spot Zhu Yao who was standing at the side. Out of the three Sovereigns, his personality was the most friendly in the first place. He took the initiative to converse with her. "Could this person be the new junior-martial sister taken in by martial-uncle?" He suddenly understood why martial uncle Yu Yan unforgivingly released his pressure towards them earlier. So it was because they had harmed their junior-martial sister earlier.

But, in actual fact, this was not a fault of theirs. The ones seated above this tall stage were all Sect Masters of the various sects, and their cultivation levels were at least at the early Azoth-stage. Who

would have thought that his martial uncle Yu Yan would actually bring his disciple here to watch the tournament out of sudden impulse?

It would not have been right for Zhu Yao, who was pinpointed out, to continue keeping silent, hence, she bowed to the three of them. “Greetings to senior-martial brothers, greetings to senior-martial sister.” Zhu Yao had always known that there were three Sovereigns at the Demigod-stage in Ancient Hill Sect, however, as she had always been confined, she never saw them.

Other than Yi Ran, the two others simply nodded their heads politely.

Yi Ran’s smile was especially friendly. “A couple of days ago, I heard martial-uncle had taken in a junior-martial sister, yet, we never had the fate to meet. I didn’t expect that, the moment we actually get to meet each other, you had already built your Foundation. As I thought, you’re rather extraordinary.”

“Senior-martial brother, you flatter me too much.” Mn, looks like he’s a rather friendly person. Zhu Yao smiled. “Senior-martial brother had always been in closed-door training, so I did not dare to disturb. Please do not blame me for not doing so, senior-martial brother.”

“Junior-martial sister, you’re too courteous. If you don’t mind, you can visit my cave residence whenever you’re free.” Yi Ran gave an even happier smile, and suddenly, as though he had thought of something, he continued to ask. “Right, I still do not know junior-martial sister’s name. Since you have admitted into the Jade Forest

Mountain, you should have Yu as your surname. May I ask of your Daoist title?"

Zhu Yao's expression darkened in an instant. Friendly, your sister! You can't dig out a person's dark secret just like that. Gritting her teeth angrily, she replied word by word. "My. Name. Is. Yu... Yao!"

When these words fell, Yu Yan who was beside her instantly turned and threw her a suspicious stare. Did I not bestow you the name 'Wang'?

Zhu Yao returned him a ruthless glare. You're Desire, your entire family's Desire!

Yu Yan frowned, and then, he sighed. He silently thought to himself. My disciple's stupidity is getting worse and worse. She can't even remember her own Daoist title. Then, he turned back and continued to look towards the ring. While Zhu Yao continued to silently stare daggers at his back.

Seeing that there was something amiss with the atmosphere between the master and disciple, Yi Ran tactfully stopped his questioning. After giving a few polite greetings, he positioned himself a little lower, and sat on his white tiger as he watched the match.

Hence, the tall stage was separated into three levels. The first level comprised of Yu Yan, and Zhu Yao, who was standing behind him. The second level comprised of the three Sovereigns. And the

third level comprised of the various Mountain Lords and the Sect Masters of the different sects. With such a distinct separation in levels, Zhu Yao felt that she only required a can of cola to complete a super deluxe meal.

The appearance of Sovereign Yu Yan and the other three Sovereigns undoubtedly ignited the flames in the hearts of all of the disciples present. It must be known that in every InterSect Tournament, to these participating disciples, not only was the tournament used to showcase a sect's strength, it was even more so a chance for them to spread their names in the cultivation world.

And the victor of every tournament would be able to obtain a chance to receive pointers from elders who were at least at the Nascent Soul stage. And today, the strongest elders of Ancient Hill Sect even appeared. Leaving aside Sovereign Yu Yan who was number one in the cultivation world, even if they were only able to receive a few pointers from one of the three Demigod Sovereigns, the participants would still benefit for life.

Cultivation was not simply about absorbing spiritual energy to increase one's cultivation level. The essence of cultivation was more about one's comprehension to life and the Dao. And people who could reach the Demigod-stage, definitely had insights, of the many lives in the world and the Dao, that exceeded normal people. To receive a single pointer of them, forget about sudden realizations, it would benefit their future cultivation even more.

And because of this fact, every participating disciple worked even harder, as they fought with hundred and twenty percent concentration.

Unfortunately, Zhu Yao was unable to see them. That's right, she was unable to see them. Zhu Yao only realized this when she decided to seriously watch the competition. Damn it, leaving aside the fact that this stage is too high up, why the hell is there a formation that blocks the line of sight in place? Naturally, those with high cultivation levels would not be affected, however, she was merely a Foundation practitioner, she basically could not see what was happening on the ring at all. As she thought, a price must be paid for acting tough. It was no wonder that, other than the various Sect Masters and Mountain Lords, there were no other disciples present. It was not because they were unwilling to bring them here, rather, they had known of this fact.

“Master... May I head down and take a closer look?” Zhu Yao had no choice but to discuss with Yu Yan, and temporarily shifted her gaze away from the ring.

Yu Yan looked at her, and understood that she was unable to see anything from here either. Hence, he nodded. “After the matches are done, return immediately. Do not stay for long.” To prevent yourself from learning bad things. Of course, he did not say that last line out loud.

Zhu Yao nodded. She looked around, and as she thought, she saw a familiar figure. Coincidentally, he was looking in her direction as well. Zhu Yao immediately activated the weapon beneath her, and hurriedly flew over.

“Little wimp!” Zhu Yao tapped on the youth in front of her, who was looking about.

“Big sister Zhu Yao!” Wang Xuzhi excitedly turned his head. “You’re finally able to leave the mountain?”

Zhu Yao nodded. “I’m prodigious, after all!”

Wang Xuzhi did not retort about her arrogance, and simply pulled her hand, revealing a much happier smile.

The person standing beside him noticed this, and with a gossiping look, he spoke up. “Junior-martial brother, who is she? Aren’t you going to introduce her to us? When did you meet her? You little brat, I didn’t think you have this sort of taste.”

Wang Xuzhi’s expression instantly darkened, and he glared at him angrily. “Third senior-martial brother, don’t be disrespectful!”

“Yo, you’re angry!” Yan Yuehong twirled a strand of hair next to him. Looking at him from the corner of his eye, his smile was filled with ambiguity. “Don’t worry, junior-martial brother. Even though your senior-martial brother here is cool and handsome, and beloved by everyone, I will not steal her away from you. And... your senior-martial brother doesn’t really like older women, they’re not my type.”

This time, Zhu Yao’s expression darkened as well.

“Yan Yuehong!” Wang Xuzhi’s furiousness was like a cat with its

hair standing up, as though he could fight him to the death in the next moment.

Coincidentally, Du Yuanchen nearby saw her as well, and before Wang Xuzhi could explode, he placed his hands together and gave Zhu Yao a bow. “This disciple greets Grand-martial aunt.”

This time, the one whose expression darkened was Yan Yuehong.

Zhu Yao chuckled, and had Du Yuanchen raise his head. Then, she turned and swept a glance at the person called Yan Yuehong. “So you’re my martial nephew’s third disciple?”

Yan Yuehong’s brows tightened, and had no choice but to respond awkwardly. “Yes, greetings to grand-martial aunt. If Yuehong has offended grand-martial aunt, please forgive me.” He simply wanted to use this rare opportunity to tease his junior-martial brother who behaved so seriously at such a young age. How would he have known that she had a higher status than him. I can’t be blamed for this!

Chapter 27: Someone Else's Counter-Attack

Drama

Zhu Yao gave an even bigger smile. “So it’s [Little Three](#). Little Three, there’s no need to be too courteous. Little Three has not met me before, it’s totally understandable that you did not recognize me. Grand-martial aunt will not blame Little Three. Alright, Little Three?”

“Thank you, Grand-martial aunt.” He kind of felt that being called Little Three was a little strange?

“You’re welcome, I’m old, after all! My heart is big and wide, that’s the only good point of being old!”

Yan Yuehong: “.....” Didn’t you say you wouldn’t blame him for it?

Puf!

The two people at the side could no longer hold their laughter.

“Big sister Zhu Yao, are you here to watch my final match?” Wang Xuzhi timely spoke up and changed the topic. Big sister Zhu Yao is the same as ever. She’s never merciful with her words.

“Final match? You entered the finals?” It was already the third day of the Inter-Sect Tournament. It was no wonder her master

only brought her here today, he wanted her to watch the finals directly.

“Mn, I’m in the Essence group.” So she did not know about it. Wang Xuzhi was a little disappointed, but, he instantly cheered himself up. “The next match is the last ranking match for the Essence group, and the victor of that match will be fighting with me.”

In other words, the next match was the semi-finals?

Zhu Yao instantly focused, and looked towards the ring. She realized a match had just ended on the ring, and there were disciples currently cleaning the ring. It should have been a match of the Foundation group, and the victor was a disciple in blue robes. He seemed to be a disciple from another sect.

Not even a moment later, the referee who was in charge of the matches had already announced for the next match to begin.

Two disciples in white robes flew onto the ring at the same time, and their attire were the same as hers. One of them looked like a middle-aged man nearing his forties, while the other looked around the same age as Wang Xuzhi. However, he did not have the face of a pretty youth, rather, his face revealed a hint of firmness, and he looked a little familiar.

“This person is?”

“Big sister Zhu Yao knows this person as well!” Wang Xuzhi explained. “He’s Xiao Yi, the person who heavily injured little fatty Zhao five years ago. Currently, he’s an Outer Sect disciple.”

So he’s that little beggar! It’s no wonder she felt he looked a little familiar. She did not expect that he would actually enter the semi-finals, and his cultivation level was actually the same as Wang Xuzhi’s, an Essence Paragon.

“He’s rather hardworking.” From how this was going, it felt like a drama where a poor protagonist was making a counter-attack in life.

“Mn.” Wang Xuzhi nodded in agreement. As an Inner Sect disciple himself, he deeply knew how hard it was for Outer Sect disciples to make themselves known. “Back then, his cultivation was crippled by master. In just five years since his cultivation was crippled, he managed to cultivate into an Essence Paragon, and even fought his way through into the semi-finals. He’s indeed really talented.”

Zhu Yao, who was even more talented, silently rubbed her nose, and decided to concentrate on watching the match.

Xiao Yi had Metal and Wood Dual-Spirit Veins. One was great for defense, while the other was great for offense. With the two types of mystic arts complementing each other, he was highly talented. While his opponent had Water, Wood, and Earth Tri-Spirit Veins. Although his talent could not be compared to Xiao Yi’s, but the complementary effects of his Spirit Veins were good as well, the flexibility of his mystic arts was extremely high, and his casting

speed was quick.

The moment Xiao Yi's opponent stepped foot onto the ring, he slammed his palms onto the ground, and a Wood-type Bind Art was released. The ground fluctuated, and beneath Xiao Yi, several vines instantly drilled out from the ground and moved to restrain him.

Xiao Yi leapt out of the way, landing about thirty feet away. The moment he landed, vines once again popped out from underneath his feet, and their speed were twice as fast as before. Looking at the speed of these vines, it seemed that his opponent was extremely experienced with the Mystic Art.

Xiao Yi had no choice but to constantly leap away from those vines, and it looked as though he did not have any opportunity to stay on the ground. A hint of complacency was revealed on his opponent's face. Making hand seals with a single hand, he cast out another Ice-type Mystic Art, summoning countless of ice blades which flew towards the person in the sky. Xiao Yi was unable to land firmly on the ground, and now, he had nowhere to run in the air either. This was an attack that block all of one's escape routes. It had to be said that his opponent had planned his strategies really thoroughly, and he basically did not give Xiao Yi an opportunity to attack.

Xiao Yi tiringly dodged those incoming ice blades, as he maintained a barrier to block the rest, and carefully prevented himself from being caught by the vines on the ground. However, if he simply continued to dodge, losing would just be a matter of time.

Finally, his barrier could no longer hold up against the attacks from the ice blades, and it shattered soundingly. Xiao Yi had no choice but to summon his flying sword. He then used the Falling Sword Art, where he converged his spiritual energy into dozens of spiritual swords, which flew towards the person in front of him. Spiritual swords were converged by spiritual energy, so naturally they were sharper and firmer than the ice blades. The spiritual swords shattered the incoming ice blades as they flew towards the target. Just when the spiritual swords were approaching the opponent, a large number of vines drilled out from the ground, forming a wooden wall which blocked his attacks.

Taking the opportunity he was defending, Xiao Yi finally managed to land on the ground. He once again brought up his sword. This time around, rather than the dozens of spiritual swords he summoned earlier, what he used was the Falling Starflash, which summoned countless of spiritual swords at the same time, and they flew towards the target with heavy killing intent. The vines which were left on the ground were sliced into bits by the spiritual swords, and even the wall of vines he created was in the danger of being cleanly sliced away.

However, his opponent was not the least bit frantic, rather, a hint of a grin was revealed from the corner of his mouth. Quickly forming hand seals with his two hands, a flash of light appeared in his eyes. “Burn!”

The lushful vines on the ring instantly burned into a huge fire, instantly trapping Xiao Yi within the big fire. His opponent had actually inserted a Fire-type Mystic Art into the vines, his hand seals were too quick, and he intentionally allowed Xiao Yi to slice

away the vines. Xiao Yi did not realize it at all.

And when Xiao Yi used the Falling Starflash to summon countless of spiritual swords earlier, his consumption was huge. Currently, he basically did not have much spiritual energy left. It seemed like he was going to lose this match.

His opponent lightly laughed, and his eyes were filled with a look of complacency, as he looked towards the huge fire that filled the sky.

Suddenly, he heard a cold voice from within the huge fire. “Return Formation, activate!”

A gigantic mystic formation suddenly lighted up on the ring, and the huge fire was instantly extinguished. His opponent who was still smiling felt his blood rumbling, and then, he spit out a mouthful of blood. His cinnabar was completely empty, and he no longer had the ability to continue fighting. He could not help but look at the totally unscathed person in front of him with widened eyes.

Return Formation reflects the caster’s Mystic Arts within the formation. When did he set up the Mystic Formation? Could it be while he was dodging those vines?

“Victory goes to Xiao Yi of Ancient Hill Sect!” The judge at the side announced loudly.

Xiao Yi no longer looked at the person on the ground, as he turned and left the ring. However, suddenly, he raised his head and looked towards the direction of the Chamber Disciples. He paused his steps for a moment, and then, he turned away and walked out the next moment.

Zhu Yao was startled. That Xiao Yi seemed to have been looking in her direction earlier?

Zhu Yao suddenly had a really strange feeling. This sort of feeling was very familiar, and it would always appear whenever she saw that youth named Xiao Yi. In the past, she had thought it was just a coincidence, but now, she was even beginning to suspect that the problem lied with herself. Normally, as someone who was among the lower-class for twenty odd years in another world, she should have been really interested in how a person like him who started out on a poor footing would make his counter-attack. However, she currently did not feel the least bit excited at all. Just why was that so?

“Big sister Zhu Yao, big sister Zhu Yao.” Wang Xuzhi nudged the person who was dazing at the side.

Only then did Zhu Yao regain her senses. Another match had already begun on the ring, and it was the match between practitioners at the Foundation-stage. It seemed like it was a match with larger importance, as the spectators outside the ring were more enthusiastic than before.

“Third senior-martial brother is definitely number one for this tournament.” Wang Xuzhi confidently said.

Zhu Yao then realized, one of the participants on the ring was actually Yan Yuehong, the one who badmouthed her earlier. When did he head onto the ring? Unconsciously, she seemed to have dazed for a very long time.

Little Three: It means someone who's a 'third wheel' in a relationship affair.

Chapter 28: Wang Xuzhi VS Xiao Yi

“This is the finals for the Foundation group?” Yan Yuehong was at the Foundation Paragon level, same as her.

Wang Xuzhi nodded. “Third senior-martial brother is actually really amazing. He’s the one who was first to obtain the qualifications to enter the finals among all of the participating Foundation disciples.”

“Is it very difficult to enter the finals?”

“Extremely difficult!” He continued to explain. “Every participating disciple is an elite of the various sects. Every sect will first conduct an Intra-Sect Tournament to select three participants, and there’s a total of three different groups in the Inter-Sect Tournament. There are more than ten participants in each group, and only after defeating everyone in the group, can you enter the finals.”

I see. It looks this person called Yan Yuehong is actually really skilled. “In that case, you’re really amazing too. You have entered the finals as well, haven’t you?”

Wang Xuzhi smiled a little shyly, and nodded a little embarrassingly. This kid, back then, he was so arrogant and prideful. I didn’t expect to see him change so much in just five years. I simply praised him a little, and his face reddened so easily.

Zhu Yao suddenly recalled that she promised to see his

preliminary matches a few months ago. She had actually forgotten about it.

“Sorry, Xuzhi. Back then, I promised to see your matches. However, four months ago, something happened, so I never had the chance to leave the mountain.” In the few days he was participating in the preliminary matches, she was recovering from the outburst of spiritual energy. When she fully recovered from it, he had already finished with the preliminaries.

“It’s... It’s alright!” Wang Xuzhi’s face reddened even more, and then, he raised his head and looked at her in the eyes. “You... What did you call me just now...?”

“Xuzhi?” Zhu Yao looked at him a little weirdly. “Didn’t you always want me to call you by your name? You’re a grown-up now, I can’t be calling you twerp or little wimp forever, right? What? I can’t call you that?”

“You can! Of course, you can!” Wang Xuzhi hurriedly nodded his head forcefully, as though he was afraid she would change her mind.

This little wimp sure is hard to please. “When’s your match?” On the ring, Yan Yuehong had already obtained victory.

Wang Xuzhi turned to look at the ring as well. “It should be the next match.”

Already? Zhu Yao was a little startled, and she just happened to hear the announcement that the final match of the Essence group was next. It was between Wang Xuzhi and Xiao Yi, who had won just earlier.

“Big sister Zhu Yao, I’m going.”

Zhu Yao nodded, and habitually, she reached out her hand to stroke his head, smiling. “That person should be specialized in formations. You must be careful.”

“Mn. I will.”

“Good luck.” Zhu Yao did a ‘good luck’ gesture. “Remember, it doesn’t matter if you win or lose, it’s fine if you come back safe and sound.”

Wang Xuzhi was startled, as though he had never thought that she would say something like that. A moment later, he revealed a brilliant smile, as though rays of light were being emitted out from him, blinding and sparkling.

Zhu Yao reflexively raised her hand to block the shine, and when she regained her senses, Wang Xuzhi had already entered the ring. Was that just her imagination? Why did she feel that the little wimp’s smile was so brilliant, it almost blinded her?

The match on the ring had already begun. Facing his last opponent, Wang Xuzhi had no choice but to be even more

cautious. Adding the stunning battle his opponent displayed earlier, he could not help but pay extra attention to the person in front of him.

Of course, the same went for Xiao Yi as well. Five years. He had been ousted out of the Inner Sect for five years. Today, he was finally able to cleanse all his shame, and retain his former glory. Today, he, Xiao Yi, would have everyone who had bullied him understand, what was true strength.

When experts collide, only the brave will prevail. Almost at the same time, the two initiated their attacks.

Wang Xuzhi had the Fire Heavenly Spirit Vein, however, what he first used was not the Fire-type Mystic Arts he specialized in, rather, he summoned several wind blades. Xiao Yi did not put a barrier, instead, he slammed his palm onto the ground, erecting an earth wall to block the wind blades.

However, Wang Xuzhi's wind blades were just a feint. When his opponent formed the earth wall, he had already moved towards Xiao Yi's back. He summoned his flying sword, and swung it down. The sword was filled with spiritual energy, a strike with astonishing might. And, his opponent no longer had the chance to defend against it.

“Good!” Zhu Yao could not help but applaud Wang Xuzhi.

The sword slashed past the human figure, landed on the ground, and emitted out a ‘dang’ sound. And the human figure in front of

him actually slowly dispersed, disappearing into thin air. It was actually a false image. Wang Xuzhi's expression changed. As he did not have the time to find Xiao Yi's true body, he immediately erected a defensive barrier.

Sure enough, the moment his barrier was formed, a piercing sword strike came attacking towards him, and it struck the barrier heavily.

Wang Xuzhi swung his sword to force his opponent back, and leapt backwards himself, his defensive barrier had already shattered soundingly. As he thought, his opponent was not easy to deal with.

Similarly, Xiao Yi held onto the hilt of his longsword as he stared at him. Both of them were disciples who wielded swords, and they trained in the ways of the swords. Compared to Mystic Arts, they were most specialized in their sword techniques. Almost at the same time, the two of them abandoned their Mystic Arts, and collided with their sword techniques.

Xiao Yi had the Metal and Wood Dual-Spirit Veins, his sword emitted out a faint golden light, and due to its incomparably sharpness and firmness, it could be used to attack and defend. While, on the other hand, Wang Xuzhi had the Fire Heavenly Spirit Vein. His strikes were filled with destructive power, and his entire sword was as though it was burning with raging fire.

The two of them collided more than a hundred of times, yet, they were still unable to determine the victor, and if they were to continue fighting like this, they would simply be depleting their

own spiritual energies. Finally, the two of them came up with ideas of their own. Xiao Yi threw out two formation flags, and a formation instantly took shape.

Wang Xuzhi had already prepared himself for his opponent's formation. He flew up, and instantly distanced himself from the formation.

Hmph. At that moment, Xiao Yi revealed a cold smile. As he thought, those from the Inner Sect were all people who were cowardly and afraid of death. "Spirit Increasing Formation, Activate!"

As those words fell, large amount of spiritual energy gathered from all directions, and the formation on the ground released a brilliant white light.

Wang Xuzhi's expression slightly changed. Xiao Yi intentionally threw his formation flags out in a wide manner to trick him into distancing himself from the heart of the formation. In actual fact, it was not an offensive formation, but a support formation used to replenish spiritual energy. As long as the formation was completed, the person within the formation would be able to have his spiritual energy instantly raised to the perfect state.

Not good. I can't let him complete the formation. I have no choice but to take a gamble then.

Wang Xuzhi circulated all of the spiritual energy in his body, and for a moment, a violent wind stirred. A gigantic sword as high as a

tower appeared from the ground, completely surrounding the entire ring. A dense sword energy flooded the skies.

“Isn’t... Isn’t this a sword formation that can only be accomplished by practitioners at the Foundation stage?” A disciple outside the ring cried out astonishingly. Only someone who had extremely high comprehension to sword techniques, could unleash a sword formation that surpassed one’s level.

Zhu Yao’s worried heart was tightened even more. The little wimp was putting his all into this attack, and the outcome of the match would be decided with this strike of his.

“Countless Sword Formation, disperse!” When those words fell, the gigantic sword that emitted out a dense and cold sword energy dispersed into countless of small swords in an instant. With the force of an avalanche, the small swords flew towards the center of Xiao Yi’s formation.

In the end, Xiao Yi’s Spirit Increasing Formation was never completed, however, his spiritual energy had recovered to a certain extent. With extreme speed, he left the heart of the formation, and flew towards the skies. However, the Countless Sword Formation actually followed after him.

He had no choice but to cast his Earth-type Mystic Art again, erecting a earth wall that covered himself entirely. However, the countless swords simply struck onto the wall, and it seemed as though his defense was about to be broken. Xiao Yi clenched his teeth, his eyes turned cold, revealing the determination to make his aspirations come true. This match, I can’t lose, I must not lose!

The wall that was struck by the countless swords shattered in an instant, and it looked as though victory had been decided. Suddenly, a sword energy that was even more frightening than the gigantic sword earlier, exploded from the earth mound. It was as though time had stopped, and the swords that were still attacking wildly had stopped in mid-air.

Xiao Yi stood up from the mound, and did hand seals one-handedly. Although his body looked fatigued, it still emitted out a relentless aura. He then shouted out, with emphasis on every single word. “Linear. Sky. Slash!” He swung the sword in his hand with all his might, and the countless swords in the air, were instantly blown away in all four directions. Only when they struck the spectator’s barrier outside the ring, did they finally fall onto the ground.

Linear Sky Slash? That was an Azoth-stage sword technique!

With his Countless Sword Formation broken, Wang Xuzhi’s spiritual energy was completely depleted, resulting to a backlash which caused him to spit out a mouthful of blood.

However, Xiao Yi’s technique was still not finished. He pointed the longsword in his hand towards the sky, and instantly, a humongous spiritual sword appeared in the skies. The spiritual sword was more than a hundred times larger than the gigantic sword Wang Xuzhi summoned earlier.

“Destroy!” Xiao Yi shouted loudly, and the humongous spiritual

sword fell towards Wang Xuzhi, who no longer had the strength to retaliate.

Zhu Yao felt her heart quivering. The ominous feeling she had ever since little wimp went onto the ring, was instantly infinitely stronger than before. A terrifying feeling instantly struck her heart, and all of the hair on her body stood on ends.

However, her body had already reacted unconsciously.

“Heavenfall!” A Heavenly Lightning split apart the air as it descended from the skies, instantly striking onto the descending humongous spiritual sword. In the next moment, the spiritual sword shattered into pieces.

Xiao Yi spit out a mouthful of fresh blood.

The entire audience was dead silent.

All of their eyes, gathered onto her face one after another.

“Uh...” ‘Embarrassment’ could no longer describe Zhu Yao’s current feelings. The hell, she herself did not know why she suddenly intervened. She looked at her surroundings, and then, she looked towards the tall stage. “Umm... My... My hands slipped. Ho. Hoho. Hohoho.”

Audience: “.....”

Chapter 29: He Isn't Even Willing To Give Me A Hundred Dollars

Even more glares filled with condemnation, like daggers, were thrown at her body, as though they were trying to rip her skin apart. Zhu Yao felt like crying. Don't be like that. What happened to 'friendship first, competition second'? She really did not intervene in the match on purpose.

Just when she was about to be swallowed whole by the surrounding glares, a figure flashed right in front of her. A white figure had appeared before her. A terrifying pressure was spread in all four directions, and like a silent threat, everyone instantly kept their unsatisfied glares.

“Master!” It was her master, the master who saves her from all bitterness and difficulties.

Yu Yan's face was cold as always, and he lightly glanced at her. “It's getting dark.”

His sleeves fluttered as he waved his hand, and without even explaining, he carried his disciple and flew back to the Jade Forest Mountain, leaving an audience who did not even have time to react.

Zi Mo silently looked towards the direction the two people disappeared to, cold sweat dripping down his head. Ancestral-martial uncle, you openly protected your disciple for personal reasons, and then, you left me to handle this mess. Are you really a

man?

Heaving a deep sigh, Zi Mo regained his senses. He's a Sect Master who specialized in cleaning the backsides of others, after all!

"Ahem! Xiao Yi is the victor of this match. In this InterSect Tournament, he's number one in the Essence group." Only when these words fell, did the sounds of discussions among the audience finally stop.

Xiao Yi endured the rumbling blood in his chest, and forced himself to stand and bow. "Thank you, Sect Master."

Wang Xuzhi stood up and left the ring. This was an outcome that was within his expectations, he had indeed lost this match. As he thought, he was still not strong enough. Raising his head, he looked towards the direction Zhu Yao had flown to, a feeling of melancholy suddenly rose in his heart. When he recalled the scene when the humongous sword was falling towards him earlier, he could not help but deeply frown again.

When Zi Mo was about to announce his reward, he was stopped by the sonorous cry of a bird nearby.

Sovereign Feng Yi, the only woman out of the three Demigod practitioners, who was sitting on her mythical bird, gently stood up. It was just a simple movement, yet, her movement was like that of a fairy's. With a light raise of her left hand, Xiao Yi, who was still kneeling on the ground earlier, suddenly rose into the sky,

and flew towards the tall stage, stopping at the empty floor of the tall stage.

“You, you’re called Xiao Yi?” An ethereal voice echoed gently.

Xiao simply felt as though, from the skies, a soothing voice floated towards him, and each word rang in his mind. He could not help but kneel. “Yes... Xiao Yi is this disciple’s name.”

Feng Yi’s beautiful eyes closed slightly, and she only continued to speak after a short while. “Are you willing to admit under my tutelage?”

Xiao Yi was stunned. Not just him, even if it was everyone on-site, they were all unable to believe their ears. A Demigod Sovereign was taking in a disciple. And the person was the only woman out of all the Demigod Sovereigns in the cultivation world, who was said to have not taken in a single disciple.

Seeing that he did not reply for a long time, Feng Yi’s brows creased lightly. “You’re not willing?”

“No, this disciple is willing.” Xiao Yi was filled with surprise and was completely moved, he had to bite his lips tightly to prevent his tears from falling. He had thought that, even if he were to obtain first place, he would only return to the Inner Sect. He did not expect that he would have such an opportunity. It seemed there were still people that would treat him well in this world. He gently lowered his body, giving her the most sincere bow. “This disciple, greets master.”

Feng Yi nodded. Forming a hand seal one-handedly, a bright ray of light shot towards Xiao Yi's forehead, leaving a mythical bird-like marking.

He's actually a personal succeeding disciple! Waves of heavy breathing could once again be heard from the surroundings.

And regarding all these, Zhu Yao, who was currently being carried back home like a little puppy, was completely unaware.

The moment they reached the mountain peak, she immediately made an innocent-looking face, and looked at her own master pitifully. "Master... It really was unintentional. I didn't mean to intervene, I don't even know what happened to me earlier."

"Really, I swear!" Zhu Yao raised one of her hands. No matter how stupid she was, she knew that it was an one-on-one duel.

"It's definitely because of that huge spiritual sword."

"When I saw that spiritual sword, my entire body felt strange."

"You didn't do anything wrong!" Yu Yan finally replied.

"Yes, I didn't do anything wrong. Eh? Master, what did you say?"

Master glanced at her chillingly, his face was filled with

contempt. “What that person summoned was not a spiritual sword.”

“Ah?” If it’s not a spiritual sword, what else could it be? A katana? Master, don’t fool me.

“That’s Sword Intent.” Yu Yan said indifferently.

“Sword Intent!” Zhu Yao was shocked. “Isn’t Sword Intent something that can only be trained by sword practitioners who are at least at the Azoth-stage?”

“In theory, yes.” Yu Yan frowned. That Sword Intent was hidden extremely deeply, even a Demigod practitioner might not be able to see through it at first glance. “Since he was able to bring out his Sword Intent, he must definitely have an exotic treasure on him.”

It was a definite answer, and not a suspicion.

“It’s no wonder he was able to cultivate to an Essence Paragon in such a short amount of time, even after being crippled.”

“He was not merely at the Essence-stage!” Yu Yan once again gave her a stupid look. “That exotic treasure of his, not only is it able to conceal his Sword Intent, it’s able to hide his cultivation level as well. His current cultivation level should be around the intermediate stages of Foundation.”

Zhu Yao’s eyes widened. Foundation intermediate-stage! Oh my

god, this isn't as simple as a poor person making his counter-attack, the way this scenario is progressing, he's basically heading towards the summit in life.

A light bulb flashed in her mind. She finally understood why he looked a little strange to her. His experiences, were evidently the treatments male protagonists receive in novels!

“Master, do you know what exotic treasure he has?” A male protagonist who has been bullied since young, obtains a godly treasure by chance, and then, he raises his level as he fight monsters, as he walks down the path heading towards the peak in life. The longer Zhu Yao thought about it, the more she felt Xiao Yi was similar to male protagonists like that.

“Although I don't know what exotic treasure it is, it's definitely extremely beneficial to his Spirit Veins. Hence, he was able to raise his cultivation level this rapidly, and was even able to comprehend Sword Intent, which exceeded his current level of strength.” Yu Yan slightly frowned, and turned to look at his stupid disciple. “Sword Intent is incomparable to a spiritual sword, regular Mystic Arts are basically unable to resist against it. However, the Heavenly Lightning you guided down earlier, although it could not be compared to Disaster Lightning, it's still power of the purest form in the world, hence, it was able to disperse his Sword Intent.”

“Master, you're saying...” Zhu Yao stiffened.

“Without that ray of Heavenly Lightning, his opponent would have turned into a corpse.”

Zhu Yao's expression instantly paled, fear began to rise from the bottom of her heart, and terror instantly struck her entire body. The mistake that she made by coincidence, actually saved little wimp's life. Although she understood that a bunch of cannon fodders would lay behind every rising male protagonist, she had never thought that, one of her closest people would become one of those cannon fodders.

Seeing that his disciple had been silent for a while, Yu Yan raised his hand and stroked her head. "Do not worry, even though he possesses heavenly luck for obtaining this unusual treasure of his, your luck is not smaller than his." Her affinity to lightning spiritual energy was high to the point of defying the heavens, an exotic treasure might not even be able to compare to that.

Zhu Yao's thoughts were still deeply filled with little wimp's safety, as she nodded her head randomly. The more she thought about it, the more worried she was. It was just a simple competition, and a life was almost lost. Wouldn't the future be worse? "Master, about little wimp, I mean Wang Xuzhi, he should be fine, right?"

Yu Yan frowned deeply. Does she have to be this worried about the safety of an outsider?

Recalling the scene where his disciple and that kid was chatting happily earlier, how they looked rather intimate, and how she did not even bother looking at her master on the tall stage, he suddenly felt a little irritated, as though he had the feeling of a boar was suddenly eating the vegetables he had personally grown.

“He’s Zi Mo’s disciple, if something happens to him, he has his own master to worry for him.” He looked at coldly, his expression was telling her not to care about the kid.

Zhu Yao curled her lips. He’s not your child, so obviously, you wouldn’t be worried. It was just a competition, yet, his opponent actually dropped his killing move on him. Who would be sure that he would not create more trouble in the future? In any case, even if he did not dare to do some things in broad daylight, it did not mean he would not do them in the dark. She clearly remembered Xiao Yi’s warped three views, after all.

“Master, do you have any defensive mystical treasures that you can lend to me?”

The coldness of Yu Yan’s expression instantly fell to ice point. She wants to use his mystical treasures on that kid? He began to feel even more irritated.

“None!” Even if he did have some, he would not hand them over. He did not have any interest in bringing up a disciple who belonged to someone else, as it was already hard enough to bring up his own disciple.

“Eh? Master, didn’t you say that, the higher one’s cultivation level, the more mystical treasures one possesses?” Master, you’re trying to fool me, aren’t you.

“Those are foreign objects. One’s cultivation must depend on

oneself.”

“Master!”

“Have an early rest, in a few days, I will teach you another new Mystic Art.” After saying that, his figure flashed, and he could no longer be seen.

“Stingy! Petty! Compassionless!” Zhu Yao stood there and silently complained. He isn’t even willing to give me a hundred dolla-pui! He isn’t willing to give me a single mystical treasure. He’s so stingy.

Chapter 30: Men Should Be Strong And Muscular

Ever since then, Zhu Yao had pestered her master for three days, however, in the end, he still did not give in. And, she realized that, the more she praised Wang Xuzhi, the stronger was her master's refusal. Zhu Yao became a little suspicious, and wondered if her master had been bullied by a spoiled brat in the past as well.

However, his supervision over her cultivation had become more diligent, and she had basically stabilized herself in her current realm. Her master stated that she could tackle Azoth really soon. However, in the end, she never had the opportunity to form her Azoth Core.

In Ancient Hill Sect, before Essence-stage disciples could breakthrough into Foundation, they must first head down the mountains for field training, with a Foundation disciple taking the lead. Very evidently, Wang Xuzhi was in this batch was well. Practitioners heading out for field training was the best method to raise their mental states, and Zhu Yao, who built her Foundation in a single night, did not have this sort of opportunity. No matter what, she had to try it out as well. This time, her master did not actually stop her, and simply instructed her a few things that she needed to watch out for, before letting her down the mountain.

When she arrived at the meeting area, other than Wang Xuzhi, whose eyes momentarily sparkled, even the corner of Reverend Zi Mo's lips evidently twitched a little, however, he did not have any reason to refuse her participation. Hence, he had no choice but to swap out Yan Yuehong, who was initially supposed to lead the

party, and had her take over.

Under Yan Yuehong's resentful gaze, Zhu Yao walked over to her own party. Four Essence-stage disciples and one Foundation disciple were placed in every team, and Zi Mo was rather tactful, as he placed her in Wang Xuzhi's team.

Zhu Yao looked at her team, realizing Xiao Yi was in her team as well, she rubbed her forehead. This is really some god-tiered fate we have.

Sect Master waved his sleeves, and dozens of leaves flew out. Slowly, they enlarged themselves, appearing on the open space. These leaves were exactly the same as the leaf they sat on when they entered the sect. Back then, she even thought that it was a mystical treasure of some sort, but it turned out to be simply a common transportation tool used in the sect.

With Zi Mo's single command, all of the teams left.

As a team leader who was suddenly assigned to the team, Zhu Yao called her team members to board the leaf. Wang Xuzhi said his goodbyes to his master, had a short conversation with Yan Yuehong, and was the last person to board the leaf. Seeing that everyone was ready, she finally inserted her spiritual energy into the leaf, having it rise into the skies and catch up with the rest of the teams.

In just a short moment, they had already left the sect, and was flying over the huge sea. Zhu Yao turned to look at her own

teammates. Other than Wang Xuzhi and Xiao Yi, the other two were both girls, and they looked like they were in their teens as well. They were like blooming flowers, and when she compared herself to them, a feeling of resentment to her own age suddenly welled up inside her. It seemed like her master's decision to have her breakthrough into Azoth as soon as possible was a correct decision. Once one breaks through into Azoth, one will be a step closer to being a deity. One's lifespan will be increased to a thousand years, and age will no longer matter after then.

Zhu Yao was not familiar with the two girls, and could only chat with Wang Xuzhi, who was by her side, helping her support the flight. "Hey, little wimp, what did you say to Little Three earlier?"

Little Three? Wang Xuzhi was startled for a moment, and only after a short while did he finally realize she was talking about Yan Yuehong. Giving her a light smile, he took out a jade tablet from his clothes. "This is our field mission this time."

"Mission?" Zhu Yao was a little baffled. "Isn't this supposed to field training? Why is there a mission?"

"The mission is the details of our field training!" He gave her a 'this is common sense' expression. "Every team has their own respective mission to complete."

"Oh!" Isn't this a business trip then? Zhu Yao's enthusiasm instantly fell by a half.

"When we return, the sect will bestow corresponding rewards to

the teams that complete their missions.” Looking at her unenthusiastic expression, Wang Xuzhi asked curiously. “What did big sister Zhu Yao think it was?”

Zhu Yao’s face cramped, as she silently swallowed down her thoughts of touring the mountains and seas, eating delicacies, and her questions of where they were heading to play.

“Kuh, then, what’s our mission?” Zhu Yao hurriedly changed the topic.

Wang Xuzhi inserted spiritual energy into the jade tablet in his hand, checking its contents. After a while, he replied. “It’s in the southwest direction, a small town near Silent Melancholy City. It’s rumored that just recently, people had been disappearing. And, in a single month, the total number amounted close to fifty. Our mission is to head over to the town to investigate the cause.”

The name ‘Silent Melancholy City’ came from the nearby Silent Melancholy Forest. Because practitioners would frequently head over to the Silent Melancholy Forest to capture spiritual beats and gather spiritual herbs, Silent Melancholy City became the largest supply city for practitioners. And their target destination for this mission, was a small town just a few kilometers away from Silent Melancholy City.

The town was named Silent Town. Zhu Yao then asked casually, if there was another town named Melancholy Town. Wang Xuzhi actually nodded, and Melancholy Town was actually nearby, a place north from here. Zhu Yao silently retorted how the naming sense of this world was actually rather uniform.

The number of residents in Silent Town was not many, and the people passing by were mostly practitioners heading towards Silent Melancholy City, hence, the town was not really luxurious-looking. Zhu Yao's team rushed and arrived at the town before sunset. For convenience sake, Zhu Yao had her team change into regular clothes, and they found an inn to stay in.

Taking the opportunity to start up an idle chatter while sipping on his tea, Wang Xuzhi consciously began to inquire about the missing people in the town. Seeing that the few people in front of him were practitioners, the inn owner unhesitatingly told them everything he knew about the situation.

The situation seemed to have began a month ago, and people in the town disappeared one after another. These people comprised of townspeople and travellers who had stayed in for the day, however, all of them were men. And they were all strong and muscular men who were at the prime of their lives. No one knew how these men disappeared, and there were no abnormal disturbances. They simply disappeared from their rooms the next day, when others opened their doors and looked for them in their rooms.

"The people who disappeared were all men." One of the young girls who came with them, looked at Xiao Yi beside her with a worried expression. "Big brother Xiao Yi, then you're..."

Zhu Yao recalled that the name of this girl was Ling Long. She had met the girl five years ago, and the girl had always been by Xiao Yi's side. It seemed like she was his die-hard fan.

“Junior-martial sister Ling Long, don’t worry, senior-martial uncle Xiao Yi is so amazing, he will definitely be fine.” The other girl named Su Zi consoled her, and with sparkling eyes, she turned to look at Wang Xuzhi. “And, there’s my senior-martial brother Wang as well! Senior-martial brother Wang, you will definitely protect us, right?”

Zhu Yao looked at the girl’s eyes which were about to shine out stars, and then, she silently looked at little wimp next to her. Eh! There’s something interesting to watch! First love, or something like childhood friends? These little self-made fan clubs are just too dazzling! Ah, youth~

However, Wang Xuzhi’s expression did not change, rather, he looked towards Zhu Yao, and said with a respectful tone. “Grand-martial aunt, how do you think we should deal with this situation?”

Everyone seemed to have recalled that they actually had an “elder” among them, and they turned to look at her one after another.

“Don’t worry, didn’t the inn owner explain it earlier?” Zhu Yao waved her hands, and then, she strongly patted on Wang Xuzhi’s chest. Emphasizing on every single word, she said. “The people who disappeared were. Strong. And. Muscular. Men! You two do not fit the requirements.” They were not even fully grown yet, why were they so worried for?

Wang Xuzhi did not reply, and simply stared as she pulled her hand back, his ears were turning red at an abnormal speed. Su Zi at the side began to pout her lips, as she glared at Zhu Yao with an expression filled with resentment. Even Xiao Yi and Ling Long had weird expressions.

Uh... Had she done something that angered them?

“Kuh kuh, you people have an early rest today.” Ah, she did not care anymore, it was more important to complete the mission as early as possible. “Tomorrow, everyone shall split up and look for clues, we will then gather back here at this inn in the night.”

“Yes!” The four of them replied together, and then, they headed to their own rooms.

Chapter 31: The Common Nauseating Act

Zhu Yao's and Wang Xuzhi's rooms were on the third floor, while the rest were on the second floor. Only when the other three had left far enough, did she pull Little Wang over with a gossiping look.

While looking downstairs with an ambiguous expression, she said. "Hurry and spill it out. Does that Su Zi of yours have feelings for..."

"Big sister Zhu Yao, don't misunderstand. We're just brothers and sisters of the same sect." Wang Xuzhi hurriedly explained.

"Really?" Zhu Yao was a little suspicious. Then why are you being so agitated for?

"Really! It's my first time seeing her today!" Wang Xuzhi became even more anxious, and with a serious expression, he raised out his hand and swore. "I will definitely not like any other girls."

"Don't be so anxious." Zhu Yao pulled his hand down. As a parent, she was really open-minded. "I don't have any intention to stop you. If you like her, then go for it! Big sister will support you!"

"Grand. Martial. Aunt!" Wang Xuzhi pulled a long face, and he looked at her angrily. With his current expression, it was extremely similar to the expression he gave when he was young.

"Alright, alright. I will stop." He actually got angry so easily, he's

not fun at all. Zhu Yao hurriedly changed the topic. “Oh, right. Earlier, I heard Su Zi calling Xiao Yi senior-martial uncle. Did he build his Foundation?” Although Xiao Yi had the exotic treasure to hide his cultivation level, looking on the surface, he was still at Essence-stage.

Wang Xuzhi shook his head. “After the InterSect Tournament, Sovereign Feng Yi took him in as her personal succeeding disciple.”

In the cultivation world, strength reigned supreme. In the same sect, as long as they were practitioners of the same stage, they would address each other as brothers and sisters, and if one was a stage higher, his position would be one level higher as well. But, Demigod Sovereigns were exceptions. As to give Demigod Sovereigns the respect they deserved, as long as one was a personal succeeding disciple of a Demigod, his seniority would only be one position lower than his master. Hence, although Zhu Yao’s cultivation level was lower than the Sect Master and the various Mountain Lords, her seniority was higher than theirs. It was because she was Yu Yan’s personal succeeding disciple, and naturally, the same went for Xiao Yi.

Zhu Yao was a little stunned. He was actually taken in by a Demigod as her personal succeeding disciple so quickly, as expected of the protagonist’s treatment. Promotion. Rise in salary. Becoming a CEO. Marrying a rich and beautiful girl. He was basically heading straight towards the summit of life.

Wait a minute! Master had told her that, even a Demigod, if one did not look carefully, would not be able to find out the exotic

treasure Xiao Yi possessed. In other words, it's not entirely possible for him not to be found out. And back then, other than her master, there were three other Demigods!

Then, Feng Yi...

“What happened? Big sister Zhuo Yao, big sister Zhu Yao?” Wang Xuzhi nudged the person who suddenly went into a daze.

“Ah?” Zhu Yao's expression was dark, she had accidentally went into deep thoughts of the possible conspiracy theories occurring. “I'm fine. Oh right, Xuzhi. I'm sorry for interrupting your match during the InterSect Tournament.”

“Don't worry, I know big sister Zhu Yao did that because you were worried about me.” Wang Xuzhi replied without a mind. Suddenly, he seemed to have recalled something, and went silent for a moment. His pretty brows creased, and he was a little hesitant when he asked. “Big sister Zhu Yao, actually, on that day, I felt it was a little strange. The spiritual sword senior-martial uncle Xiao Yi summoned, I keep feeling that, there was something off about it...” A practitioner's sixth sense was very keen, and at that moment, he actually felt the aura of death approaching him. He really suspected, if Zhu Yao had not intervened, he might really be...

“Don't think about it too deeply!” Zhu Yao stroked his head. It was best if she did not tell him the truth. No matter was it luck or scheming ability, he was not Xiao Yi's match. And, whenever someone goes against the male protagonist, that person will never have a good ending. “If you do not like him, in the future, just stay

further away from him.”

Wang Xuzhi nodded his head obediently.

Zhu Yao then told him a few more things, before they finally separated and returned to their own rooms to rest.

On the early morning of the second day, the five of them split up and went around inquiring information. However, even after three days, all the clues they found were exactly the same as the one they heard from the inn owner, and they did not make a single progress at all. And, another person disappeared in the city once again.

Zhu Yao instructed them to not be anxious, and told them to take a good rest before investigating about it the next day. However, she never expected that, Wang Xuzhi who had evolved into a good boy, would actually assault her in the night!

When she saw a black figure sneakily entering her room, and even had the intention to crawl onto the bed, Zhu Yao, who had coincidentally woke up, almost sent a Heavenly Lightning down at him. With fast reflexes, he immediately held onto her hand, and spoke up with a suppressed voice. “Big sister Zhu Yao, it’s me.”

“Little wimp?” With her other hand, she sent a fist to his head. “What are you doing this late in the night? You got the wrong room, right?” The Su Zi girly is on the second floor, you know.

“Big sister Zhu Yao, I have something I need to discuss with you

about.” Wang Xuzhi took out a veil and a paper crane from the storage pouch next to him.

“What’s this?” Zhu Yao picked up the veil from his hand. It was a red-colored veil. It’s color was very common, and even the peony embroidered on it was rather common as well.

“I found it in the room of one of the missing men.” Wang Xuzhi explained with a stern expression. “Back then, I sensed a hint of the remains of demonic aura. So, I cast a tracking incantation on the aura. However, the paper crane did not return for an entire day and night. I thought it was just my imagination, but, just then, the paper crane returned. It must have found the owner of the veil.”

“So you’re saying, you have found the culprit who caused the disappearances?”

Wang Xuzhi shook his head hesitantly. “I’m still not entirely sure, but, by heading into the direction the paper crane guides for us, I believe we will definitely find some clues.”

“Good work!” Zhu Yao immediately leapt out of the bed, and casually wore over her clothes. She then signaled him to release the paper crane. “Let’s follow after it and take a look.”

“Wait a minute!” Wang Xuzhi took out another two paper talismans from his clothes. “These are Presence Hiding Talismans master gave me before we went down the mountain. As long as we place them on our bodies, we can hide our presence, and practitioners with strength lower than the Nascent Soul-stage will

not be able to sense us.”

It’s actually able to hide our presence? Zhu Yao curiously took it from him. Suddenly, she recalled her own master, and heaved a long sigh. Master, look what his master did for him!

A few thousand kilometers away, a certain master, who was currently meditating, sneezed. He looked around strangely for a moment, before he closed his eyes again.

Zhu Yao and Wang Xuzhi followed after the paper crane. After leaving the inn, they stopped at a small forest not far away. There were no traces of any humans in the surroundings, though, several cottages were scattered around the forest. Some of them were still lighted up, and most probably, they were simply ordinary folks.

“It seems like the owner of this veil, must have stopped here before.” Wang Xuzhi said as he pushed away the bush in front of him. “The owner must be finding the next target.”

Zhu Yao pointed to the scattered cottages in front of them. “The next target must be someone in one of the houses in front. Let’s find somewhere to hide for now, and wait for the fish to take the bait.”

Wang Xuzhi nodded. The only thing they could do now was wait. The Presence Hiding Talismans could only last a single night, they could not be wasted.

The two people found a good bush to hide in, and just when they were about to sit, a commotion was heard from within the forest.

“Little sister Zi, listen to me.”

“I’m not listening, I’m not listening, I’m not listening!”

Uh... What’s with this common and nauseating opening cutscene? Zhu Yao turned to look, and saw two figures, one in black, and the other in red, walking out of the forest. They were actually Su Zi and Xiao Yi. Why were they walking together? And they actually came to such a secluded place. And wasn’t Su Zi a fan of Wang Xuzhi? She changed her allegiance this quickly?

Chapter 32: Good Things Come In Pairs

“Little sister Su, let me explain.” Xiao Yi pulled the person in front of him. “I grew up with Ling Long. She’s my responsibility, I have to take care of her.”

“You’re lying! What childhood friends? Evidently, you’re in love with her.” Su Zi cried a fountain of tears.

Heh? It’s actually a love triangle. Zhu Yao immediately activated her drama-watching mode, she then turned to glance at Wang Xuzhi beside her, and silently patted on his shoulder. Don’t worry, you will have your own fans, and you will have your own girls as well.

“Tell me, do you want her, or do you want me?” Su Zi interrogated him.

“Little sister Su.” Xiao Yi did not answer her directly, rather, he pulled Su Zi by the hand, and pressed her against his chest. “Don’t you understand my heart at all? Ever since I first met you at the square that day, my heart had fallen for you, and it will never return to its former calm.”

“Big brother Xiao Yi...”

“Your every word, your every movement, and even your every smile, move my heart. I’ve almost forgotten, if there’s no you, how would my heart beat once more? I want to treat you well for my entire lifetime. Do you really not believe me?”

Yo, it's a pity that this Xiao Yi isn't acting in the dramas which old aunties watch. Zhu Yao silently took out two steamed buns, she handed one over to Wang Xuzhi beside her, while she nibbled on one herself.

As expected, the girly's fury extinguished in a second, and felt entirely moved. "Big brother Xiao Yi... I, I do. I do believe you. I'm just envious, envious that the person who was by your side for so many years was her, and not me. I'm the one who loves you the most."

"Little sister Su..."

"Big brother Xiao Yi..."

The two of them got closer to each other, finally, their bodies made contact, and then, they tumbled around.

The bun in Zhu Yao's hands instantly fell onto the ground. This... This development is a little too quick. Why did it suddenly jump from lovetalk mode to meal-eating mode? And the first dish that comes up is the main dish! You two are only in your early teens, and not adults yet, hey!

In front of her eyes, Xiao Yi had already begun to cleanly strip off every single one of the girly's clothes. His pair of big hands swam up and down her body, causing the girly to continuously moan seductively.

“Big brother Xiao Yi... Ah, I... I, Xiao... Big brother... Please, give it to me!”

Xiao Yi smiled sinisterly. While using his tongue to trace the girly's figure, he replied charmingly. “Little sister Su, don't be anxious. Big brother will give you the best.” And then, he slowly took off his own clothes.

When Zhu Yao was watching the situation intensively, her vision blackened, a hand had covered her eyes. The hell, what are you doing, little wimp? We're about to see the main event, and you actually turned my lights off.

Wang Xuzhi's voice was husky, having an indescribable awkwardness. “Grand-martial aunt, do not watch such indecent things!”

Do not watch, your sister! Zhu Yao's inner heart was roaring. This damn little wimp, only in times like this when he would never compromise, would he call her grand-martial aunt. In the modern era, she was considered to be someone who had went through all sorts of large scaled films, a rare opportunity to watch it live was right in front of her, and he actually prevented her from watching it.

However, although her eyes were blinded, she could clearly hear every single thing that was happening.

“Ah... Mn. Big brother Xiao Yi... it feels good, more...”

“Relax, my little cutie-pie, I will make you feel even better.” Uh... It seems like I can never see the phrase ‘little cutie-pie’ in the same light from now on.

“Big brother Xiao Yi... Please... Give it... Give it to me.”

“Dont’ be anxious, You. Little. Demoness. Of. The. Devil.”

“Big brother Xiao Yi...”

“Little sister Su...”

It was fiery hot on that side, while it was actually awkwardly dead silent on Zhu Yao’s side. The voice in Zhu Yao’s inner heart was roaring and requesting for the pictures. No matter how perfect the sound effects were, without the motion pictures, it would still be a lousy movie. I want to watch. I want to watch. I want to watch. I want to watch. Yet, Wang Xuzhi’s hand was covering her eyes ever so tightly.

“Little wimp, take your hands away!”

“Grand-martial aunt, it’s indecent, do not watch it!”

“My ass. Aren’t you watching it too?”

“I’m not. I turned my head away.”

“I don’t believe you. I will only believe you if you release your hands.”

“Big sister Zhu Yao, I won’t fall for that.”

“You single little bastard.”

“It went in!”

“What!?” Zhu Yao forcefully pulled down his hands. “How many inches was it? Was it huge!?”

Wang Xuzhi: “.....”

Zhu Yao: “.....”

The atmosphere around them was dead silent for a moment, and only an inharmoniously unlawful sound could be constantly heard from afar. Papapa...papapa...

Wang Xuzhi sighed deeply, as though he had given up, and pointed to the cottage furthest away from them. “Earlier, I saw a red figure entering that house. The figure was extremely quick.”

Only then did Zhu Yao recalled the business they were here for. “Let’s go and take a look.” The fish finally took the bait.

The cottage seemed to only have a single resident, as it only had a single room. Since there was still light inside the house, Zhu Yao and Wang Xuzhi carefully approached it, and listened in while holding their breaths. Because they were still not clear with the situation inside, Zhu Yao did not dare to release her divine sense to investigate.

“Little brother, why don’t this humble lady service you?” An extremely bewitching female voice could be heard from inside the house.

And then, it’s the sounds of clothes being stripped off.

What the hell, again!? What day is it today? Why did everyone suddenly feel like getting things moving? Could it be that having an affair was trending now? She recalled a certain saying in the show ‘World of Animals’, ‘Spring has come, it’s mating season again!’

But it’s currently the winter season, hey!

It seemed like they were not able to find anything today. Zhu Yao tugged onto Wang Xuzhi, and was planning to leave. However, Wang Xuzhi did not move, and even gestured her to keep quiet. Yo, this brat, he’s actually addicted to it. And earlier, he even denied that he was watching them!

Wang Xuzhi, who had realized that her thoughts had once again drifted somewhere else, pulled her hand over, and gently wrote

three words on her palm. “There’s demonic aura!”

Zhu Yao’s eyes widened, and calmly sensed her surroundings. As he had said, she caught an irregular aura, which carried a dark feeling. This is demonic aura?

The two of them carefully took a few steps forward, and appeared before the window. Then, they stretched their necks and looked inside the house.

In the house, there were a man and a woman. The man was lying on the bed, while the other extremely bewitching lady was currently sitting on the man, moving up and down. The two of them were completely *****. Before Zhu Yao could even gasp out of shock from their cowgirl position, layers of black miasma began to circle around the lady, and they fluctuated with her every movement.

A while later, a red light flashed in the lady’s eyes, and the surrounding miasma became thicker. As for the man below her, he was slimming down at a speed that could be seen with the naked eye. She was absorbing his essence. The lady emitted a long howl, and three long tails suddenly emerged behind her.

“A fox demon!” Zhu Yao could not help but utter out.

“Who is it?” The fox demon felt movements, and ruthlessly pushed out her palm. With a bang, the wall in front of them instantly collapsed. If not for their great speeds, they might have been trapped under the rubble. The female figure flashed, and had

already walked out of the house with her clothes over her. However, the clothes she was wearing, was just a piece of thin red chiffon, it basically had no concealing function, thus, her attractive body was clearly shown.

Zhu Yao and Wang Xuzhi did not move. They had the Presence Hiding Talismans on them. As long as they did not make any sound, people who were below the cultivation levels of the Azoth-stage, would basically not be able to find them. And this fox demon, if she was not wrong, should be a fifth-grade demonic beast, which was comparable to a practitioner at the elementary Azoth-stage.

As expected, after the fox demon looked around for a while, and did not see anyone suspicious, her expression suddenly turned cold, as she flew towards the small forest nearby.

Crap, I forgot about that pair of wild mandarin ducks!

Chapter 33: Talented Acting School

“Yo! And here I was wondering who it was? So it’s a pair of passionate little mandarin ducks!” The fox demon looked at the two people who were entangled with each other, the corner of her lips revealed a hint of an odd smile.

The two people on the ground woke up from their excitement, and hurriedly separated from each other. Su Zi shrieked, and began to find her clothes to cover herself in a fluster. While Xiao Yi was actually completely calm, as he summoned a flying sword with his hand, and pointed it at the red-clothed lady in the sky.

The fox demon, however, smiled even more arrogantly. With a wave of her hand, a light blade was immediately sent flying towards Xiao Yi. Xiao Yi completely did not have the strength to retaliate, and was forced back a couple of meters. The fox demon did not seem to have the intention to kill him, as she uttered a binding incantation, and restrained Xiao Yi.

Descending from the sky, her smile became even more enchanting as she walked towards him. Raising her hand, she cupped onto his jaw. “Little brother, is she not satisfying enough for you? Why don’t this big sister help you!” The fox demon’s eyes were beautiful as silk, the yang energy in practitioners were very beneficial to her, and she did not expect to have such good luck today.

“Let go of big brother Xiao Yi.” Su Zi summoned an ice blade, attacking her with it. The fox demon’s figure dodged, and the ice blade struck directly onto the tree behind her.

The fox demon snorted coldly. “You’re overestimating your abilities.” With a wave of her hand, Su Zi was blown away in an instant, fresh blood was spat from her mouth, and she fell onto the ground, with no longer any strength to retaliate.

“Little sister Su!” Xiao Yi struggled forcefully, yet, he was still unable to escape the bind. He could only stare ruthlessly at the fox demon in front of him. However, she looked as though she was not bothered in the slightest, which caused his imposing air to weaken quite a bit.

“Yo, little brother, don’t worry. I won’t kill you.” The fox demon smiled even more bewitchingly. A cultivation level at the elementary Azoth-stage had a definite suppressing ability towards them, and they basically could not retaliate at all. The fox demon once again walked closer, touching his ***** upper body. “Big sister will treat you very well.”

Just when the fox demon was about to leave with Xiao Yi, suddenly, a pressure of the catastrophic level suddenly descended upon her. The fox demon’s figure wobbled, and she then directly knelt onto the ground. Her inner heart was in a state of great bewilderment. It was a Nascent Soul-stage practitioner.

“A little female demon actually dares to be this impudent!” An ethereal voice sounded from the skies, and the fox demon saw a woman in white standing straight on her flying sword, her figure was fixed in the sky. Her eyes were like glaciers, as she looked at the fox demon below her.

The fox demon's heart instantly tightened. The white robe she was wearing was the signature of the Ancient Hill Sect, it was not possible for her to not recognize it. She was actually so unfortunate to encounter a Nascent Soul-stage practitioner from the Ancient Hill Sect. "This little demon was unaware that senior was here, and had unintentionally acted offensively, I hope that senior will forgive me."

The fox demon instantly kept her demonic bewitchment and arrogance, and respectfully bowed.

"You still dare to lie!" The woman's expression turned cold. With a wave of her hand, a ray of Heavenly Lightning was sent flying down, striking a place not far from the fox demon, leaving a huge crater. "You harmed a disciple of my Ancient Hill Sect, and you still dare to say it was unintentional?"

The fox demon was momentarily anxious, and her legs began to slightly wobble uncontrollably. A demon practitioner was naturally stronger than a human practitioner of the same rank, but, it was very hard for them to increase their rank, so, of course, she would naturally fear the Heavenly Lightnings. And when the fox demon saw that she was capable of summoning a Heavenly Lightning with just a simple wave of her hand, her face instantly turned pale.

"Senior, you have misunderstood. This little demon was just playing a joke on them." The fox demon carefully replied, and felt she was fortunate to not have harmed that girly too heavily earlier. Also, she silently wished that this Nascent Soul-stage practitioner was just passing through by sheer coincidence, and hoped that she

did not know of her actions in the town.

“A joke?” The white-clothed woman was startled, as though she was really considering her words.

The fox demon realized this was her chance. “If senior do not have anything else for me, this little demon shall first take her leave.” The moment those words fell, the demon had already used her fastest Mystic Art, and speedily fled the scene.

The white-clothed woman stood in the air, yet, she completely did not have the intention to chase after her. A while later, her flying sword gently descended onto the ground. She heaved a long sigh, that imposing air of an extreme expert she once had instantly disappeared without a trace, and she fell flat on her butt without any considerations to her image. That terrifying pressure of an Nascent Soul-stage practitioner instantly disappeared completely as well, as though it had never appeared.

“What the hell, that scared the hell out of me!” The white-clothed woman heaved a long sigh, and this person was exactly Zhu Yao.

“Big sister Zhu Yao!” Wang Xuzhi walked out of the bushes at the side as well, and supported the person on the ground. “Are you alright?”

“What do you think?” Zhu Yao rolled her eyes at him. The entire situation earlier was just a ploy set up by her and Wang Xuzhi, and its purpose was to frighten the fox demon away. A demon at the

Azoth-stage was not something they could go up against even if all of them were to gang up on her. But, with an Nascent Soul-stage practitioner, it would be completely different. Hence, she had Wang Xuzhi cast an illusion art from the shadows to simulate the pressure of an Nascent Soul-stage practitioner, while she herself would stand on the flying sword and use a Heavenly Lightning to scare the fox demon off. However, with her cultivation level, just that single ray of Heavenly Lightning earlier had used up all of her spiritual energy. If she had not desperately persevered, she would have either fell off due to her fear of heights, or fell off due to the depletion of her spiritual energy. Currently, she no longer had the energy to even stand.

“Thank you grand-martial aunt for saving my life.” Xiao Yi finally reacted as well. She was the one who saved him, although he was not contented about it, he gritted his teeth and still gave his thanks.

Zhu Yao turned and swept him a glance. “Can you say that after wearing your clothes?”

Conversing with a naked man, her pressure was huge, you know?

“.....”

“Big brother Xiao Yi?” And it just happened to be at this sort of time, Ling Long felt the disturbance, and ran over from the inn. Seeing Xiao Yi who was stark naked, she let out a scream. “Big brother Xiao Yi, you...” She turned her head away, however, she actually saw the messily dressed Su Zi who had fainted at the side, and suddenly understood something, as her small face instantly

turned snow-white.

Unfortunately, Zhu Yao no longer had the strength to witness the big break-up that would happen next. She had initially wanted to watch a live love action movie for free, but, in the end, the one who was dog-tired was actually her, and she was groggy as well.

She had Wang Xuzhi send her back. She had to rest and recover her spiritual energy.

Hence, on the scene, the people who were left were, the stark naked Xiao Yi, the messily dressed Su Zi, and Ling Long, whose tears were flowing out like an unstoppable flooding Yellow River.

In the early morning of the second day, Zhu Yao decided to return immediately to the sect, because she suddenly recalled something. Although the plan yesterday worked out with a hitch, successfully scaring away the fox demon, it did not guarantee that the fox demon would not realize anything suspicious after thinking carefully about it.

Only when she returned to the sect immediately without looking back, then everything would really be settled. The main point was, what she used yesterday to scare off the fox demon, was “Heavenfall”. This Mystic Art, a lightning-type Mystic Art with such speed, other than using a Lightning Guiding Talisman, only Lightning Spirit Vein holders could do it. And in Ancient Hill Sect, the only person who had high cultivation level, and possessed the Lightning Spirit Vein, was only her Demigod master. As long as the fox demon could think of this point, she would realize that, they had disguised her cultivation level to fool her.

Fox demons were very unique demonic beasts. They specialize in Bewitchment Arts, and by nature, they did not like to fight and cultivate. Most of them were third-stage demonic beasts, and they could shapeshift the moment they were born, yet, they had always lived deep in the forests, and they would never reveal themselves easily.

However, evidently, the one they encountered was different. Not only had she raised her level to a fifth-ranked demonic beast, she even treat a man's essence as her favourite food. Regarding the incidents about the disappearance of men in the town, they were definitely her doing. Those people did not disappear, rather, they died due to their essences being sucked dry, causing them to disintegrate into dust.

With the strength of the five of them, they were basically unable to deal with her. They had to leave as fast as possible, return to the sect, and report to the Sect Master about the news of the existence of the fifth-ranked fox demon in the town.

Chapter 34: A Pig-Like Party Member

When the five people gathered, while Zhu Yao explained, she urged everyone to return to the sect immediately. Of course, Wang Xuzhi did not have any objections. He pulled out the sect's common spiritual tool, and requested to fly the tool. Although the other three had doubts, they still went along with the Zhu Yao and boarded the leaf.

The strange thing was, Ling Long and Su Zi were holding hands as they climbed up the leaf while following behind Xiao Yi. That deep sisterhood image almost stabbed her eyes blind. What happened? They made up so quickly? What happened to the promised big break-up scene?

The way things are progressing, Xiao Yi is basically creating a harem! As expected, she did not understand Xianxia worlds.

Zhu Yao worriedly raised her head to look at Wang Xuzhi, who was concentrating on flying the tool in front of them. She expressed deep concern for him.

“Big sister Zhu Yao, you don't have to worry. Flying this tool does not use up that much spiritual energy.” Wang Xuzhi thought that she was worried he was working too hard, and explained. “Your spiritual energy has yet to recover. You should rest up more.”

Who's worried about that? I'm worried that you might do stupid things. Zhu Yao kept her gaze and closed her eyes, as she began to

meditate and recover her spiritual energy.

Not long after the start of their flight, the sky slowly brightened up, as the sun gently rose. Only the did Zhu Yao feel a little at ease, they should be able to rush back in time now.

“Yo? What’s the rush? Where are you guys planning to go?” A voice which carried a certain degree of ridicule suddenly sounded. The hearts which they had just managed to put at ease, tightened up once again in an instant.

Fox demon!

That familiar red figure blocked the path in front of them. She was still wearing that red chiffon, which could be considered to be negligible, and behind her, her three fox tails were currently swaying leisurely. She turned to look at Zhu Yao who was in the middle, and her voice turned cold in an instant. “So senior was here as well. Your complexion looks terrible, this little demon wonders if there’s anything she could do to help.”

Zhu Yao tightened the grip in her hands beside her, and replied with a smile. “I really wish that you could help me too, but unfortunately, you’re not a male fox!”

Realizing that Zhu Yao was implying about her sexual acts, the fox demon’s expression instantly changed. “Hmph! Stinky brat! You actually dared to fool me!”

With a wave of her hand, she took out a white chain, and it attacked towards Zhu Yao.

“Spread!” Zhu Yao shouted loudly, leapt out, and flew towards a certain direction. The other four people found their own directions as well, as they flew and left the large piece of leaf.

And under the fox demon’s attack, the leaf-shaped flying mystical tool had shattered into pieces.

The five of them landed on the ground, and summoned their own weapons to fight her. Currently, there was no longer time to flee, and they had no choice but to confront her. But, with three at the Essence-stage, one at the Foundation-stage, and one hiding his Foundation cultivation level, how could they possibly go up against an Azoth-ranked demon?

When the fox demon realized her attack missed, she was not anxious, as she leisurely descended from the skies. Looking at the five juniors in front of her, she smiled sarcastically. They sure are underestimating me. With a wave of her hand, several wind blades, which carried a black demonic aura, were thrown out, and they flew towards the five people.

“Locate the gaps, dodge!” Zhu Yao shouted loudly, and everyone instantly understood. They looked for the gaps between the wind blades, the wind blades barely grazed past them, and none of them was actually hurt.

The fox demon was a little startled. In usual situations, the first

reaction one always had after seeing an attack, was either retreating to the back, or dodging to the side. And her wind blades were extremely quick, with their cultivation levels, they definitely could not have been able to dodge all of them, so, they were sure to suffer injuries.

But they actually dodged by locating the gaps between the wind blades. For now, let's put aside the fact that the wind blades were released continuously, and they were in sequence. Wind blades were basically arc-shaped in the first place, and between blades, there were definitely large gaps. They did not have to retreat, nor did they have to dodge to the side, they simply had to slowly move between the blades with small steps, and naturally, it would be impossible for them to get hurt.

After the attack, everyone was a little delighted, and Wang Xuzhi was even looking at Zhu Yao with sparkling eyes. Even Zhu Yao felt it was a little weird, earlier, she simply reacted instinctively. Before she crossed into this world, she had developed net-games for many years, to the usage of skills, and their movement patterns, she was extremely familiar with them. Earlier, she simply recalled one of the patterns in net-games, and blurted it out. She did not think it would actually work.

In that case, the rest of the patterns should be linked as well. At most, she could treat this fox demon as a Boss, and defeat her with that in mind.

“Hmph, you're a little smart! But that's not enough!” The fox demon coldly snorted. This time, her hands turned into claws, and slammed them on the ground. With her position as the center,

huge flames began to willfully spread. The huge flames raged, and wherever they went, the grassland would turn into ash.

“Fly up.” Zhu Yao commanded everyone to fly with their tools, and she calmed herself as much as possible as she assessed the current battle situation. They had five people in their team, but other than Zhu Yao, Wang Xuzhi and Xiao Yi, the other two girls could be completely ignored, as one of them was at the eighth level of the Essence-stage, while the other was at the seventh level of the Essence-stage. To actually fly up with their swords under the pressure emitted by an Azoth-ranked demon practitioner was already impressive enough, they could not be counted as battle power at all.

Three versus one. Although it looked as though they had the advantage, their strength was being suppressed one-sidedly. Zhu Yao became a little anxious. No, this can't do. Calm down. There's definitely a way.

She was only a Boss, after all. Although Zhu Yao's level was not as high as hers, but in net-games, which Boss would not be of a higher level than the players? Hence, what's important was their coordination and their attacking methods, and also sharp decision-making skills. Even if their team did not have a healer, at the very least, they had three pretty good DPSes.

The experiences in net-games had told her that, in a situation with no tanks or healers, the only way to fight a Boss, was to kite!

“Fly away from this flaming circle!” Zhu Yao commanded, and bringing along the four others, they quickly moved out of the

flaming circle.

“Trying to run? It’s not that easy.” The fox demon flew to the skies, and chased after them.

Zhu Yao summoned a ray of lightning, and threw it towards behind them, blocking the fox demon momentarily. “Xiao Yi, use an Earth-type Mystic Art below us! The bigger the range, the better.”

When Xiao Yi heard this, he reacted instantly, an Earthsand Art was sent directly downwards. In an instant, mud and sand flew about, and the flames which were still spreading earlier were instantly extinguished. When they landed on the ground, their vicinity was only left with small and tiny flames.

The fox demon dodged the ray of lightning, and became even more infuriated, summoning countless icicles and shot them towards the five people.

“Spread, the further, the better! Then, find the opportunity to act!” Zhu Yao once again summoned a ray of lightning, signaled to the other four to dodge in different directions. Then, they would occasionally pop out and attack the fox demon.

The fox demon lost a concentrated target, and was instantly furious, attacking wildly in all four directions. The surrounding people just had to occasionally pop out and attack her, with a fireball from the left, a wind blade from the right, a ray of lightning from the front, and another icicle from the back, making

it hard for her to defend.

Out of a few, one or two attacks would always make contact, and a fireball had just heavily struck on her right hand. Not only did it burned half of her sleeves, it even burned her arm. The fox demon's eyes turned bloodshot from fury. She no longer bothered looking from left to right, and no longer bothered about the attacks coming from the rest of the directions, rather, she directly pounced towards the source of the fireball.

“You ants!”

And in the direction she was heading, was exactly where Xiao Yi was. Xiao Yi seemed to have not expected that she would pounce towards him without caring about anything else either. For a moment, he was a little stunned, and when he had finally thought of using his sword to block, it was already too late, as the fox demon's palm had heavily struck onto his body. Xiao Yi was instantly sent flying, and he spat out a mouthful of blood.

“Big brother Xiao Yi!” Seeing Xiao Yi was injured, Su Zi and Ling Long ran towards his direction.

“Don't go!” Zhu Yao basically could not stop them in time, and the fox demon's targets which had spread apart, finally gathered together again.

Zhu Yao thought of what she could do to pull the fox demon's hate back to her, and hence, she blurted out. “Hey, granddaughter!”

The fox demon, who was about to deal the killing blow, suddenly turned, and stared ruthlessly at her. “What did you say!?”

“.....” Net-games did not fail her, as this sentence completely pulled the fox demon’s hate towards her.

Seeing the fox demon, who had thrown aside Xiao Yi and the two other fledglings, flying towards her, Zhu Yao turned tail and ran. The hell, it’s easy to increase hate, but it’s difficult to decrease it!

“Big sister Zhu Yao!” Wang Xuzhi showed an anxious expression, as he threw dozens of high-grade talismans at the fox demon. As they were all blocked by the fox demon, he had no choice but to use his strongest technique, the “Countless Sword Formation”. Gathering all of the spiritual energy in his body, he summoned hundreds and thousands of spiritual swords.

But, spiritual swords such as these, in an Azoth-ranked demon’s eyes, were basically nothing. Although the spiritual swords could block the fox demon’s attacks for a moment, the large expenditure of spiritual energy was something Wang Xuzhi could not hold out long for, unless they could kill the fox demon with a single decisive blow.

A Mystic Art that could kill an Azoth-ranked demon with a single blow, unless...

Zhu Yao suddenly thought of an idea. “Xuzhi, use a sword formation to restrain her!”

It might... really work. We have no other options anyway, so we might as well take this gamble!

When Wang Xuzhi heard this, he immediately moved the sword formation, forming a wall of swords to restrain her. The fox demon used the white chain in her hand to attack the surrounding spiritual swords. But, the moment she destroyed a set, a new set of spiritual swords would take their place, preventing her from breaking through. Zhu Yao took the opportunity to get to the closest spot to the sword formation, circulated her lightning spiritual energy, enchanting Wang Xuzhi's spiritual swords with lightning.

As expected, spiritual swords which were enchanted with lightning were hundred times stronger and firmer than regular spiritual swords, and lightning was demons' natural enemy.

The fox demon cried out from the constant attacks. "Curses, you bunch of ants, dare to harm me..."

The ferociousness of the fox demon was revealed, and black demonic scars began to surface on her face and body. She looked absolutely terrifying. Her small cherry-like lips earlier tore open from two sides, revealing a mouthful of ferociously sharp teeth. For a moment, her demonic aura rushed towards the sky, and the black demonic aura heavily expanded, causing the formation to soon break.

Wang Xuzhi spat out a mouthful of fresh blood, the sword

formation showed signs of collapsing.

“Little wimp!” Zhu Yao was anxious. If the fox demon were to escape from the formation, they would definitely die! Screw this! She rapidly circulated all of the spiritual energy in her body. Even though her spiritual energy was not fully recovered, she had no choice but to risk using another “Heavenfall”.

Zhu Yao raised her hands up high. The clouds began to surge, white flashes of lightning could be faintly seen, and it looked as though the Heavenly Lightning was about to come striking down. However, just a single Heavenly Lightning, was incapable of killing the fox demon.

Zhu Yao had no choice but to turn her head, and shout towards the person at the back. “Xiao Yi, release your Sword Intent!” After saying that, she stretched her hands towards the sky, and a ray of Heavenly Lightning descended from the skies.

Xiao Yi was stunned. Looking at her with a face of disbelief, he stood there dumbfoundedly.

“What the hell are you looking at, hurry and release it, I... Puah!” Before she could finish what she wanted to say, she felt a chill at her chest. The fox demon which had been struck by a Heavenly Lightning earlier broke through the formation, and pierced through Zhu Yao with her claw. Only then did Xiao Yi’s sword intent with carried absolute sharpness descend from the skies.

The hell you hesitated for!?

What a [pig-like party member](#). This was the only thought Zhu Yao had before she died.

Zhu Yao collapsed! Series end!

My ass!!

(͡° ͜ʖ ͡°) ͡⌋

– Arc 1 End –

‘Pig-like Party Member’ or ‘Pig Member’ is a common term used in Chinese MMOs, referring to party members who do not know what to do in dungeons, or are basically burdensome.

Arc 02

Chapter 35: Human Trafficker

Zhu Yao died. She never had a moment where she was clearly aware of the truth that she had died.

Because...

The hell!? Why were there the four words “Dead to the Extreme” on her corpse!? Why was the fatal injury on her chest covered in mosaic!? Was this a prank made by the Creator? Show yourself, I guarantee I won’t beat you to death!

And what was up with the chat window that suddenly popped out in front of her? It really looked exactly like the chat window on a computer. Such a thing suddenly appeared before her eyes, and on it, it clearly stated. “You’re already dead to the extreme, do you wish to return to the resurrection point?” And below it, were two buttons. ‘Yes’ and ‘Yes’.

This sort of net-game visual sense, what happened to it being a Xianxia? And the hell was it playing at with the two ‘Yes’ options? Was there really a point in having these options?

Zhu Yao, who was in the soul state, roared.

But the rest who were present, did not seem to be able to see her current situation, nor were they able to see the words on her corpse. The fox demon was already dead, while Wang Xuzhi was currently hugging her body, rapidly inserting his spiritual energy into her wound, as though he was trying to heal her injuries.

Unfortunately, she was already dead, so what use was there in healing her? The spiritual energy that he inserted, was basically unable to stay in her wound, and instantly dispersed into the air.

“It can’t be. Big sister Zhu Yao, nothing can happen to you.” Wang Xuzhi robotically repeated his actions, as he murmured to himself, he completely did not have the intention to stop at all. It was as though as, other than doing that, he could not think of any other options. However, the body in his hands, became colder by the second.

Only when he could no longer release any spiritual energy, did his mind finally begin to collapse. “Big sister Zhu Yao, you promised that you would protect me forever. You promised me! How could you...”

This was the first time Zhu Yao saw Wang Xuzhi cry. No matter was it the cheeky and mischievous spoiled brat in the past, or the current shy and firm young man now, he had never shed a single tear in front of her. And now, he was crying like a little child.

Zhu Yao walked closer, and thought of stroking his head, however, the chat window which had been ignored by her began to tremble violently. As though the system had entered an endless loop, more and more of the same chat window constantly popped out.

Not even a moment later, her entire vicinity was completely filled with layers and layers of chat windows. Hey, even if you’re trying to exert your presence, you can’t do it this way. What’s with this broken system!?

Zhu Yao reflexively waved her hands about, trying to push away the chat windows in front of her, however, she heard a “Ting” sound next to her ear. One of the “Yes” button on a chat window was pressed down. Zhu Yao simply felt her a tremble in her heart. No, wait. I didn’t choose anything, it’s an operational error. Is there still time to withdraw my selection?

Evidently, it was too late, because, in an instant, everything in front of her was cleared off. Not only the chat windows, even Wang Xuzhi and the rest had disappeared. Her surroundings were completely dark. Only a single thing was left. Below her vision, was a faintly running...

The hell!? Why is there a loading bar!?

Zhu Yao felt that, ever since she had crossed over into this world, the possibility of the limits which she had to constantly break through, might be endless. Her heart was tired!

The loading bar progressed very quickly, and not even a moment later, she simply felt a white light flashing past. A white wall suddenly appeared in front of her, and above the wall, was a face that took up half the sky. The face was currently looking at her very kindly. She curiously reached out her hand, wanting to touch that face. However, her hand actually made contact with the wall, and then, her hand sank into it, her mouth was suddenly poured with large amount of liquid.

She choked for a moment, and wanted to ask what was going on.

However, what she let out was the weak sniffing cry of a little child.

.....

“Alright, alright, don’t cry. You little child, there’s no one here that will snatch it away from you, why the rush?” The woman gently wiped her lips, and softly coaxed her.

Only then did Zhu Yao finally realize her current situation. She actually turned into an infant! The meat wall she touched earlier, was actually the woman’s breasts, and the thing that was contained in her mouth was... Zhu Yao reflexively spit it out, and momentarily felt like she had molested a good and honest woman.

What happened to the resurrection point she was promised with? Shouldn’t her resurrection point be that little village? Currently, she was evidently given a new life. From crossing into another world with her body, to crossing with her soul, was it really alright to change her setting like this?

“Eh? Why aren’t you drinking anymore?” The woman saw her dodging away, and persistently tried to stuff her “breast weapon” into Zhu Yao’s mouth. Why would Zhu Yao be willing? Hence, she constantly dodged. When the woman saw Zhu Yao like this, she thought that Zhu Yao was full, then, she began to wear her clothes properly.

After helping to arrange Zhu Yao’s clothes properly, she then placed her into the cradle at the side.

Zhu Yao curiously inspected her surroundings, and realized she was still in ancient times. The room had an ancient color and smell, but it was more superior than the one she had in the little village back then. Because, just by this cradle of hers, it looked extremely exquisite.

“Attendants!” The woman, who seemed to have the role of her mother, shouted to the door, and four to five people who looked like maids walked in and greeted the woman.

It seemed like her household was very rich.

“Take the little miss for a walk around the courtyard, I will come over in a moment.” The woman instructed, and then, she brought one of the maids as she walked into one of the rooms. It seemed like she went to change her clothes.

Zhu Yao had always been someone with great adaptability. To her current situation, as an infant, she had no ability to resist, hence, she calmly decided to adapt.

Although she would still occasionally think of her master and Wang Xuzhi, perhaps, they were no longer in the same world. Her current life was rather good as well, as she was a daughter of a rich family. Her parents treated her like she was a treasure, and they would not even leave jobs like feeding her milk to others.

She imagined that, when she grows up, she could completely walk with her head held high. Back then, the Xianxia world was filled

with killing motives everywhere, and she could be killed by demons, monsters or whatever if she was not careful. When she thought of this point, she momentarily felt extremely at ease.

She comfortably rolled around on the patch of grass. She was about to live a new life. For a moment, she felt as though the flowers had begun to smell great, the grass had become greener, the clouds had become whiter, and the person flying in the sky was...

The hell!? Why the hell was there someone flying in the sky!? What happened to leaving the Xianxia world she was promised with!?

Wait a minute, that figure, seemed to be charging towards her!

Not a moment later, standing five steps away from her, was someone in a familiar white robe. Although he was world-breakingly handsome, he always had that icy expression on his face, and had never revealed a single emotion.

Master... (For a moment, she had a lot of things to retort about, but she did not know where to begin.)

Yu Yan looked directly at her in the eyes.

She looked directly at her master in the eyes as well.

The two of them looked at each other.

None of them spoke up.

Zhu Yao suddenly felt that there was completely no point in looking at each other like this. Although she did not know why her master would suddenly appear her, looking at his expression, he had yet to recognize her. She was currently an infant who was not even a year old, so, she was basically unable to speak, let alone explaining her situation.

“Were you abandoned?” Yu Yan finally spoke up.

Zhu Yao was startled. Eh? What do you mean?

“Are you an orphan?” Yu Yan continued to ask.

“.....” Zhu Yao’s expression completely darkened. Have you ever seen an orphan in her own house’s courtyard?

“Don’t worry, I will be your family.”

What? Her mother was currently sitting not far away, you know.

“I shall take you as my disciple.” Yu Yan completely did not have the intention to wait for her answer, and walked over to her.

Zhu Yao finally understood what he was trying to do, as she began to pedal her small legs, planning to crawl away. Mama,

there's a strange uncle here, trying to abduct your daughter.

But, how could the small arms and legs of an infant crawl faster than a practitioner who had cultivated for ten thousands of years? In the next moment, she was already carried up, and the certain master announced with a stern expression.

“From today onwards, I'm your master.”

Hey, don't decide for someone else. At least, ask for my mother's opinion first.

“Mn. Since you have agreed as well, then follow me back to the Jade Forest Mountain.”

What? Who the hell agreed!? Haa~

Master, is it really alright for you to abduct an immature infant during broad daylight?

Unfortunately, Yu Yan could not hear the roar in her inner heart. Summoning his flying sword, his figure flashed, bringing along Zhu Yao who was in an infant state, they instantly disappeared into the skies.

Zhu Yao, who completely did not have the strength to resist, simply could not hold it in any longer. Raising her small leg, she stepped on her master's icy face which remained unchanged for ten thousand years.

I don't want to cultivate into a deity at all, hey!

Chapter 36: A Baby Treats Food As Heaven

Zhu Yao once again returned to Jade Forest Mountain. The same place. The same room. The same master. Zhu Yao felt like crying. Recalling the scene earlier, she could not help but step on his face again.

“Mischievous!” Yu Yan calmly pulled down her small leg, placing the small little person who could not even stand steadily, on the bed. He watched as she restlessly crawled about, and when she was about to crawl down the bed, he had no choice but to pick her up and put her back onto the bed. Hence, the process of picking her up repeated for many times.

Yu Yan looked at this mischievous little dumpling, and for a moment, he did not know what to do. He had never taken care of little kids before, let alone this one who did not even know how to talk.

His only experience of taking care of someone, was that stupid disciple who had already passed away. Recalling this, Yu Yan was a little saddened. After waiting for ten thousand years, he was finally able to take in a disciple, whom he had carefully taught, and painstakingly cared for. However, his disciple was killed by a fox demon when she went out for the first time for outfield experience.

The moment his disciple was injured, he had already known about it, and he rushed over with his fastest speed. Although, with his cultivation level, as long as her soul had not left the vicinity and reincarnated, he would have the ability to save her. However,

what's strange was, no matter how he cast his Arts, his disciple did not have any signs of waking up. And the divine imprint of a personal succeeding disciple he had left on his disciple's forehead, actually did not disappear. This was something that was extremely irrational. A person's death was like an extinguished candle, other than using Mystic Arts like Soul-Calling, there were no other Mystic Arts that could be effective on a dead person, unless she had yet to die.

Today, he had simply incidentally past by the mortal realm, and, he suddenly felt that divine imprint of his. Rushing over, he saw this female infant, who was wrapped like a white dumpling, and was even crawling about while being chased after by a bunch of maids.

For soul reincarnations, usually, at the very least, it would take a few thousand years, while at the most, it would take more than ten thousand years. Hence, the first thought that came to his mind was a soul takeover, however, taking over one's soul was something that could only be accomplished by someone whose cultivation was at least the Nascent Soul stage. No matter how heaven-bending his stupid disciple was, it was impossible for her to break through into Nascent Soul in just a few days. And, with her pure and simple personality, even if she were to die, she would not lay her hands on an infant.

He hid his figure, and cast an Art to have the mortals automatically ignore the existences of him and the infant. He then carefully inspected her soul sea, the soul and body were linked very closely, and did not look like she had been taken over. Hence, the talk of him taking her as his disciple, was blurted out just like that, and he even brought her back on impulse.

However... What now?

Looking at the little dumpling who had already begun to crawl up his body, and even pulled his hand and stuffed it into her mouth, he momentarily understood something.

“Hungry?”

Zhu Yao raised her head and glared at him in the eyes. She simply wanted to bite him out of anger, but she had forgotten, she did not have any teeth. And her master’s hand was hard, her gum began to hurt.

“Sit here obediently, I will get you some food.” After saying that, he walked out. Not even a while later, he brought in big and small plates of rice and vegetables.

“...” Zhu Yao looked at him with a poker face. Was it really logical for an infant to eat rice? Momentarily, she felt her gum hurting even more.

“You don’t like it?” Seeing that she was turning a blind eye to the rice and vegetables, a certain master was a little troubled. This disciple seemed to be even harder to bring up than his previous one.

Zhu Yao had already speechlessly begun to crawl down the bed, and was once again heartlessly picked up by a certain master. Yu

Yan raised her round figure, glanced to the left, and looked to the right, as though he was thinking of what to feed her with. In the end, he let out a long sigh. Hugging her tightly, he used his flying sword and flew to the Main Mountain. It was still best to ask someone who had rich experience in raising disciples.

Hence, Reverend Zi Mo who had rich experience in raising disciples, was once again shocked by the ancestral-martial uncle who suddenly appeared in his own room.

“Ancestral-martial uncle, you have returned?” Ever since his little martial aunt had fallen, ancestral-martial uncle had changed his behaviour of being a ten thousand year hikikomori, and had frequently ventured outside. Why did he suddenly return again now? And the thing he was carrying... “Eh, ancestral-martial uncle, this infant is?” Could it be... A huge drama suddenly appeared in Zi Mo’s mind.

“Disciple!” Yu Yan calmly spoke up, shattering Zi Mo’s imagination.

Zi Mo was even more shocked. “Ancestral-martial uncle, you took in another disciple?” After thinking deeply for a moment, it was understandable, there was a need for another person to succeed the Jade Forest Mountain. However, he never thought that, he actually found another disciple who possessed the Lightning Spirit Vein so quickly.

Eh, wait a minute. The child did not even look like a year old, logically, it should not be possible to test for her Spirit Veins yet.

Yu Yan completely did not have any intention to explain, and simply stuffed Zhu Yao into Zi Mo's arms. "She's hungry."

Ah? Zi Mo was startled, his feet rooted to the ground. Why did you find me when she's hungry? It's not like I'm able to feed the child milk.

"Ancestral-martial uncle, I..."

Zi Mo was about to explain, however, Yu Yan cast a cold glance at him. Evidently, this was written in his eyes: 'If you don't settle her, I will settle you.' Reverend Zi Mo trembled, silently swallowing down the latter half of what he wanted to say.

He carefully inspected the infant in his hands. She was round, white and tender, her facial features were extremely delicate, and she was particularly obedient. She did not cry nor make a fuss, and was simply looking at him with her round, glistening eyes. Zi Mo was instantly moe-fied. So... So cute, she's completely different from ancestral-martial uncle, I really want to steal her over.

"Kuh kuh... Ancestral-martial uncle, this baby is still young, and should still need to be fed with milk. However, you can feed her food like porridge." Although he had the thought of taking her away, due to his identity as his ancestral-martial uncle, he silently held back. Holding onto the child tightly with a single arm, he took two sacks from the storage pouch by his side. "This disciple has two sacks of spiritual rice, it's softer than regular rice, so it's exactly..."

Yu Yan nodded, and bluntly, he waved his hand and stored the two sacks of spiritual rice into his own storage ring.

Alright, something like forcefully taking things or whatever, he was already used to it.

Just when he was pondering how he could earn them back, a red-clothed woman suddenly walked in from the entrance. “Senior-martial brother, back then, the bunch you speak of...” The person who came was exactly the Mountain Lord of Medicine Mountain, Hong Chou. Seeing Yu Yan in the room, she startled for a moment, and then, she hurriedly bowed. “This disciple greets ancestral-martial uncle.”

Yu Yan nodded, he did not have the intention to ignore her.

Hong Chou then saw the infant in Zi Mo’s arms, and her eyes momentarily sparkled. “Which household is this baby from? She’s so cute.”

Probably it was natural for women to love children, before Zi Mo could even react, Hong Chou had already carried Zhu Yao away from his arms. Pinching her small arms and legs, Hong Chou gave an incredibly lovable expression.

Even Zhu Yao was a little startled. In her previous life, this woman either hated her or hated her to death, and this time, she actually revealed such an expression. The contrast was too big, she was completely unable to react to it. An older sister character

turning into a loli or whatever, it was too unprincipled.

“Senior-martial brother, could this child be sister-in-law’s...?” Although it was hard for two practitioners to have a child, it was not impossible to have one. She did not expect that, in only the short while she did not see them, they actually had a daughter.

“Of course not!” Zi Mo refuted. As expected, it was not only him who would think of it that way.

“No?” When Hong Chou heard that, she became even more happy, and her eyes were filled with an excited glow. “If she’s not, then give this baby to me. I will take her as my disciple.”

Zi Mo did not answer, but Yu Yan who was at the side instantly gave a cold expression. It felt as though the temperature in the room had suddenly dropped by a few dozen degrees, and now, the room only lacked the floating snowflakes to complete the scene.

Chapter 37: The Rubbed-Off Principles

“Kuh kuh, junior-martial sister, this is ancestral-martial master’s new disciple.” Glancing at Yu Yan who had already begun to emit killing intent, Zi Mo could only remind the woman who was carrying the baby and was not letting go of her.

Hong Chou was stunned for a moment. She turned to look at the ancestral-martial uncle whose expression was looking very bad. Unwillingly to give her up, she tightly held onto the little dumpling in her arms. “So it was ancestral-martial uncle’s disciple. I wonder what’s her name?”

Yu Yan was startled for a moment. After pondering for a while, he then said. “Naturally, her surname will follow mine, Yu, her first name... Two!” She’s his second disciple, after all.

Dumpling Zhu Yao instantly felt like scratching his face. You’re two! Your entire family are twos!

“Yo. The little girl is acting spoilt in front of me.” Looking at the dumpling who was waving her hands about in Hong Chou’s arms, Hong Chou began to like her even more, and she could not help but kiss on her small cheek.

Zhu Yao whose face was pasted with saliva: “.....”

“But this baby is still too young, and seems to still need milk. Coincidentally, I have recently caught a spiritual beast that could breastfeed, so I can feed her. Why don’t I help ancestral-martial

uncle raise her for a few years?”

Yu Yan simply waved his hand, the little dumpling automatically flew from Hong Chou’s arms back into his, and he coldly replied. “No need.”

Hong Chou sighed in frustration, and still did not give up, as her two eyes sparkled, looking towards the little dumpling. “A child so young, she still needs milk to grow up.”

Zhu Yao trembled, turned her head and snuggled into her master’s arms, using all her strength to rub off the saliva on her face. There’s so many weird uncles and weird aunties in this world, it’s still safer being with master.

Eh? Wait a minute. Wasn’t it master who abducted me in the first place?

Yu Yan was very satisfied with his little disciple’s act of reliance, straightening her small clothes, he continued to speak with Hong Chou. “Since that’s the case, send that spiritual beast to Jade Forest Mountain tomorrow.”

After saying that, before waiting for them to react, he had already flown back to Jade Forest Mountain with his new little disciple.

Zhu Yao felt as though she was about to become a pig. Every day, she would sleep after eating, and eat after waking up. Master

single-handedly took care of all her life necessities. What she ate was the porridge he cooked, what she wore were the small clothes personally made by him, and where she slept, was even his bed.

Of course, she was the one sleeping. Master was simply meditating at the side.

The only thing that she could not bear was, why did he have to personally wash her as well? Although she was currently a little wimp, but an infant had her own sense of shame, you know? Every day, she would be stripped off by a man, thrown into water and be rubbed left and right, things like these were... were... she had gotten used to them as well.

With a poker face, Zhu Yao raised her head and looked towards the sky. Scrub, scrub harder. In any case, her principles had already fallen by a large amount, not much of them were left.

Yu Yan carried his dumpling disciple out of the water, and wiped her body dry. As he helped her wear her clothes, he stared at the round face of hers, his mind was filled with doubt. This disciple of his, was really strange. In the first few days he brought her here, she would frequently throw tantrums and cry. Why did she grow quieter the longer he brought her up? Currently, forget about crying, she no longer even had any expressions on her face. She would only raise her small head, and look at the sky with her pair of widened round eyes. He even suspected that her face might have suffered some sort of injury that even he was unable to find out, and hence, the poker face.

Yu Yan released her, and then, Zhu Yao who had been neatly

dressed pedaled towards the bottle that was filled with spiritual beast milk. Carrying it up, guruguru, she finished it with only a few mouthfuls. Alright, she's full now, it's time to sleep. Tilting her head, she laid on the grass plains. In any case, her principles were gone, so she decided to peacefully become a pig.

Daddy Yu Yan sighed. Carrying the little dumpling on the ground, he entered the room, gently placed her on the bed, and covered the blanket over her.

Thinking that the little dumpling did not have any signs of waking up in a short while, he then turned and got out of the door. The children of the spiritual beasts Hong Chou sent had already stopped relying on milk, and the mother beast would not produce any more milk after the breastfeeding period. He had to find another one.

The infant's rest period was very strange. Even if Zhu Yao was a middle-aged auntie inside her heart, she still could not control the needs of her body. When Zhu Yao woke up, it was evening. The room was empty, and she could not see master's figure. Zhu Yao waited for a moment, and she still did not see her master. Hence, she decided to crawl out of the house to take a look.

Although, currently, she had small arms and legs, her crawling speed was still pretty fast. Not even a while later, she had already crawled out of the courtyard.

It was very quiet outside, and she could faintly hear the sounds the crickets. Her surroundings were very dark, but what's strange was, she was able to clearly see everything in her surroundings.

This sort of feeling was the same as when she broke through into Foundation. Could it be that her cultivation level followed after her when she reincarnated?

Zhu Yao was a little excited, and thought of circulating the spiritual energy inside her, only to realize her cinnabar was currently completely empty. There was not even a single strand of spiritual energy she could circulate.

What? I got all excited for nothing. So, she did not have any spiritual energy in the first place. Zhu Yao felt a little defeated, aimlessly, she crawled forward.

In front of her, she suddenly stepped on empty air, and her body uncontrollably tumbled forward, guruguru, she rolled down the mountain. I'm doomed!

Zhu Yao reflexively hugged herself into a ball, to prevent injuring herself. Hence, she who had a plump figure in the first place, rolled down even more merrily. Following down the path, she stained herself with lots of mud, and only after she bumped into a soft object did she finally stop.

“Eh!” A soft voice suddenly sounded next to her ear, and in the next instant, she was carried up by someone. “I picked up a little bun.”

In front of her was a white-clothed man. He was handsome and firm, and was even someone she was familiar with. “Little wimp!” Zhu Yao blurted out, but what she let out was only the “Iya”

sounds of a baby. By randomly rolling down, she was actually able to roll down towards him, this sure was fate.

Eh, wait a minute, why did little wimp look different? Although he had the same face, evidently, he was more matured than that unripe young man before. His face was a little more sharpened, and there were even a few short stubbles on his chin. She did not see him for only a few months, wasn't this change a little too big?

Naturally, Wang Xuzhi did not recognize her, and lightly smiled. Carrying her in his arms, he casually cast a Dirt Removal Art, cleaning the dirt stains on her, then, he gently pulled her messy hair. "This sure is a cute little bun."

Zhu Yao rolled her eyes at him. She was simply a little round, how was she a bun? Like he was the one to talk. It's good fortune for little kids to be a little round, when he was ten years old, he looked like a bun as well. Hmph!

"What, you're not satisfied?" Wang Xuzhi evilly pinched her small cheeks. "You're so round, so white, and so tender, if you're not a bun, what else can you be?"

Zhu Yao struggled out of his demonic claws. Hmph. Little wimp, you have better remember this. When this big sister is able to talk, I will expose all of your dark history.

Seeing that she, very evidently, wanted to let out her fury, but still did her best to not show it on her face, Wang Xuzhi felt even happier, as though he had found his conscience, he helped her rub

her reddened little cheeks. “Alright, don’t be angry, don’t be angry. Senior-martial brother is only joking with you. It’s already so late, why is a little bun like you still running about?”

Zhu Yao turned her head to the side, ignoring him. She did not run out here, she rolled down here!

“Which Mountain are you a disciple of? I will send you back.” Wang Xuzhi asked.

Zhu Yao babbled as she pointed to the mountain peak.

Chapter 38: Regarding The Bringing Up Of A Disciple

“You live in the Jade Forest Mountain?” Wang Xuzhi was startled, but a moment later, he calmed down again. “I heard from master that, ancestral-martial uncle has recently taken in a disciple. So... It’s true.”

Earlier, Wang Xuzhi was still in a happy mood, but he suddenly became solemn. His furrowed eyebrows were filled with unimaginable amount of melancholy, and his voice seemed to be suppressed by something as well. “So you’re his new disciple, heh... Do you know? I know your senior-martial sister. We were very close... so very close!”

And he seemed to be talking sentimental tosh, as his voice became softer with every word. Zhu Yao suddenly felt her heart was becoming heavier as well.

“But...” He took in a deep breath, as though he was trying to suppress something within him. “Everyone had forgotten about her. Even your master has... Haha. Back then, when he was unable to save her, he destroyed the entire Silent Melancholy Forest with a single breath. But, so what? It’s only but a hundred years, and he took in another disciple, even he had forgotten his previous disciple.”

The hand Wang Xuzhi was using to carry her became tighter, as though he was holding in his anger with all his strength. Only when Zhu Yao felt a little pain from his strangling and she started to struggle worriedly, did he finally regain his senses, and

slackened his strength. He then turned to smile at her. “It doesn’t matter. Even if the entire world has forgotten about her, I will still remember her, and will forever remember her.”

He took in a few deep breaths, before he stood up and began to walk towards the mountain peak. “Little bun, I will send you back.”

Zhu Yao did not make any sound, and simply stared at the little wimp who had grown up in front of her. The image of his mournful and saddened smile, which even carried a little amount of despair, surfaced in front of her. She really had never expected that, her death would deal such a big blow to him. Until now, she had thought that her resurrection was just something that happened in a blink of an eye, but hearing his words earlier, she was actually dead for a hundred years.

And even though it’s been a hundred years, he still brood about her death?

She really wanted to tell him that she did not die, and had resurrected. But she was basically unable to say anything, and finally, she could only spread out her small hands, using her small, small body, she tightly hugged onto his neck.

Little wimp, I’m back.

“Was someone here?” The moment Yu Yan returned, he felt the presence of a live being. After passing the warm bottle of spiritual beast milk in his hands to the little dumpling who was sitting

upright on the bed, he waved his hands to cast a Mystic Art used for inspection. After realizing who it was, his brows furrowed deeply. It's that stinky brat again. It was not enough for him to abduct one of his disciples, now he's even thinking of abducting a second one.

Yu Yan carried up the little dumpling on the bed, and warned with a stern expression. "In the future, do not casually make contact with people that do not concern you." To prevent his disciple from learning bad things again.

Zhu Yao's response was, carrying the milk bottle in her hands, she planted it onto his face. No one can say bad things about my family's little wimp, not even my master.

She was a child. She's that stubborn.

A certain master: "....."

Zhu Yao had spent an entire four months living the lifestyle of a pig, and finally had the small sign of heading towards the development of a regular work-rest cycle. Because of Reverend Hong Chou's one visit, she had expressed that Zhu Yao no longer needed to rely on milk, and she had grown out a pair of teeth as well. Hence, master had begun to feed her with only porridge. She had also begun to speak a few complete words, but she was still unable to say a complete sentence.

Of course, in a situation like this, Zhu Yao was actually very anxious about it. Not being able to talk, not being able to walk, and

was only allowed to eat porridge, when compared to her mental age, it was comparable to a first-rate disability. She wanted to cultivate as well, however, her master seemed to have forgotten his intention of taking in a disciple, and had completely immersed himself in the joy of bringing up a daughter.

Zhu Yao felt that her body was a little weird. Although she did not have any spiritual energy in her body, her senses were still the same as when she was at the Foundation-stage. And, when she met Wang Xuzhi the other day, she was actually able to see, at first glance, his Foundation Paragon cultivation level. Even she did not know why.

Wang Xuzhi would occasionally see her as well, but he had never went up to the mountain peak, and simply sat on that piece of rock in the forest.

Every time, he would bring over a few things for her. There were food, and there were even toys, he had the look of completely treating her as a child whom he had to coaxed into. Zhu Yao silently planned in her head how she would ridicule him back at full force when she regained her ability to speak.

Obviously, Yu Yan had objections, but, he found out that his little disciple seemed to especially like that brat. Whenever Yu Yan brought him up, whatever his little disciple had in her hands, she would plant them in his face, her temper was especially bad.

Although it had been a hundred years, to a deity practitioner, a hundred years were only a blink of an eye. With Wang Xuzhi's outstanding talent, logically, he should have formed his Azoth

Core much earlier, yet, he was still stuck at the cultivation level of a Foundation Paragon. She then wondered what happened to that Xiao Yi kid?

When she thought of him, Zhu Yao could not help but paste the label 'Pig-Like Party Member' on his face. Back then, if he had not hesitated for that one moment, she would not have the need to resurrect.

Actually, after she pondered deeply about it, she was able to understand why he would be stunned back then. After all, to him, only he knew that he was keeping an exotic treasure, and his Sword Intent was, even more so, something he managed to achieve due to his exotic treasure. It was his secret. But, this secret of his was suddenly shouted out by her. No matter who it was, he would not have been able to react instantly, right?

However, in that situation back then, how could there be any moment of hesitation? And, there was not any time for her to slowly walk over and whisper it into his ear, right?

Hence, her death was really no one's fault.

But, Wang Xuzhi did not think as such. From what he had occasionally revealed to Zhu Yao who was in her dumpling form, from the bits and pieces of his words, she realized he harbored deep hatred towards Xiao Yi, and he even had the belief that the responsibility for Zhu Yao's death was all on Xiao Yi. To the point when, every time he brought up the topic about her, he would subconsciously look towards the southwestern direction, with eyes filled with hatred. And in the southwestern direction was exactly

Sovereign Feng Yi's cave residence. And, ever since seventy years ago, Xiao Yi had been in isolation training, forming his Azoth Core.

One of the reasons why Zhu Yao wanted to start cultivating as fast as possible, was because of Wang Xuzhi. When comparing scheming ability, luck and cultivation, he was basically unable to beat Xiao Yi in any of these aspects. She was really afraid that, he would pick a fight with Xiao Yi out of impulse. Hence, it would be best if she could keep watch of him.

But, even if that's the case, as of yet, Zhu Yao did not have the intention to tell anyone of her resurrection. After all, things like resurrecting after a sure death, in this world, it was still considered as a strange event. It would be hard for anyone to not suspect that she had some sort of treasure in her hands. However, the key thing was, even she was not entirely clear why this was happening to her.

And, when she died, she seemed to have the strange incident of suddenly transporting into the internet, which was something that she could not even explain to anyone else, even she was a little muddled about it. For a short while, she suspected that she might have been transported into some sort of game, however, she had, after all, lived in this world for so many years, and the people she encountered were all living beings. If this was a game, at the very least, there should be an NPC, right!?

Zhu Yao let out a long sigh, and she sadly begun to contemplate about life.

And when Yu Yan rushed out with a bowl of porridge in his

hands, he saw a scene of a little dumpling, who could not even sit steadily, lying on the grass plains, trying to hold onto her small little head, only to tumble down over and over again.

Yu Yan began to seriously ponder, how he could bring her up, so as to gain a disciple who was not as stupid. After all, it was no longer possible for him to make up for her natural deficiencies.

Chapter 39: Trust Between Master And Disciple

The two of them were immersed in their own respective thoughts, when suddenly, the entire sky around Ancient Hill Sect darkened, and even the spiritual energy in the surroundings began to uncontrollably gather in the sky. In an instant, a huge storm brew, stones and sands flew about.

Zhu Yao who was currently trying to take up a thinking pose, also rolled backwards due to the wind blowing against her, fully using the advantage of her rounded figure. When she was just about to be sent flying into the sky, a figure flashed in front of her, and she was caught by Yu Yan who was behind her, entering a world filled with warmth.

“Mas... Mas, ter!” Zhu Yao spout out two syllables with great difficulty, smearing saliva on his face while she was at it. It was inevitable, her teeth were not fully grown yet.

Though, Yu Yan seemed to have gotten used to it, as he cast a Dirt Removal Art on her. Raising his head, he looked at the strange sky, then, he lowered his head and looked towards the southwestern direction, to the place where the cause of this activity was, and murmured. “Someone’s forming his Azoth Core.”

Zhu Yao seemed to have reacted instantly. Azoth, and in that direction, could it be that Xiao Yi? Is breaking through into another realm such a big incident in the cultivation world? It’s similar to filling the entire Ancient Hill Sect with formations.

Yu Yan frowned. He was a Lightning Spirit Vein holder, and his sensitivity to Heavenly Lightnings was particularly keen. The lightning pressure hidden within the layers of clouds were incredibly evident, and if he did not guess wrong, they should be the heavy lightnings when one had formed his Azoth Core. However, why would it bring about such a huge disturbance? Could it be that the person forming his Azoth Core was unordinary in some way?

Not giving him time to think, the surrounding disturbance had already stopped. Immediately after, the first ray of lightning struck down from the sky. Sunlight was blocked off by the dark clouds in the sky, and the ray of lightning, as though it was a gigantic dragon that would tear the sky and earth, flew directly towards the mountain peak in the southwest, ruthlessly striking on the person who was tackling the tribulation.

And, the Mountain Barrier Great Formation of Ancient Hill Sect instantly activated the moment the first ray of Heavenly Lightning struck down. Although the Tribulation Lightning would only strike the person tackling the tribulation, the Tribulation Lightning contained heavenly might and the purest of energy, which could very easily cause harm to low-ranked disciples who did not possess strong minds.

Zhu Yao sternly watched the chains of Tribulation Lightnings striking down. Such loud roars, were as though every single one of them was capable of bringing about the loudest of reverberations deep in her heart. They were even causing all the hair on her body to stand on ends. So this is the Lightning Tribulation, as expected, it's very tyrannical. However, why did she feel a sense of intimacy

towards it?

The Azoth Tribulation Lightnings struck a total of eighty-one times, and the might of every ray of lightning was stronger than the previous. Once the eighty-first Tribulation Lightning had struck down, it meant that the target had completed his formation of the Azoth Core. Zhu Yao evidently felt that, when the last ray of Tribulation Lightning struck down, the entire Ancient Hill Sect was shaking, and even the Mountain Barrier Great Formation trembled slightly.

Finally, it had finished striking down. Zhu Yao heaved a sigh of relief. This was the first time she had ever seen such a tyrannical scene.

“No, it’s not finished!” Yu Yan said coldly.

Zhu Yao was startled. No? She was after all, a science student, and she did pretty well with her mathematical studies. Earlier, it had evidently struck down eighty-one times, though?

The moment she raised her head, as he had said, the Tribulation clouds were still gathered in the sky with no signs of dispersing, as though they were preparing something. Could it be that, the heavens had gotten too thrilled with their lightning strikes, and was thinking of striking down once more? As expected, the treatment to male protagonists was different.

As she thought as such, in the sky, a ray of purple light flashed past. A ray of lightning filled with purple light, which was much

thicker than the Heavenly Lightning earlier, directly struck down from the skies.

Zhu Yao, who had already activated her show-watching mode, calmly watched, it was not going to strike her anyway. Eh? Why does it seem like that ray of lightning knows how to bend? Why does it feel like it's heading this way?

The hell, it's really coming this way! It was someone else's tribulation, what the hell did it have to do with her!?

“Master!” Zhu Yao grabbed tightly onto her master's collar. If her hands had not been too small, she would have definitely shook him a few times, shouting at him to save her.

Yu Yan felt it was a little strange as well. This was the first time he had ever encountered a Heavenly Lightning that could strike a wrong target. However, it was good that his reaction was quick, as he had seemingly cast a protective barrier in an instant. It was just a Azoth-stage Heavenly Lightning, he definitely could...

Bang! The lightning instantly pierced through the barrier, landing directly onto the two of them.

Zhu Yao, who was instantly struck charred black, turned her head and looked towards a certain master. What happened to the most basic of trust between a master and disciple?

A certain master who had not yet retracted his hands after

forming hand-seals earlier:

“Kuh, earlier, it was a Nine Purple Heavenly Lightning!” As though he had felt his disciple’s resentful eyes, Yu Yan explained a little embarrassingly.

Neither had he expected that this Tribulation Lightning, would actually be a Tribulation Lightning that only a Demigod-stage could have. And the difference between a Nine Purple Heavenly Lightning and normal Tribulation Lightning was, it was free-for-all, and could bypass all Mystic Arts and defenses. It was commonly known to strike whoever it wanted, and its might was stronger than a regular Tribulation Lightning by a hundred times.

Earlier he had made a wrong estimation, however, if he had not hugged her, and shielded off most of its might, she would not have simply suffered from mere burns.

However, even he was unable to understand why a Nine Purple Heavenly Lightning would be among the Azoth-stage Tribulation Lightnings, and it actually even struck the wrong target.

Casually casting a Dirt Removal Art on his disciple again, his disciple, who had turned into a black bun, whitened.

He then raised his head and looked towards the sky. “Such strange Tribulation Lightning, the person undergoing his tribulation must possess astonishing fate, and will definitely bring about a worldly phenomenon.”

Master, are you sure you're not trying to change the topic? Zhu Yao resentfully glared at him again, before raising her head to look at the sky.

The sky was still very dark, it simply no longer possessed that terrifying feeling earlier, and everything had returned to calmness. Rays of light fell from the several spots at the center of the dark clouds, and they slowly converged.

A worldly phenomenon was referring to something brought about by someone who possessed great opportunities, great fate, and great fortune. Usually, people like these were like favourites of the heavens, and when the first ray of Tribulation Lightning fell, the sky would definitely display irregularities. The rarer the phenomenon, it meant the more extraordinary the person was to be in the future. But, a phenomenon like this, according to legends, it would only frequently appear in the Ancient Era.

As expected, her master was spot on. The gathering spots of light, slowly formed a figure, and not even a moment later, the figure was fully formed by the gathered spots of light.

Zhu Yao looked at the sky with widened eyes. That was actually a dragon, a gigantic white dragon, a dragon that she had only seen in books. The gigantic dragon flew and rolled around in the sky, as though it was able to fly to the heavens and dive towards the earth in but a mere instant, and even flying towards her was...

The hell, it's really flying over here. Please, aren't you a phenomenon caused by the person forming his Azoth Core? Why are you running in the wrong direction?

And, even though earlier it was still tyrannically and mightily rolling through the clouds and rain, it was currently flying towards their direction while its long body twisted up and down.

And what's the meaning of you roaring ouhouh~ouh ㄥ|`o'|ㄣ while you're flying here?

Zhu Yao instantly recalled the Heavenly Lightning caused by this crow-dragon, and she reflexively shouted out, "Don't come here!"

And that dragon actually really stopped in the air with a screech. It looked towards her with pitiful eyes, and it even cried out "Wuuuuu" aggrievedly.

For an instant, Zhu Yao could not locate her jaw. Are you a dog or a dragon!?

The white dragon seemed to have understood that she did not have the intention to allow it to approach her, and finally turned and tumbled far away. It's figure became faint as time went past, and finally, it disappeared in the air. And the thunderclouds that had gathered for a several hours began to slowly disperse as well, and a moment later, a clear sky was revealed.

Zhu Yao:

Yu Yan:

After being stunned for a moment, a certain master then slowly lowered his head and looked at the little disciple in his hands.

Zhu Yao covered her face. Don't ask me, I don't know what's going on either!

A moment later.

“Yu Wang?”

“Your sister's Desire!”

Uh...

Hearing this, the corner of his lips gently raised, and for a moment, it felt as though the ice had melted, everything had come to life again, and spring had blossomed.

“It's good as long as you're back.”

“.....”

Chapter 40: Prehistoric Monster Infant

A conditioned reflex was really a very life-threatening thing. Because, it would occasionally cause you to say the things you should not be saying, do the wrong things, and go out of character.

Zhu Yao's identity, because of the words she said out of reflex, was stripped off unscrupulously by a certain master.

Zhu Yao covered herself with the blanket, she was too ashamed to see anyone.

“Reason?” He pulled out the stupid disciple who was attempting to hide herself in the blanket, and strongly looked at her. The incidental Lightning Tribulation yesterday, caused him to suddenly think of the violent storm of spiritual energy when his stupid disciple broke through into Foundation. Hence, with slight suspicion, he called out her name, however, he did not expect that it would actually be her.

Zhu Yao struggled to squeeze out a pitiful expression, however, because of the aftermath from keeping a poker face for such a long time, she could not squeeze out any expression other than her poker face. Hence, she could only wave her two small hands about. “Mas-ter-ter~”

Yu Yan's expression did not change, as he stared directly at her.

Evidently, acting cutesy was of no use.

“I don’t know either.” Zhu Yao acknowledged her mistake, as she lowered her head and twiddled her thumbs. “I realized I was like this the moment I woke up, and then, master, you came to get me.”

Seeing her aggrieved look, Yu Yan instantly believed her entirely. A short while later, he seemed to have thought of something, as his brows began to furrow again. “Why did you not tell master right from the start?”

Zhu Yao hanged her head down even lower, as though she was attempting to roll herself into a real dumpling.

“You don’t trust your master?”

“Of course not!” Zhu Yao instantly raised her head, and then, she shook it strongly.

“It’s master’s fault.” Yu Yan frowned deeply, as he stretched out his hand to stroke her head. “I did not protect you well, it’s normal for you to not believe me.” On that day, when he saw her corpse, it was the first time he had ever felt anger, and because of the loss of control, he destroyed the entire Silent Melancholy Forest. However, even if he did that, he was still unable to save his disciple’s life. He was not a competent master.

“That’s not it!” Zhu Yao became a little anxious. The incident back then, her master was not on-site anyway. A faraway water stream could not put out a fire nearby, it completely did not concern him at all.

As to why she did not reveal her identity, it was because...

“I had thought of telling you in the first place, but I don’t even know why I became like this. And also, in my current state, I can’t talk either... Eh? I can talk?”

On hindsight, Zhu Yao rubbed her face, she really was able to talk now. Earlier, she was still like a regular one year old, unable to say a complete sentence. Now, when she talked, there were completely no hindrance. Had she not grown too fast?

“Your cultivation has recovered.” Yu Yan calmly said. As a Foundation Paragon, naturally, talking should be of no problem.

Eh? Zhu Yao was startled. She tried sensing for a moment, and as he had said, there was spiritual energy flowing. She then circulated the spiritual energy, forming a ray of lightning, with a bang. The white ray of lightning, then struck directly... on Yu Yan’s head.

“Uh, my hand slipped!”

“Mischievous!” Yu Yan coldly glared at her, yet, his tone did not sound reproachful in the slightest. A ray of lightning cast by a mere Foundation-stage practitioner, obviously could not harm him. Actually, before that ray of lightning made contact with his body, it had already been dispersed by his pressure.

“This disciple acknowledges her mistake!” Although it did not

land on him, acknowledging her mistake was still something she had to do. This was a problem regarding one's attitude. "Master, how did I suddenly recover my cultivation? Even though, back then, when I tried it out, it wasn't there."

Yu Yan sat at the side. "In fact, your cultivation has always been there. It's just that because your body did not even possess a single strand of spiritual energy, hence, you were unable to cast Mystic Arts. Earlier, when you received that ray of Heavenly Lightning, it coincidentally filled you up with the lightning spiritual energy you required. Now that you have spiritual energy, naturally, your cultivation will recover."

In that case, she really had to thank that Heavenly Lightning for striking her so suddenly. Zhu Yao felt a little strange. "Master, even though I changed my look, why is my cultivation still here?"

"This... I do not know either." Yu Yan shook his head slowly. In fact, not just her cultivation, even the divine imprint that he had placed on her when he took her in as his disciple, was still on her body. Logically, be it cultivation, or divine imprint, they would both disappear when one died, and it was impossible for it to be transferred along with one's soul. Even if it was a soul take-over, that person would still have to start cultivating from scratch. Just who had such ability to reincarnate her, and keep her cultivation as well? And what was that person's intentions behind this?

"Before this matter is clearly investigated, you shall stay in the Jade Forest Mountain. You're not allowed to leave."

"Ah! I have to be confined again." Don't, master. Just one

confinement of yours lasted five years, your dear disciple can't hold out that long.

“The matters regarding your body, are too unusual! And your cultivation raising speed is too quick, to prevent yourself from bringing in unnecessary trouble, staying here will be safest for you.”

Zhu Yao went silent. Currently, indeed, it would not be wise for her to appear before people in her current situation. A Foundation-stage one year old, who would believe it? People might think she was in the possession of some heaven-bending mystical treasure. It was still best for her to keep to a low profile.

“Yu... Yao.” Yu Yan stretched out his hand to stroke her head, which had grown short strands of hair. “No matter if you still believe in me now, master will do all he can, to protect your well-being.” He would no longer allow her to disappear in front of him.

Zhu Yao raised her head. Seeing that there were no impurities in his eyes, which was still as gentle and calm as ever, she could feel the cautiousness in his words. Was it due to the guilt for not protecting her well back then? Even though it was clearly not his fault, he actually placed all the blame on himself, and sought her trust once more.

Momentarily, her eyes felt hotter, some warm liquid was about to flow out of her eyes.

Zhu Yao took in a big breath through her nose, and roared back

loudly. “It’s Zhu Yao! My surname’s Zhu!”

Remember your own disciple’s name well, bastard!

“Let’s still call you Yu Wang then!”

“Your sister’s Desire!”

Although Yu Yan was determined to thoroughly investigate the matters that happened to his disciple’s body, sometimes, plans could never catch up to the changes, as another new situation had occurred on Zhu Yao.

She was woken up by some heat. On the Jade Forest Mountain, it was spring throughout the year, yet, Zhu Yao woke up with her body covered in hot sweat. It was as though a fire was burning in her body, and the flames were unbearable. Ever since the showdown with her master last night, she finally returned to her own cottage to sleep. With her small hands and legs, even if she wanted to open the windows to disperse the heat now, she was unable to do it.

Zhu Yao pushed the blanket away. She thought of crawling down the bed, and feel the breeze outside. But, she felt that burning heat earlier had disappeared, a mass of air had suddenly stagnated in her chest, and the blockage was causing her to feel uncomfortable. Hence, she could only circulate the spiritual energy inside her body, attempting to disperse that mass of air somewhere else.

However, she did not expect that it would actually work, as that mass of air, following the circulation of spiritual energy, was slowly moved to her leg. Before Zhu Yao could feel happy about it, creak, her leg which looked like a small lotus root earlier, suddenly grew by several times.

Zhu Yao strangely looked at her elephant leg. No, it should not be elephant leg, it looked more like the leg of an adult woman. It was slim and slender, and completely did not have the baby fat like earlier.

Just what is going on? Why did it suddenly grow big? And why was it only a single leg!? God, get out here, let us have a talk about life!

Zhu Yao carefully thought about where the problem came from. Could it be that mass of air earlier? She tried to slowly retrieve that mass of air, and then, that adult leg disappeared, restoring to its former little lotus root.

She then tried to guide the mass of air to her arm. As expected, creak, her arm instantly became the size of an adult's, while the rest of her body was still that of a child's.

Zhu Yao was a little excited, as she guided the mass of air to her head. Creak, she gained a huge head.

She then continued to test it out, constantly rotating the mass of air around the various parts of her body. Hence, suddenly, a weird scene appeared in her room. The dumpling-like child on the bed,

for a moment, turned into an infant with a huge head, an infant with a huge leg in the next moment, and an infant with a huge arm in the next.

And when a certain master, who came over to investigate after sensing an anomaly, saw his disciple who had already gotten addicted to it, silently turned around and returned. What am I going to do with my disciple's 'chicken' IQ?

Chapter 41: Not Playing Around With Disciple Leads To Death

It's as though Zhu Yao had found a new source of entertainment, as she kept enlarging and shrinking, enlarging and shrinking every part of her body.

Eh! Wait a minute. Why did she feel like she was like a balloon, becoming bigger wherever she blows?

Finally realizing this truth, Zhu Yao tearfully stopped. Sensing the mass of air in her body, she actually found out that not only did it not disappear, there were signs of it growing. Hence, she tried to disperse that mass of air, spreading them uniformly across every corner of her body.

This took up more effort than moving an entire mass of air, as she took entirely two hours before she finished guiding the air. And, her body had already turned into the figure of a fifteen or sixteen year old girl.

Growing up in a single night, this sure felt a little fantastical!

Carefully inspecting her new body, the size of every part of her body was very normal. The places that were supposed to be sunk, sank, and for the places that were supposed to be raised.....

Flat! This was illogical.

Zhu Yao silently inspected the pair of undeveloped small buns in front of her chest, and suddenly had an idea. Since she was able to control the size of her body, then did that not mean that she could... re-adjust some places that she were lacking in?

When she thought of this, Zhu Yao was a little excited, and immediately controlled the mass of air, guiding it to her chest, silently chanting: b, c, d, e, f.....

However, no matter how she guided the mass of energy, the small buns in front of her chest were still very principled, and kept to their original sizes.

She did not believe that she couldn't do it, and guided the entire mass of energy towards her chest. In the end, with a poof, she returned to being a dumpling. Great, now she did not even have a pair of small little buns.

The hell! Does it have to be that hard to make my chest bountiful?

Zhu Yao could only give up on her grand plan, and once again, gathered the mass of energy, returning to her earlier teenage girl figure.

She was really was curious about her looks, as she cast an Ice-Gathering Art, and made use of the reflection on the ice to look at her own face. It seemed like her plump little bun face finally had sharpened edges to it, and had developed into the good direction of a pumpkin seed-like face. However, it was still possible to see

traces of her former bulging cheeks, and her eyes still rather looked the same as before, with double eyelids. A face that looked a little like a doll's, cuter than average, and lacked the feminine charm of a mature woman, in general, she was not considered ugly. But, unknown as to whether it was because of the aftermath of her bun face, her entire face was tightly stiffened. She wanted to smile, only to find out that she was only able to make a strange arc.

Not good, not only was she flat-chested, she even grew out a poker face!

Zhu Yao realized that, after she completely familiarized herself with this body, the mass of air in her body had already disappeared, and she could no longer find a single wisp of air. Hence, she could only inform her master about the incident of her growing up in a single night.

However, her master seemed to have known about it before she even told him, and was not too shocked about her new look.

Yu Yan's expression turned solemn, as he looked at his disciple in front of him whose height was already at his chest. "Initially, I was worried that there would be effects on your body due to the Heavenly Lightning, but it seems like there's no problem now."

"Ah?" What do you mean?

However, Yu Yan turned around and brought her outside. With a wave of his hand, several spiritual swords instantly flew out, landing at a few different directions. The endless cries of of the

crickets and the caws of the birds instantly disappeared completely, as an Isolation Barrier had been formed.

“Use all your strength to release your strongest move.”

Zhu Yao was a little dazed. Although she did not know his intentions, she still obediently circulated all of the spiritual energy in her body, and summoned a Heavenfall.

A bolt of Heavenly Lightning fell from the sky, directly striking towards grass patch not far away from her. Yet, the moment before it struck on the ground, it was dissipated by the barrier.

Zhu Yao was just about to ask, but, the moment she took a step, guru, she rolled onto the ground.

The hell! Why did she revert back into a child? And she no longer had that enlarging and shrinking mass of air in her body, a cloud of [‘what the fu-’](#) ran over her head.

“As I thought!” Yu Yan calmly carried the little dumpling off the ground, and returned to the cottage.

“Master?” Just what was going on? She could not understand at all!

“Do you know why regular people have to be a full year old before it’s possible to test for their Spirit Veins?” Yu Yan pulled up her little fat hand, cupped her wrist, and inspected her body

through her pulse.

Zhu Yao shook her head. “Do Spirit Veins only grow after one is a year old?”

“The type of Spirit Veins one has is determined since birth, and is not developed on another day.” Only after inspecting that she was indeed fine and sound, did he finally retract his hand. “As to why Spirit Veins can only be tested after one is a year old, is because the body of an infant is too weak, and is basically unable to hold spiritual energy. If one were to forcefully cultivate before then, that infant will die from severed meridians.” The reason why he only broke through into Foundation at ten years old, even though he entered the sect at three years old, was because of this reason. Before he was ten, his body was basically unable to endure the pressure of Foundation.

“But I’m fine!” She was a healthy little dumpling.

“Initially, I was worried about this point as well. But today, I realized you’re able to freely change the size of your body.” Yu Yan stroked her head thoughtfully. “This body of yours, it seems like... it has been specially prepared for your resurrection.”

Zhu Yao was a little startled, and suddenly had the feeling as though she had received a big Level Up reward.

“Then why did I revert back now?”

“Because that art you cast earlier, had already used up all of your spiritual energy. Once your spiritual energy recovers, you will revert back to that form.”

“.....” She felt like she was Conan Edogawa!

“Then when can I change back?”

“Once your spiritual energy recovers for two days, it will be enough.”

“Master!”

“Mn?”

“Next time, can you please finish your explanation in one go, instead of giving examples?” Clearly, he could have told her directly, why did he have to bring her out to cast that bolt of Heavenly Lightning? You can’t play around with your disciple like this!

Yu Yan’s expression instantly stiffened, unfortunately, because of the cold face he had kept up for so long, it basically could not be seen. “Don’t imagine things, have an early rest.”

Calmly placing his disciple on the bed, calmly covering her with the blanket, and then, he calmly walked to the other side of his room, calmly opening the closet, and calmly taking out a white cotton cloth.

And he calmly asked. “Do you want to change diapers?”

“Change your sister’s!”

Ever since she found out that her body could grow bigger, smaller, longer and shorter at uncertain times, Zhu Yao became very well-behaved, patiently waiting to grow up. There were too many mysteries surrounding her body, and even her master did not know about them, not to mention the words on her corpse back then, and that strange loading bar, which even she could not clearly explain. She kind of felt that she had caught a glimpse of some sort of rule, but after thinking deeply about it, she felt it was illogical.

So as to not bring about unnecessary trouble, she decided to wait till she was fully grown. At the very least, until the time when there’s not too much of a difference with her figure when her spiritual energy depletes? Speaking of which, she found it hilarious. Back then, she kept feeling that she was too old, and when she came into the sect, she was greatly surrounded by a bunch of little turnips. And now, she was actually hoping that she could grow up faster.

Before she was ten, she decided not to head down the mountain.

However, this morning, she felt Wang Xuzhi’s spiritual pressure. That spiritual pressure came from the Main Mountain’s direction. It was both rash and quick, carrying a killing rage which could even be felt from the Jade Forest Mountain.

Zhu Yao felt that something must have happened to him. A few days ago, Xiao Yi formed his Azoth Core, so he should have come out by now. With his obsession with Xiao Yi, that little wimp would not do anything stupid, right?

In the end, Zhu Yao still decided to head out to look. Leaving the Jade Forest Mountain, she headed towards the direction where the spiritual pressure was dispersing from.

‘心中一百匹草泥马奔过’: Literal translation: A hundred mud horses sprinted past in her heart. ‘Mud horses or 草泥马’ is actually a profanity in Chinese, but because I felt the joke wouldn’t work well with a literal translation, I went with something similar in English instead.

Chapter 42: Activating Make-Up Story Mode

Along the way, she encountered quite a number of people, in twos and threes, as though they had dispersed from somewhere earlier. Their faces were all filled with excitement, as though something that excited them had happened, and they chattered while walking.

“That battle earlier was really fascinating.”

“Yeah, as expected of senior-martial uncle Xiao, the personal succeeding disciple of a Sovereign. The moment he attacked, the might he displayed was shocking.”

“I think that the opponent was too weak, he was basically unable to block senior-martial uncle’s attack.”

“But, after all, his opponent’s cultivation was a level lower, it’s normal that he wasn’t able to go up against him.”

“But senior-martial uncle Xiao only used a single attack, and won with that one attack. And, I even heard that currently, senior-martial uncle have already comprehended his Sword Intent. He has just formed his Azoth Core, you know! But, I also heard from the rumors, senior-martial uncle was once an Outer Sect disciple.”

“So what if he’s from the Outer Sect? As time passes, senior-martial uncle might even chase up to that person at the Jade Forest

Mountain.”

“Haha! You’re right! Eh, look! It’s senior-martial uncle Xiao, he’s coming over here.”

Zhu Yao had already confirmed that the person they were discussing about was Xiao Yi, and could not help but turn her head as well and looked over.

But with just this single glance, her heart stopped, her eyes suddenly widened, and it’s as though she could hear her jaw falling onto the ground.

That person was Xiao Yi. He had the same face, had a similar figure, and even the mole on the side of his neck was exactly the same.

But why the hell was there a word on his face? And it was even black and bolded, the word was so eye-catching, it only lacked a box. The word was: BUG!

The hell, and it’s even in English! And why was there a huge yellow exclamation mark floating above his head? And it was even constantly flashing, trying to make its presence known. It was as though she was even able to hear the warning sounds “Dududu”.

No, no, no. It must definitely be because the method she used to open her eyes was incorrect!

After blinking her eyes countless of times with all her might, the word on his face, still did not have any signs of disappearing.

This could not be, it must definitely be an illusion. Zhu Yao grabbed a cloth from the hands of someone beside her, and casually rubbed that face.

“Eh, that’s my...” rag. The person beside her silently swallowed down his last word.

I rub, I rub, I rub-ber-dub-dub! However, that black and bolded word still appeared glaringly on the target’s face. Is there anyone that can give me an explanation for this?

The vicinity was instantly in a state of silence, however, the several female practitioners standing beside Xiao Yi, was staring angrily at Zhu Yao who suddenly appeared. Where did this vixen come out from?

If Zhu Yao were to look carefully, she would realize that among these female practitioners, were Ling Long and Su Zi that she knew of.

“Thank you very much, junior-martial sister!” Xiao Yi finally could no longer stand her skin-peeling action, and stopped her hands. “I’m not tired at all!”

Although he did not know who she was, she was still someone who came over to wipe off his sweat. After inspecting her for a

moment, his eyes instantly shone. Although she did not look fully grown, and her face was cold, she still looked especially cute, and her cheeks which carried a bit of baby fat, was even tempting people to gobble her up. Suddenly, a ripple appeared in Xiao Yi's heart, and he could not help but reveal a gentle smile. "I wonder how I should address this junior-martial sister?"

Zhu Yao was startled, as she stared at that a little exaggerated smile of his, even the word BUG on his face was changing a little. She almost could not stop herself from spitting soda water on his face.

As though she could hear a voice coming from beside her:

Player Xiao Yi used the skill "An Understanding Smile" on you. x
1

Damage received: Miss!

Zhu Yao instantly ignored him, instead, she slowly raised her head and looked towards the yellow exclamation mark which was even bigger than his head above him! If she could not remove the word, she wondered if she could pull down that exclamation mark?

Suddenly, her hands felt a little itchy!

"Junior-martial sister?" Seeing that she did not have any reaction, Xiao Yi patiently waited for once, and the smile on his

face became even more gentle. “Don’t be afraid, I wonder which Mountain are you a disciple of?”

Only then did Zhu Yao regain her senses. Was he... sending her electrical sparks?

Seeing more and more female practitioners sending her killing intent, she understood how friendly the smile Xiao Yi was giving her was. However, she really found it hard to develop good feelings for a face with the word “BUG” printed on it.

As a qualified technical staff, when she saw this word, her first thought was to “DEL” him, and re-program him, alright?

“Little bun?” Before she could say anything, suddenly, a person interrupted her.

Wang Xuzhi suddenly walked over without her noticing, and he was staring dumbfoundedly at her face. Suddenly, as though he had thought of something, he pulled her to his side, and looked defensively towards Xiao Yi at the side. “What are you planning to do now?”

“Martial-nephew Wang, you have misunderstood. I was simply giving my greetings to this junior-martial sister.”

Wang Xuzhi did not say anything, he simply took a step forward, tried harder to shield Zhu Yao behind him, and looked at the other party coldly. Xiao Yi could not think of anything momentarily, and

simply turned around and left.

The surrounding people began to disperse in twos and threes as well. Before they left, they did not forget to point at Wang Xuzhi, as though they were very unhappy with her earlier disrespectful action.

And it looked as though Wang Xuzhi had gotten used to it, as completely did not mind them. He simply tightly pulled onto Zhu Yao behind him and moved away quickly, leaving the Main Mountain.

Zhu Yao was still immersed in the shock that he was able to recognize her in a single glance. When she regained her senses, she realized, she had already reached a very familiar-looking house. This was Wang Xuzhi's residence, and she had come here before.

“Why are you out here?” The moment they entered the house, Wang Xuzhi's expression sank, and inspected her a little anxiously. “And, how did you... become like this?”

Zhu Yao was startled for a moment. “Umm, if I were to say you have mistook me for someone else...”

“Impossible!” His expression instantly turned a little stern, as though he was unhappy about her dishonesty, and he reached out his hands to pinch her cheeks. “Even if little bun has grown up, you're still a bun. Hurry and tell me what's going on?”

Your sister's a bun!

She slapped away his evil hands, saving her little cheeks. She hated this doll face.

“I looked like this in the first place!” Zhu Yao thought for a moment, and decided to not tell him the truth for now.

“Then back then, you were?” When he saw her two days ago, she was still an infant that was not even a year old, so just how did she turn into a fifteen to sixteen year old teenage girl today?

“In the past, I was struck with a very treacherous type of Mystic Art.” She activated her Make-Up Story Mode. “The people who are struck with this Mystic Art, their age will become younger and younger, until they disappear. Fortunately, I encountered master, and he brought me back because he pitied me. Master told me that this was a Mystic Art that had been lost for a very long time, and he had only heard of it a long time ago. It's only until recently, did Master finally come up with a way to dispel it.”

“Really?” However, Wang Xuzhi was still a little skeptical, and stared at her suspiciously.

“Of course it's true. Otherwise, even if I have way to become an adult, my personality would have still been that of a child's. How else am I able to talk to you freely?” The more she made it up, the more logical it sounded. “To tell you the truth, my actual age is actually about the same as yours. It's just that, the Mystic Art has yet to be completely dispelled, so I currently look like this.”

Chapter 43: Undoing The Knot In One's Heart

“You’re lying!” Wang Xuzhi’s brows raised slightly. “Then, according to what you said, how did you get struck by that strange Mystic Art? And who was the one that did it? And you’re currently at the cultivation level of a Foundation Paragon, it could be seen that you were a practitioner in the past. Then, before you were struck with the Mystic Art, where did you train at?”

Uh... Why did little wimp suddenly become so sharp for?

“I can’t tell you!”

“Why?”

“Because...” If she was going to act, then she would have to act till the end, telling half of the actual truth was the essence behind a false story. Zhu Yao blinked her eyes, and tried hard to make out a helpless and worried look. “I don’t wish for you to be dragged into this. If you were to know too much, I’m afraid you might bring trouble on yourself.”

“.....” As expected, Wang Xuzhi was startled, and his eyes instantly became gentler by quite a bit. As though he had thought of something again, he reached out his hand and stroked her head. “As I thought, you two are very alike!”

“Alike? With who? That senior-martial sister you brought up

before?” Zhu Yao continued to act.

Wang Xuzhi let out a light sigh, as though he was unwilling to bring up that topic again. “Alright, even if the Mystic Art on your body have been dispelled, you shouldn’t casually run about. Especially that Xiao Yi, you must not easily make contact with him, understand?”

“Why?”

“No questions.” Wang Xuzhi did not explain, and simply pulled her hand and headed outside. “I will return you to the Jade Forest Mountain. Remember not to leave the mountain so easily in the future.”

Zhu Yao could not help but roll his eyes at him. The reason why I came out was because you, stinky brat. But seeing that he was alright, she was no longer worried as well. However, even if he was alright now, it did not mean that he would be this lucky in the future.

After returning to Jade Forest Mountain, she could not help but pull onto Wang Xuzhi, who was about to turn and leave.

“Earlier, did you fight with Xiao Yi at the practice field?”

Wang Xuzhi was silent for a moment, before nodding his head.

Zhu Yao could not help but let out a sigh. “Do you think that,

with your cultivation level, you're able to beat him?"

Wang Xuzhi tightened his fists next to him, and hatefully gritted his teeth. "No!"

"So, you went to pick a fight with him, was to simply seek your own death?" This kid is actually so serious about courting his death as well?

"What do you know?" His face instantly became ashen, filled with the intolerance from his thoughts being hit right on mark, and his emotions suddenly began to burst out. "Do you know how it feels to personally see your most important person die right in front of you? Back then, if Xiao Yi had not hesitated... if he had not hesitated!!"

"Then what about you?" Zhu Yao reminded herself not to be soft-hearted, she had to say something that was even harsher. When she saw Wang Xuzhi for the first time after she returned, she knew, her death was the biggest knot in his heart. Hence, he was stuck at the Foundation Paragon bottleneck, and had not progressed. If he were to continue to brood over this, then this knot, would definitely turn into a demon in his heart, and destroy his deity cultivation prospects in the end. And the best way to undo this knot, was to first shatter it.

"You said it was because of Xiao Yi's hesitation, which led to the death of your most important person. Since she was your most important person, then why did you have to rely on someone else to save her? What were you doing?"

“I... I was maintaining the sword formation back then!” His breathing was a little unsteady, and his eyes began to look blurry.

“So you’re saying, you basically did not have any strength to spare to save her?”

“I...”

“You couldn’t even save her yourself, so what right did you have to push the role of saving her to others? Or are you saying that you did not want to save her in the first place?”

“No, I wanted to save her. But, I.....”

“But you don’t have the ability to do so? So, you can’t even save her!”

“I...”

“Xuzhi, in the end, do you hate Xiao Yi for not acting in time, or do you hate yourself for not being able to save her?”

“.....” Wang Xuzhi stood rooted to the ground, as though he had suddenly understood something, despair surfaced on his face.

However, she had no choice but to be firm and decisive. “Who you hate has always been yourself, hasn’t it!?”

Wang Xuzhi became completely dispirited, his lips slightly moved, revealing an expression that could not be made out. “What else can I do? Other than feeling remorse, what else can I do?”

“Are you planning to stay remorse like this for your entire life?”

“.....”

“If you’re willing to fall into depravity, I don’t care either! However, the person who died for you, how would she feel about it? Do you think she will wish to see you continue down like this?”

Wang Xuzhi strongly shook his head.

Zhu Yao patted on his shoulder. “Since you think that you couldn’t save her because your cultivation was insufficient, then, train to reach a realm that allows you to save people, bastard!”

“.....” Wang Xuzhi did not reply, his eyes still looked a little blurry, however, he had finally began to reflect on his own. Dragging his heavy feet, he went back.

Zhu Yao sighed deeply. She had already said what she needed to, after all, there’s a need to give him time to think it through on his own. At the very least, while he’s thinking it through, she need not worry about him running to Xiao Yi and seeking his own death again.

The strange things happening on Xiao Yi were increasing, and she did not know why they were happening either. The strange BUG on his face, and that fresh and clear exclamation mark above his head, no one else could see either of them. Was this giving her a hint or something?

She was beginning to feel that, her resurrection after crossing into this world, was not as simple as it seemed on the surface, and it was even closely related with Xiao Yi.

Zhu Yao had a dream, yet, it did not feel like her own dream either. Because, in the dream, she personally witnessed the life of another person, and that person was even the one who was giving her a terrible headache – Xiao Yi.

Ever since he was young, Xiao Yi was an orphan. He did not have a shockingly complicated background, and was simply a child that was casually thrown away by his family due to a famine. He was like every single beggar, using all possible means to live, and had done many underhanded things. However, he had also suffered from countless of cold stares and had been cast aside many times. Even for just a single bite of rice, he would fight with a wild dog for it. This lasted until he was ten years old, when he was taken in as a disciple and brought to the Ancient Hill Sect.

He was taken in as the Sect Master's disciple, and was held in high-esteem at first. However, because he offended the Inner Sect disciple, little fatty Zhao, his cultivation was crippled, and was thrown out of the Inner Sect. However, this instead saved him, as when he was in the Outer Sect, he was punished by watching over the Former North Pavilion.

What were placed in the Former North Pavilion were the scraps from weapon refinement in the Sect, and due to a fateful coincidence, he obtained a piece of very strange scrap material. Out of a moment of fun, he wore it on him, however, due to suffering from an injury in a certain incident, his blood dripped onto that piece of scrap, and he realized it was actually the “Metal Spirit”. Ever since the sky and earth was formed, between heaven and earth, the “Metal Spirit” was the purest form of metal spiritual energy which converged into a Spirit. The Metal Spirit had only gained sentience, yet, because it made contact with his blood, it immediately took him as its master.

And incidentally, he had the Metal Spirit Vein as well. The “Metal Spirit”, the spirit which was converged by spiritual energy, had the power to administrate all of the metal spiritual energy in the world, so, possessing the Metal Spirit was equal to possessing the metal spiritual energy of the entire world. And, the Metal Spirit Vein was the firmest Spirit Vein out of the five Spirit Veins, it had a very important effect on controlling weapons, and using sword techniques.

Hence, because of the “Metal Spirit’s” effects, he instantly activated the protagonist’s cheat, his cultivation improved by leaps and bounds, and built his Foundation in four years. He hid his cultivation, participated in the Inter-Sect Tournament, and even obtained first place, leading him to be taken in as Sovereign Feng Yi’s personal succeeding disciple.

Chapter 44: The Protagonist's Cheat Is Tricking You

Under the guidance of a famous master, as though he had activated a hack, Xiao Yi's cultivation climbed up quickly. Although in the middle of it, there were a few reckless people who came to look for trouble, they were all oppressed by his strength, and unintentionally, he gained the hearts of many girls. In the later stages of his life, he achieved even more impressive feats, such as fighting against heretic practitioners, killing devils, and conquering secret realms. Every single time, when he looked as though he was at a great disadvantage, he would always turn the tides, either by suddenly awakening some unique ability, and then, with a loud roar, eliminating the opposing party in the name of the moon, or, by having certain girls who could not live on without him, extend their helping hands in the nick of time. And because of these experiences, he gained even more opportunities.

In the end, he even unintentionally gathered all five sentient Spirits of metal, wood, water, fire, and earth, and summoned Shenlong! Oh, that's wrong. He successfully ascended! He even defeated those geniuses with mutated Spirit Veins, including the Lightning Spirit Vein, in one fell swoop, becoming the first person in the cultivation world to ever ascend in just two thousand years. Those people who were to cultivate in the future, could only look up to his buttocks.

When Zhu Yao saw the late stages, she could not help but retort at this dream of hers. The Xiao Yi in this dream was still rather inspirational at the early stages, raising his cultivation and walking on the road to the summit of life. However, at the later stages, it completely changed, from working hard in his cultivation, it

turned into him working hard in flirting with girls.

As long as the girl had a relationship with him, she would always end up falling under his robes.

Xiao Yi even began to go on harem mode. Princess of the Demon World, Queen of the Human Realm, martial sisters of the same sect, the wild flowers along the road, anyway, as long as the girls were to see him, they would obtain some form of sickness as though “they had not seen a man for thousands of years”, and would cling onto him even if they had to die. And, they were even able to get along harmoniously with each other, every single of them would feel extremely uncomfortable if they did not love him. And, his definition towards love was, if you love me, give me [n-play](#). The hell, this was simply a miracle. Among them, even that Demigod Sovereign master of his was included.

When Zhu Yao watched this, she felt like calling this a “brain-dead film”.

In the end, obviously, Xiao Yi formed a gigantic harem. And, when this Xiao Yi was a late-stage Demigod, he especially stayed in the cultivation world for a thousand years, all for the sake of waiting for a few dozen of his most favored girlyies, to ascend together.

As for the things that happened after his ascension, Zhu Yao were unable to see them. She thought the dreamscape would end here, however, the scenery in front of her changed, from viewing the rays of light due to the countless ascensions, her vision returned to the cultivation world.

After the legendary Xiao Yi ascended, the cultivation world did not welcome an era of calm. During his ascension, the five cheat-like divine Spirits, followed him to the High Realm as well. With the cultivation world's loss of the five spirits' administration, the spiritual energy in the world continued to disappear, and they could not be gathered.

The ones that had the most obvious impact were all the spiritual plants. Without the administration of the Wood Spirit, the spiritual spirits were unable to receive wood spiritual energy, and began to wilt. In less than a hundred years, even the materials for the most common Heart-Raising Pill could no longer be found in the cultivation world. And for the practitioners, because they were no longer able to take in spiritual energy into their bodies, forget about ascension, their cultivation could no longer be raised.

Yet, the human realm was the most unfortunate. Due to the loss of the five Spirits, water could no longer moisturize anything, even regular plants were affected, wilting to death. Fire could no longer counter bacteria, the mortals were infected with strange diseases, and a large number of them died. The earth no longer had life, the soil was no longer able to grow crops. Food were unnecessary to practitioners, however, without food, it was a fatal blow to mortals. Hence, famine was widespread, and the world was littered with corpses.

In just a short span of a few thousand years, not even a single living being could be seen in the entire world, and the world came to an end.

When Zhu Yao saw the figures falling over one after another, and the barren land where one could not even see a single life with a gaze from high above, a heavy sense of sorrow, suddenly pressed onto her, and she could not breathe. That did not come from her own emotions, yet, the heaviness that could stop one from breathing, was as though it was the final scream of this collapsing world.

She felt more and more uncomfortable, and then, when the scenery in front of her suddenly flashed, that feeling instantly disappeared again. She realized she was sitting in her own house.

It was not that natural cottage on Jade Forest Mountain, rather, it was the small seventy-odd square metres apartment she worked hard for a few years to purchase.

She had returned to the modern era!

Zhu Yao looked blankly at all that was familiar in front of her. This was her home. Her room. In front of her was exactly her own computer. And even the cup, which was only printed with a 'y', beside her computer, was exactly the same. She was a little unable to react for a moment.

The QQ-chat on her computer screen suddenly flashed and vibrated, it was a message that came from her colleague Xiao Fang.

Xiao Fang: Boss, the bug you mentioned the other time, have already been settled. You're sure godly! How were you able to identify it? No matter was it during the closed beta or the alpha,

not a single person had realized it!

Zhu Yao startled for a moment, and then, she suddenly recalled. Was this not what her colleague had said before she crossed over into the other world? Back then, she seemed to have been discussing about the newly found bug in the new net-game developed by her company. That was a considerably fatal technical bug, and it was very possible that, due to the imbalanced design, it might cause the entire game system to be in a state of imbalance. If such a game were to really be released, it could bring about a huge loss to the company, and the game would obviously be shut down as well.

However, she was not the one who found this problem. It was her old friend, a player, who had found it.

She moved her mouse to find that particular player's qq account – Realmspirit.

Zhu Yao was in a daze for a moment, yet, she realized that her hands were no longer under her control, and began to type something to him. And, it was even the same exact words she said to him before she crossed into the other world.

Technical Department Zhu Yao: Thank you, the bug informed us of have already been fixed. You helped me once again.

Realmspirit: No problem. I only pointed out where the problem was. The actual person who thought of the solution and moved to fix it was you.

Technical Department Zhu Yao: Haha, I still have to thank you. After all, I have spent my sweat and blood on this game. This game was created with my own hands, and if it were to collapse because of this, I will feel very depressed.

Realmspirit: Are you very concerned about this world?

Technical Department Zhu Yao: Of course. It's my blood and sweat after all?

Realmspirit: I have a world as well, and it has encountered some problems.

Technical Department Zhu Yao: Oh? What game is it? Can I help you?

Realmspirit: You're willing to help me?

Technical Department Zhu Yao: Of course, we should help each other in times of need. I'm still a technical staff, after all. Fixing a bug or two is completely not a problem at all!

Realmspirit: Alright!

Technical Department Zhu Yao: Oh right, what kind of game is it? What kind of problem occurred?

Realmspirit: My problem is...

Before Zhu Yao could see clearly what the problem was, a strong ray of white light pierced towards her, and Zhu Yao suddenly woke up.

She looked at her surroundings a little blankly.

This place was, Jade Forest Mountain. She was still in the cultivation world.

Realmspirit was someone she knew ever since she entered the gaming career five years ago. In the beginning, she simply made a few web browser games, and Realmspirit was her first player. He would frequently give a pertinent opinions on her games, and he would always hit right on mark. Hence, she would make changes based on his opinions.

Replace 'n' with any number you can think of.

Chapter 45: The So-Called Invincibility Mode

After a long time, the two became friends. When she entered a gaming company, and became in-charge of the technical support for a large-scale net game, he followed after her and entered the game she was in-charge of as well, and would always inform her instantly the existences of the bugs in her game, while she was in-charge of undergoing fixes. She had always thought that he was a certain huge figure who was related to game designs, or a professional gamer, and hence the proficiency he demonstrated.

However, the two of them had always contacted each other through the web, and had never seen each other face to face before. Now that she recalled it, she was filled with even more questions. For example, she had once urged him to join the company and work with her in technical support. However, he actually rejected the invitation, and the reason he gave was, he was unable to.

It was not that he did not think of it, nor was he unwilling, he was simply unable to do it.

And the timing she crossed into the other world, seemed to be the moment after she agreed to help him fix bugs, and then, she had already found herself in that small village. She could not help but suspect, if he was a certain supreme individual in this world, who had pulled her into this world to fix a bug.

And the things that were happening on Xiao Yi, they were clearly telling her, that he was that bug! She pondered deeply for a

moment. Although that dream was outrageous, the scenarios that happened at the front, was indeed the same exact things that had happened on Xiao Yi. If her guess was correct, currently, he should not be merely at the early stages of Azoth, rather, he should be a late-stage Azoth practitioner, and was soon to be a Paragon.

She was just a Foundation-stage practitioner, how was she going to fight out with him? Zhu Yao felt completely terrible. What could be more depressing than finding out you had turned into the opposing party after transporting into another world?

Eh, wait a minute! In that dream of hers, she seemed to have not seen herself at all? As though she did not exist at all in the first place. Even Master and Wang Xuzhi were not present.

However, she clearly existed, and even made contact with Xiao Yi. Then, could she think that, her appearance was actually just an accident? After pondering for a moment, if she had not existed, Doctor Wang would not have sent Wang Xuzhi to the Deity's Disciple Selection, and naturally, he would not have went to the Ancient Hill Sect. And because her master was unable to take in a disciple with Lightning Spirit Vein no matter what, he had no choice but to ascend, and hence naturally, he would not appear in the cultivation world. Because of the butterfly effect caused by her appearance, these changes occurred.

When she thought of this, she felt she was really...

Incredible, my ass! In the end, Xiao Yi still obtained the "Metal Spirit". Zhu Yao instantly felt her head aching.

If Xiao Yi was a bug, then what was she? A game master? Haah! She was just a game development staff, it's fine if she had to fix regular bugs in a game, but how the hell could she fix the bug in this world!? And, even if she was a game master, at the very least, there be some game privileges right? For example, Invincibility or something similar.

She suddenly recalled that strange resurrection, where she saw the notification of returning to the resurrection point after her death. She couldn't be able to resurrect infinitely, right!? But what's the point of such a privilege? I can't beat him, so I just have to let him watch me die?

The hell, I don't want such an Invincibility Mode at all! Haah!

Zhu Yao who realized the truth, was depressed for three entire days. She silently pondered about her fate of having to go against the protagonist who had activated his cheat, and picked herself up after three days. She had always been a good and optimistic woman, believing that there could never be an uncrossable threshold in life. As the saying goes, 'as long as you swing your pickaxe well, there's never a wall that you cannot dig.'

So what if he was the protagonist? She was, after all, a game master who had activated her Invincibility Mode (though she did not want it).

Summing it up, Xiao Yi's biggest golden spoons, were the five types of "Spirits", and with the disappearance of these five Spirits,

it caused the world to collapse. Currently, Xiao Yi already had the “Metal Spirit” in his hands, then, he definitely must not possess the remaining four.

“Master, in ten years, it’s the period of time where the ‘Tasyoluk’ Secret Realm is opened, isn’t it?”

Yu Yan looked at her a little strangely. “The Tasyoluk Secret Realm opens once every five hundred years, that time is indeed approaching.” This disciple of his had always been unconcerned with foreign matters, how did she know about this?

Of course she would know. Because, Xiao Yi obtained the “Wood Spirit” in this Secret Realm. Although it was unknown if it was due to his Spirit Veins, what Xiao Yi first found, was the “Metal Spirit” and “Wood Spirit” which corresponded with his own Spirit Veins. And it was because of this, he successfully formed his Azoth Core.

“Master, I wish to go to that Secret Realm as well.”

Yu Yan frowned. Tasyoluk was a mustard seed dimensional space that was left by a supreme individual from the ancient times. It would open once every five hundred years, and although there were countless spiritual grass, spiritual medicine, and various mysterious treasures, danger was widespread as well, and there were even tenth-rank spiritual beasts.

“No. That place is too dangerous, and, you have yet to form your Azoth Core.” Only practitioners who had the cultivation level at the Azoth-stage were able to enter. Practitioners who were below,

or above the Azoth-stage would be automatically bounced out by the formation at the entrance.

“I will form my Azoth Core within ten years!” Zhu Yao was very confident in her comprehension ability.

Yu Yan frowned even deeper. “Even if you form your Azoth Core, you will only have the cultivation of an early-stage Azoth practitioner. Although there are many opportunities in Tasyoluk, this can only be discussed when you have the ability to defend yourself.”

He had once entered that Secret Realm as well. Back then, he was an Azoth Paragon, and even with that level of cultivation, he still found it very strenuous inside. Even it was simply the outer sector, many sixth and seventh rank spiritual beasts were gathered there, and the further one proceeded towards the core, the more dangerous it was. There had never been anyone to reach the core. At least, she had to be an Azoth Paragon before trying it out. “When the next time it opens, master will not stop you!”

“Master, I must go.” Next time, there will no longer be a next time. Because, she clearly knew that, after Xiao Yi brings out the “Wood Spirit”, the entire Secret Realm will collapse, and there will no longer be a “Tasyoluk”.

“I have my own reasons, however, it’s still too inconvenient to tell this to anyone right now. Master, please grant my request.”

Yu Yan went silent for a moment. His stupid disciple rarely

requested something from him this seriously. He recalled the last time she begged him, was to give Zi Mo's stinky brat a defensive mystic artifact. He did not allow it, and in the end, she never returned. He suddenly felt a little worried. Would she not return again if he were to deny her request this time?

Zhu Yao silently waited, yet, her heart was determined. No matter if he allowed her or not, she would still go. At most, she could sneak into the place.

After a while, Yu Yan stood up, and seemed to be taking something out from his storage ring. A moment later, his hand was grabbing onto a purple lightning that was still flashing and making thundering noises. Just how the hell did he keep something like this?

Zhu Yao looked at him dumbfoundedly. Master, what are you doing? Even if he was angry, he should not hold onto a lightning and strike her with it, right?

“Follow me!” Yu Yan signalled her to catch up to him, and with a turn of his body, he headed towards the direction of the cold lake at the mountain peak.

Standing next to the cold lake, Yu Yan waved his hand and cast a water separating Mystic Art. The lake which was still emitting out a heavily cold chill, suddenly, as though it had been sliced, opened up into two halves. And, the lake which lacked the body of water, was completely dark, as the bottom of the lake was too deep to be seen.

However, Yu Yan did not stop, and directly walked down the passageway opened up by the separated waters.

Only then did Zhu Yao realized that there were layers of stairs next to the lake, which stretched all the way downwards to the bottom of the lake, and master was currently walking down those stairs. Zhu Yao did not hesitate, and hurriedly followed after him.

Chapter 46: The Promised Protagonist's Cheat

The deeper they went, the darker it became, and it looked as though there were completely no light in the place. And, it reached to the point where there were not even a bit of light from the surroundings, and only the purple lightning in Yu Yan's hands was flashing with crackling noises. Zhu Yao could not help but grab onto the corner of the person's clothes in front of her, as she was afraid of stepping onto empty air, and make a huge slip. That would be too embarrassing.

Yu Yan who was grabbed onto, startled for a moment. Thinking that the person behind him was his own stupid disciple, he did not stop her, and continued to bring her down.

Not knowing how long they had walked, Zhu Yao felt a white light flashing right in front of her, and then, as though a black curtain had been suddenly pulled open, her surroundings began to light up.

This was a spacious stone room. Only a "prayer mat" was placed right at the center, and there were no other furnitures in the surroundings. It seemed like a regular training cave residence, however, the surroundings were filled with lightning spiritual energy, letting her feel especially comfortable.

Yu Yan walked to the center of the stone room, he raised his hand, and threw the purple lightning high in the air. Only then did Zhu Yao realize that, above her, was actually a huge floating pool of water. The entire sight of the lake could be seen from here

clearly, and she could even faintly see the scenery at the banks of the lake. They were under the lake. This was challenging the principle of gravity, causing her to feel extremely astonished.

“Master, master, why isn’t the water pouring down?” She was like a country bumpkin, pointing to the ceiling.

Very naturally, she received her master’s rolling eyes. “Formation!” As expected of his stupid disciple. “This place is where your master usually train in. In these few years, you can use this place to form your Azoth Core.”

So her master frequently used this place to train. It’s little wonder why he would go missing frequently.

Yu Yan looked at that purple lightning which he had already fixated in the air above. “This is the Nine Heavenly Lightning, you can guide out the lightning spiritual energy you need from it.”

Nine Heavenly Lightning, was it not the Ascension Tribulation Lightning? Master could even capture bolts of lightning as well?

Zhu Yao sensed it for a moment, and indeed, the surrounding lightning spiritual energy had gotten denser. Obediently sitting at the center of the formation, she sat in the lotus position and began to meditate. Using the method to guide spiritual energy into her body she learnt before, she slowly allowed the lightning spiritual energy into her body. Because she had the prior experience, she no longer felt the pain she had when the spiritual energy went berserk the other time, and her entire body simply felt comfortable.

Yu Yan observed at the side for a moment, and only felt at ease after realizing that nothing abnormal was occurring to his disciple. After pondering for a moment, he took out a few more bolts of lightning that were exactly the same as the previous one, fixated them high in the air, before leaving without any worry. The Nine Heavenly Lightning was indeed the Ascension Tribulation Lightning, so the amount of lightning spiritual energy contained in it was the largest as well. Usually, it could not be easily seen easily, and these bolts of lightning were something he captured by chance from the Abyssal Lands.

His disciple only had to guide spiritual energy into her body to cause the spiritual energy to go berserk. These bolts of lightning, no longer required to take in any other lightning spiritual energy, so they were just right for aiding his disciple in her cultivation.

With this one period of meditation, Zhu Yao had meditated for two years. When she woke up, her body had already accumulated a layer of dust. With just a casual pat, it brought about a small-scaled sandstorm, choking her, and she could not help but cough a few times.

When she was about to raise her hand and cast the Dirt Removal Art, she glanced at the clear water above her, and decided to head out to wash herself. Although Dirt Removal Art was convenient, as someone who was used to bathing, she still felt she was not clean enough after using it, this might be probably a form of psychological disorder of cleanliness in another meaning as well.

The moment she left the bottom of the lake, she saw a piece of

lotus leaf being placed next to the lake. On the leaf, was a neatly arranged set of clothes, and looking at the style and size, it should be hers. She instantly realized who placed it here.

As expected, master was her [caring little jacket](#), his life skills were all maxed out, and she gave him a huge thumbs up.

She picked up the clothes and realized, other than the clothes, there was a bottle of pellets as well. Master had always discouraged her from eating medicinal pellets to raise her cultivation, so why would he place a bottle of pellets here? She curiously poured some of the contents out, and realized they were actually candies.

The hell! Only her body would change into a child's, she's not actually a child, alright? What point was he trying to get by placing candies here!?

Zhu Yao poured out a bunch of them, and stuffed them into her mouth out of anger, making 'kuchi kuchi' sounds as she chewed. Mn, the taste is pretty good.

Patting away the crumbs of candies in her hands, she stripped off entirely and dove into the lake. This was a cold lake, so the water was very cold in the first place, however, to practitioners, the temperature was just right. Zhu Yao cleaned the dust off her body, and could not help but start to inspect this cold lake.

Actually, this cold lake was pretty big. It's unknown how much larger it was compared to the modern pools either. The lake was deep as well, and it was basically impossible to see the bottom of

the lake from the top. However, mystically, the stone room below could clearly see what was happening at the top. It was good that there was currently no one at the bottom lake.

Wait a minute! She seemed to have frequently come over here to bathe in the past, and she was always stark naked, while below her was the stone room her master usually used to train... Then did that not mean she...

The hell! Suddenly, her entire body felt extremely uncomfortable. Master, let us talk about life!

However, when she recalled that when she was a child, she had already been bathed by him countless of times, and she was always stark naked then as well, suddenly, she no longer felt that uncomfortable. As expected, she no longer had any morals left to speak of! Those morals of hers had already been scrubbed off, and she was already used to it.

Zhu Yao bathed for nearly an hour, before crawling out of the water. After changing into the clothes on the bank of the lake, stuffing another bunch of candies into her mouth, she was just about to return to training, only to suddenly sense a spiritual energy disturbance at the Sword Mountain. And this spiritual power was very familiar, it was Wang Xuzhi's!

Zhu Yao was a little worried, however, she realized bunch of dark clouds suddenly gathered in the sky above the Sword Mountain, and not a moment later, the sky over that had already darkened. Those were Tribulation Clouds, little wimp was about to form his Azoth Core!

She was a little shocked, however, immediately after, she was relieved. So many years had passed, with his talent, he should have formed his Azoth Core long before. However, because of her own death, the knot in his heart was unresolved, thus, causing his cultivation to stagnate. Currently, it seemed like her words earlier, were still of use. He had thought it through.

Wang Xuzhi's Azoth Tribulation Clouds were not as exaggerated as Xiao Yi's, the Tribulation Clouds did not cover the entire sky either. There were no land covered in complete darkness, no flying sands and rocks. It simply followed the regulations and covered only a small piece of the sky above the Sword Mountain, and the Heavenly Lightning that struck down was exactly eighty-one times, not more, not less, nor was there a cheeky Tribulation Lightning running towards her. Of course, there was no special phenomenon in the sky, once the Tribulation Clouds had finished striking, they quickly called it a day, and dispersed completely and cleanly.

Zhu Yao waited for a moment, only after she once again sensed Wang Xuzhi's spiritual power, did she finally feel at ease. It seemed like he broke through, and had successfully raised his cultivation. After all, he was a child that she had personally seen growing up, Zhu Yao felt a little satisfied in her heart. And then, her thoughts instantly made a turn, she was still a Foundation-stage practitioner, and did not even have a trace of forming his Azoth Core. She instantly felt extremely terrible.

A good comparison to this was, when she was young, her teacher had assigned students into small help groups of two, one with good results, and the other with poor results. She had initially been one

of those children with good results, and she wholeheartedly helped the child with poor results with his studies. In the end, when the result slip came in, his score was actually higher than hers. She felt extremely terrible, and could barely hold it in at all.

The hell, what happened to the promised cheat for the protagonist who's here to save the world!?

Caring Little Jacket: Usually, it's used to describe the parents' daughter, as the daughter is both kind and knows how it feels like to be a parent.

Chapter 47: The Round Azoth Core

Returning to the stone room, Zhu Yao worked even harder in her cultivation, and she constantly took in the spiritual energy from the purple bolts of lightning above, while those purple bolts of lightning began to slowly disappear as well. When two bolts of lightning completely dispersed, Zhu Yao finally felt that familiar pain.

However, forming her Azoth Core was different compared to that of building her Foundation. Foundation only required to break through the limitations of the tendons in one's body, and it could be made possible simply by expanding one's amount of spiritual energy absorbed. However, Azoth required the spiritual energy to be compressed and stored. This process required one to be extremely careful, just a slight mistake could cause one's cinnabar to shatter, and the breakthrough would fail.

Zhu Yao looked internally for a moment, she realized that the lightning spiritual energy had already been completely filled, and they began to rush out in all directions. If this was to keep up, it would definitely tear apart her meridians. She had no choice but to endure the terrible pain, and according to the method taught by her master, she slowly guided the spiritual energy into her cinnabar, and then, compressed the lightning spiritual energy together.

It sounded simple, however, in actual fact, controlling it was extremely difficult. She was not a compressor after all, and, spiritual energy never had a physical body in the first place, so how could it decrease in size whenever she wanted it to?

No matter how she guided the spiritual energy with her will, when the spiritual energy at one side was suppressed, the other side would bulge up, it was very hard to control. Unless there was a sort of energy that could prevent the spiritual energy from flowing everywhere, and have them gather at one point.

Zhu Yao pondered deeply for a moment, and she did not know why, but she suddenly thought of centrifugal forces. If a substance were to continuously revolve in the same direction, it would then gather at one point. It's similar to stirring water in a cup in the same direction, it would form a swirl with a point as its center. If she were to suppress the spiritual energy while it's spiraling with a point at the center, it could roll into a ball, like that of a dustball?

Thinking of this method, she immediately circulated the spiritual energy in her cinnabar, and she constantly moved it in a spiraling method in a specific direction at high speed. As expected, at the center of the spiral, the pressure slowly suppressed the spiritual energy into a dot. That dot was extremely small, yet, as the amount of spiritual energy entering it increased, the dot slowly began to expand, from a dot, it became the size of a bean. However, the spiritual energy in her body had already been depleted.

She could not help but continue to rapidly absorb spiritual energy, a huge amount of spiritual energy entered her body, yet, it was instantly absorbed into the revolving spiral in her cinnabar, and the bean became bigger and bigger. And the remaining five bolts of lightning in the stone room were beginning to disappear at a speed that could be seen with the naked eyes.

When Yu Yan came in, he just happened to see the final bolt of lightning disappear. He quickly took out another three bolts, and threw it upwards, narrowly preventing the violent turbulence of spiritual energy from happening once again. He turned to look at his disciple in the middle of the room. It was as though she was surrounded by a huge amount of lightning spiritual energy particles, and those lightning spiritual energy particles seemed to have received a command, circling around her in a certain direction.

Although he knew that his disciple had extremely high affinity with lightning spiritual energy, this was still the first time he had ever seen such obedient lightning spiritual energy particles. It was as though, they were revolving completely according to her intentions.

Not knowing how long had passed, only when Zhu Yao felt that bean in her body had slowly grew into the size of a pearl, and could no longer circulate anymore spiritual energy, did she finally stop.

The Azoth Core had been formed.

Only then did Zhu Yao finally heave a sigh of relief. Opening her eyes, she just happened to see Yu Yan who had a stern expression, sitting right in front of her.

“Master? Are you here to help me protect the formation?”

“Mn!” Yu Yan made a response. Reaching out his finger, he tapped on the center of her forehead. “Relax, let me see your

Dantian.”

A cooling air directly rushed into her cinnabar, out of reflex, Zhu Yao had wanted to stop it, however, when she heard his words, she relaxed once again.

Yu Yan inspected her cinnabar, and as expected, he saw a round silver-colored Core floating there. It was filled with spiritual energy, and there were hints of lightning sparks circling its vicinity. When he took a closer look, there were even lines of purple markings.

Yu Yan felt even more strange. In usual Azoth Cores, rarely would there be such a round sphere with completely no edges. It had to be known that suppressing spiritual energy was something that was strenuous on the mind, energy consuming, and time consuming. It was impossible to achieve without even a slight slip up. Hence, the shapes of everyone's Azoth Cores would be different, but generally speaking, there would all be dents and edges in them.

This Azoth Cores his disciple had... there's none on it at all!

Yu Yan retracted his hand, and looked at Zhu Yao for a moment. He was beginning to understand this disciple of his less and less.

“Master, master. How is it, how is it?” Although she had formed her Azoth Core, she herself still did not have any notion of it.

Yu Yan was silent for a moment, before nodding his head. “Not bad! Your Azoth Core is much more condensed than regular people.”

Hearing such a praise from him, Zhu Yao completely entered her show-off mode. “Hahahaha, I knew that I’m incredible. Master, you saw that I have formed my Azoth Core, is there any reward for me?”

Zhu Yao stretched out her hand, and revealed a expression that was begging for praise and and rewards.

Yu Yan was startled for a moment. Looking at her eyes which were about to emit out stars, he casually nodded. He should indeed reward her for forming her Azoth Core, and casually took out a bottle and placed it on her hand.

Zhu Yao’s eyes instantly shone brighter, and immediately opened the cap of the bottle and looked inside. Her earlier excited expression, instantly completely darkened.

The hell, why are they candies!?

Raising her head, she looked towards a certain master who had a calm expression. What to do? She felt like destroying her master.

“Master...” Zhu Yao planned on chatting with her master about the problem regarding his education methods, yet, when she stood up, she suddenly stepped on something, and putong, she fell onto

the ground.

She looked at her body strangely, and then, she suddenly realized the sleeves of her clothes and pants had grown larger.

Hell! Why did I turn back into a child!?

Because forming the Azoth Core had used up all of Zhu Yao's spiritual energy in her body, she returned back into the figure she was supposed to have, the figure of a seven year old. That's right, she spent seven years before she finally formed her Azoth Core.

Master said that she had only just formed her Core, when her realm had stabilized, the situation of her turning into a child like this would no longer happen.

After forming her Core, there would be a huge Lightning Tribulation, she only had to step outside of the stone room to sense it, and the Lightning Tribulation would then fall. But, in her current situation, it would be very dangerous for her to leave, hence, the best plan was to first charge up her battery-no wait, restore her spiritual power before leaving the stone room. There was an isolation formation set up here, so temporarily, she would not be found by the Lightning Tribulation.

Hence, she had no choice but to continue meditating, and take in spiritual energy. She raised her head and glanced at the last bolt of purple lightning which had already thinned by a large amount at the ceiling. A little jokingly, Zhu Yao said this. "Don't be anxious, I will eat you later."

The moment those words fell, that bolt of lightning which had been quietly emitting out light, suddenly trembled coquettishly, releasing out even louder crackling noises. It looked so excited, it was as though it had taken in stimulants.

Zhu Yao was a little speechless. Never did she know that these bolts of lightning actually had masochistic characteristics, and would be so excited after hearing that they would be eaten.

That bolt of lightning trembled even more happily, Zhu Yao decided to increase her pace, and hurriedly ate it.

After spending another half a day worth of effort, Zhu Yao's spiritual power was finally restored, and her body was filled with energy as well... No, she had returned to her teenage girl figure, however, she had yet to completely absorb that bolt of lightning.

"I'm going!" Zhu Yao waved her hand, and left the stone room.

That bolt of lightning, stretched into a bent shape, and shook towards her as well, as though it was waving her goodbye.

Zhu Yao's expression darkened. Could it be that bolts of lightning could turn into spirits as well?

Chapter 48: Cultivation Requires Entrance Examinations

When she came out, Yu Yan was already waiting for her.

He had set up a couple of formations on the empty space next to the lake, which could help her defend against the Lightning Tribulation. Under Yu Yan's instructions, Zhu Yao sat at the core of the formation. All preparations were ready, now, she only had to wait for the Heavenly Lightning to fall.

Zhu Yao took a deep breath, looked at the wide sky, and then...

The sun went down.

The hell, where's the promised Lightning Tribulation!?

Zhu Yao who had waited for an entire day, turned around, seeking assistance. "Master..." Why were there not any bolts of Tribulation Lightning? She clearly had formed her Azoth Core! When it was time to strike, it did not come, when it was not supposed to strike, it deliberately struck her! There's definitely a problem with this world!

Yu Yan did not know what was going on either. Logically speaking, his disciple was indeed at the Azoth-stage, and with the shape of her Core, the might of her Lightning Tribulation should not be weak either, hence, he made such preparations. However, it had been an entire day, yet, there was not even a single movement

in the sky.

“Return for now!” He had no other ideas either. There were too many strange things happening on his disciple, he had already gotten used to it.

Zhu Yao nodded, and crawled up. Though, to practitioners, not being struck by lightning was a good thing, because, they would have one less tribulation to go through. However, why did she feel a strange dissatisfaction for being tricked?

“Wait a minute!” Yu Yan suddenly reached out his hand to stop her, and with a stern expression, he looked towards the sky. “There’s the presence of Tribulation Clouds.”

Zhu Yao immediately raised her head anxiously and looked towards the sky as well. Currently, it was already evening, and the sky was already half-darkened, yet, there was still a slight glow of light. After staring for a moment, suddenly, she saw a Tribulation Cloud floating over.

But...

Why the momma’s egg was it so small?

Zhu Yao stared dumbfoundedly at the Tribulation Cloud that had the size of a basin. It looked as though it had rushed here hastily, as it floated very comically. It was floating towards her while leaking out air...

It was just like a car's exhaust puffing out exhaust gas. Every single puff, the cloud would shrink a little, and when it arrived above her head, it had already shrunk into the size of a bowl.

The key point was, the cloud had little sense of direction as well, as it accidentally floated past her head. And after pausing for a moment, it floated back towards her head.

The Tribulation Cloud finally stopped moving above her head, and then, as though it was brewing something, it stopped for probably a few moments, before the sounds of crackling could be heard. Within the clouds, a thin thread-like bolt of lightning was released, and it came striking down towards her.

And then...

It stopped!

The Tribulation Lightning stopped. It stopped at a place two steps away from her. It shook about frustratedly, and then, it nestled against her face. Bachi!

Zhu Yao: "....."

Yu Yan: "....."

Bachi! Bachi bachi, your sister! Don't you dare tell me you're a

bolt of Tribulation Lightning!

Unfortunately, that bolt of lightning had already disappeared, and then... the Tribulation Cloud floated away!

The cloud floated away... floated away... away!

Momma's egg! Just what the hell happened? Are you guys sent by the heavens to act all cutesy?

The master and disciple duo was stunned for a period of a few minutes before they finally reacted.

“Yu Wang?”

“Ah?”

“Nothing.”

“Oh.”

“.....”

“.....”

After a while, Yu Yan silently kept the formations on the ground. Stroking the head of his disciple who had already been completely

shocked silly, he suddenly understood a little why his disciple was stupid to this extent, it was actually caused by her environment.

“First, return and have some rest. I will teach you Mystic Arts tomorrow!”

“Ou!”

A moment later...

“Your sister’s Desire!”

Zhu Yao was shocked. She was deeply shocked. Recalling Xiao Yi who had activated his protagonist’s cheat, during the Lightning Tribulation he experienced, the entire Ancient Hill Sect was covered by the Tribulation Clouds. That atmosphere and that extravagance, especially that gigantic dragon, that emitted out an imposing aura with the first half of its body, and brought about strong winds with the latter half of its body, just by recalling it, she could feel the domineering pressure leaking out!

Even if she did not bring up the protagonist’s cheat, even Wang Xuzhi, that little wimp’s Lightning Tribulation, at the least, even covered the entire Sword Mountain, and actual bolts of Tribulating Lightning rang throughout the clouds.

Why did hers, turn into a basin...

She felt extremely saddened due to the basin tribulation.

However, time still had to pass. Her master had already agreed to her entering the ‘Tasyoluk’ Secret Realm. Although she did not know the reason for his compromise, to her, it was still a good thing.

She had to find the “Wood Spirit” before Xiao Yi. Xiao Yi had the Metal and Wood Dual Spirit Veins, and he who had already obtained the “Metal Spirit”, his cultivation had already rose so quickly, let alone adding another “Wood Spirit”. She believed that, by then, there’s no other humans capable of stopping him from raising his cultivation.

So, she must definitely not let him obtain the “Wood Spirit”.

However, with her cultivation, she was unable to go into a direct conflict with him. Hence, unprecedentedly, Zhu Yao began to work hard in her cultivation. She seemed to have pulled out the momentum she had during her studies for her entrance examinations in the past, and continued to cultivate throughout the day and night. And, she realized that there were many Mystic Arts in this world which were similar to those in games. As a game development staff, she was able to accept the principles very easily.

However, even if that’s the case, she still spent three entire years to completely master them.

Bang!

Zhu Yao was struck down by a certain master, for the three

thousand, five hundred and sixty ninth time. Spitting out the weeds that had entered her mouth, Zhu Yao stood up. Swinging the long sword in her hands, she said. “Again!”

Flying, she pounced towards him. She had always believed the best method to improve her techniques, was actual battles. Hence, in these three years, what she had done the most, was to get beaten up.

Uh... No, wait a minute, it's getting master to spar with her.

However, the level differences between her and Yu Yan was not just by a small margin. Even if she were to compete with him in pure sword techniques, basically, she could not escape the fate of sticking to the ground.

Even after three years of hard work, she was still unable to take more than a single blow from her master.

She had already grown accustomed to it...

Another resounding bang!

The three thousand, five hundred and seventieth time!

“Again!”

Zhu Yao continued to pounce towards him. This time, Yu Yan did

not retaliate, he simply waved his hand, and his disciple's long sword had automatically flew into his hands.

“There's no need to train any longer today!”

“Ah?” Before, had they not always trained till dusk? Zhu Yao was a little stunned. Master is treating me too well, I simply can't believe it.

Yu Yan approached her, reached out his hand and stroked her head. However, his brows furrowed. “Do you still insist on going to ‘Tasyoluk’?”

Zhu Yao nodded. “I have to go!” She did not dare to casually say she was going to save the world or anything. However, since she had already arrived in this world, if it's something she could do, she would give her best to do so.

Yu Yan lightly sighed, and was even more worried. Why couldn't his disciple be a little more stupid? “Tomorrow is the day when the Secret Realm opens. You have to make your preparations early.”

“Thank you, master!” So this was why he stopped the training.

“Follow me!” Yu Yan turned and walked towards the cottage.

Zhu Yao hurriedly caught up to him. She saw him place her sword on the table, and even took out the tassel from his own sword. After pondering for a moment, he took out another bell

which was as white as jade, and weaved them together. Then, he tied it onto her sword, before passing it to her.

“Try inserting your spiritual power.”

Zhu Yao skeptically picked it up, and circulated her spiritual power. She then saw the blade of her sword suddenly being covered by the purple light of lightning, and it was now a sword with lightning imbued in it.

“This sword tassel carries my imprint, and could be used to block an attack of full power by practitioners at the Azoth-stage and below. And I have sealed a bolt of Nine Heavenly Lightning in that bell, and as long as you insert your spiritual power, it will be attached onto the blade. Every swing of your sword, will be equal to using a single Lightning Art.”

Chapter 49: Setting Off To Tasyoluk

Zhu Yao widened her eyes out of excitement. This was the Nine Heavenly Lightning, and with this, even if she were to encounter a demonic beast that's of a higher rank than her, she would not need to be afraid.

“Master, you're the best!” So moving!

Yu Yan did not reply, and simply stretched out his hand towards her hair which was already a pile of mess, messing it up even more. Looking at his stupid disciple who was still smiling sillily, he became more and more worried. His disciple was so stupid, yet, she still liked to head to dangerous places. Back then, she had already lost her life once, this time, he was even more worried. No, I have to give her a few more guarantees.

“The dangers in ‘Tasyoluk’ are widespread. Master cannot be by your side, you have to pay more attention by yourself. This sword, can only be used to attack. You have to be on your guard at all times!” After pondering for a moment, he took out a defensive mystic robe from his storage ring. “Wear this.”

Zhu Yao looked at that gold sparkling mystic robe, which was sparkling so bright, it almost blinded her eyes. She spoke up weakly. “Master, this isn't suitable, right?”

“You don't like it?” Yu Yan frowned, and took out another one. “Then this set of robes. A defensive formation has been placed on it, and it is able to defend against any Mystic Art attacks for fifteen

minutes.”

“Uh...” This set was not sparkling gold, however, it was bright red and purple in color, and was embroidered with a bunch of flowers, as though it was welcoming the new year. She didn’t dare to wear it at all.

“You do not want it either?” Yu Yan frowned even deeper, and continued to pull out another one. “Then, this one.”

“.....” This set was not sparkling, nor was it bright red and purple in color. However, master, why the hell are there so many gems sewn onto it!? She was not going out to sell merchandises!

Zhu Yao speechlessly looked at her master who had already activated the River God mode, and then, once again looked at the three set of clothes on the table. She could faintly see the words “So silly” being written on the first set of clothes, “yet so rich” on the second set, and “hurry and steal him away!” on the third set.

She was clearly heading out to steal an item, she did not want to change her objective into stealing a [rural landlord](#)!

Finally, under her firm refusal, her master could only regretfully keep the items, and he looked at her with a complicated expression. My disciple is so stupid, she will be bullied when she goes out, won’t she? She will definitely be bullied, won’t she? She will totally be bullied, won’t she?

Zhu Yao could only use rest as her excuse, and escaped.

Having a master who loved to worry, the pressure on her was immense.

Finally, it was the day of the opening of the ‘Tasyoluk’ Secret Realm. Zhu Yao arranged a few life necessities, and prepared to head to the Main Mountain’s open field, to gather for the instance dungeon run. Right before she left, her master actually popped out all of a sudden again. Zhu Yao’s heart trembled, afraid that he would once again pull out some gold and sparkling item for her to bring along.

Fortunately, this time, master was more reasonable. He simply took out a jade pendant necklace, and wore it for her.

“You must remember to wear this at all times. It must not leave your body, understand?”

Yu Yan said very seriously, and completely did not have the unreasonable look he usually had. Zhu Yao instantly felt that this must definitely be some sort of very incredible Mystic Tool. She stuffed it into her chest, placed it at a position which was in contact with her body, and patted it twice.

“Master, don’t worry. Wherever the jade is, I will be there too!”

However, Yu Yan’s expression was a little strange, he stared at the collar where she placed the necklace into for a moment, before

turning away and leaving without saying anything.

Zhu Yao inexplicably curled her lips, and flew away from the Jade Forest Mountain with a flying sword.

After going through the demonic training in these few years, her fear of heights had been completely cured. She was finally able to safely become a bird-woman.

The moment when she flew away from Jade Forest Mountain, Yu Yan had sensed it. Turning his head, he looked towards the direction his stupid disciple left in, and deeply sighed. As expected, he was still unable to put his heart at ease. Suddenly, he once again recalled the scene when his disciple placed the jade pendant on her chest, his face strangely grew a little hotter. Was it because of the weather today?

There were about a dozen of people in the group, and there were actually four or five female disciples among them as well. In their eyes, without exception, all of them were sparkling with lights of love, and were currently circling around a man, conversing with him. The black bolded “BUG” word on the man’s face, even if she did not want to recognize that he was Xiao Yi, it was impossible.

As expected of the protagonist’s cheat, the women would instantly feel uncomfortable if they did not stick to him.

“Little Bun!” Her shoulder was patted on, and when Zhu Yao turned her head, she just happened to see Wang Xuzhi. Zhu Yao was startled for a moment, and when she thought about it, it was

understandable. He had formed his Azoth Core, so obviously, he would go as well.

“You formed your Azoth Core?” Wang Xuzhi was very astonished, after all, he did not see anyone forming the Azoth Core in the Ancient Hill Sect in the recent years.

“I have just returned from field training. I formed my Azoth Core outside.” Zhu Yao casually came up with an excuse. She really did not wish to bring up that washbasin tribulation.

I see. Wang Xuzhi nodded, and then, continued to ask in surprise. “You’re going into ‘Tasyoluk’ as well?”

“Yeah! A Secret Realm that only opens once every five hundred years, obviously, I can’t miss out on it.”

“But, you have just formed your Azoth Core.” Wang Xuzhi showed his disapproval. “‘Tasyoluk’ is extremely dangerous. It’s stated in the legends that, even a Demigod-stage expert would not be completely safe when venturing into its core area. Why don’t you...”

“My master has agreed to it!” Zhu Yao interrupted his words.

Wang Xuzhi felt it was not his place to oppose her either. Looking at her a little worriedly, he still could not help but remind her. “Later, after we enter, remember to stick close to me. It’s fine to stay at the outer areas, don’t head deep into the center of the place,

understand?”

Little wimp, are you caring for me? Zhu Yao felt a little pleased, and could not help but stretch out her hand and stroke this man who was even taller than she was. “I understand! Senior, martial, brother, Wang!”

Wang Xuzhi was stunned for a moment, and simply stared at her blankly. After a while, he finally sighed and regained his senses. He pretended to be angry and lectured her. “Mischievous!” At that moment, he actually thought he was looking at big sister Zhu Yao. As expected, was it because his obsession was too deep?

“This little martial sister, we meet again.” Out of nowhere, Xiao Yi popped out. His dimples showed when he smiled towards her, and instantly, the protagonist’s cheat was fully activated. Sizing Zhu Yao up, he asked in amazement. “Little martial sister, you formed your Azoth Core?”

Ever since he came over, Wang Xuzhi’s expression was ugly. Although the knot in his heart had been resolved, he still hated the person whom he hates. Before Zhu Yao could even react, he had already side stepped and forcefully inserted himself between them. Staring at him defensively, he rightly pulled Zhu Yao behind his back.

“Senior-martial uncle Xiao, what you said was incorrect. You’re Sovereign Feng Yi’s personal succeeding disciple, according to seniority, we should be calling you senior-martial uncle, so how could she be your little martial sister!”

“Seniority is only a form of addressing others, I do not mind at all.” Towards Wang Xuzhi’s causing a scene, Xiao Yi was a little displeased.

“Senior-martial uncle do not mind, but this junior minds.” Don’t think of using the martial brother and sister trick to approach her. Little Bun was big sister Zhu Yao’s junior-martial sister, he had to protect her. “If other people were to know of this, they would think that we don’t know our courtesies.”

As expected, Xiao Yi’s expression darkened. Although he knew that Wang Xuzhi had always been unhappy with him, he never expected that Wang Xuzhi would challenge him by himself. As expected, these so-called Inner Sect disciples, were all who did not know the meaning of death. Xiao Yi held in the anger in his heart, looking at the cute little martial sister behind him who was blinking her pair of black grape-like eyes, his tone could not help but soothe down. “Little martial... niece, I wonder which Mountain you’re a disciple of?”

After saying that, he smiled coldly towards Wang Xuzhi. Didn’t you say we can’t forget about our courtesies? Could it be that you’re also able to stop a senior from asking a question?

Chapter 50: Outsiders Watching The Commotion

As expected, Wang Xuzhi frowned. He could not chase him away directly, and he would not feel at ease by moving aside either. He could only block in front of Zhu Yao, and was stuck in a difficult position.

Zhu Yao felt it was a little funny as she watched little wimp behaving like a protective mother hen, blocking in front of her. Her heart was filled with warmth, and had a feeling of ‘my son has finally grown up, and knows how to protect this elderly woman’.

Seeing such a heart-warming little wimp, how could she not give him face?

“Kuh kuh...” She pretended to cough, and did her best to act out a cute, naive and oblivious look. With widened eyes, she looked straight at Xiao Yi, and said. “Who are you?”

Xiao Yi: “.....”

“Tasyoluk” was positioned at a barren land north of the cultivation world. Because of the scattered spiritual energy, and the countless cliffs everywhere, not mentioning mortals, even practitioners would not usually step into this piece of land. However, every five hundred years, the entrance to the Secret Realm would open. Inside, the place was filled with spiritual energy, and spiritual grass were widespread. Although usually,

great opportunities would be accompanied by great dangers, every single time, the various clans and sects would still dispatch their elites to search for these opportunities.

However, only practitioners whose cultivation were below the Nascent Soul stage could enter the Secret Realm. So, every single time, those dispatched were all Azoth-stage elites, and this was a very important matter to every sect.

Zhu Yao had already felt that the number of people heading there from her sect was large enough, however, when she arrived at the designated location, she actually saw disciples from the various clans and sects had already gathered at the place, and there were even some wandering practitioners as well. The entire place was filled with practitioners, and she did not even see this much people in the previous Inter-Sect Tournament.

She roughly estimated the number of people to be in the high thousands.

The various sect disciples were all lead by their respective Nascent Soul stage practitioners. Their clothes were uniform, and they were even standing together, so they were very easily recognizable. The wandering practitioners were basically segregated, however, there were a few of them that were in small groups of four or five.

This time, Ancient Hill Sect especially dispatched the two great Mountain Lords of Sword Mountain and Talisman Mountain to send them over. Beside the Weapon Mountain Lord Zi Yuan, he was accompanied by a very familiar person. It was actually little

fatty Zhao. She did not expect that he had actually formed his Azoth Core as well.

The current little fatty Zhao had properly kept his initial unique trait, and had turned into big fatty Zhao. It was unknown if it was due to his figure, the arrogant and tyrannical look he had when he was young had disappeared, rather, he seemed to be rather pleasant and charming. He seemed to have something on his mind, and completely did not have the look of excitement and eagerness like the rest of the people in the vicinity.

Zhu Yao had been pulled along by Wang Xuzhi the entire time, as though he was afraid that she would get herself lost. Along the way, he had repeatedly instructed her to stay away from Xiao Yi, and not to easily trust him. His constant nagging made him look exactly like a mother.

“It’s here.” A commotion suddenly started within the crowd, and instantly, the entire site became especially noisy.

Most of the people had already raised their heads and looked towards the sky. They simply saw the sky which was initially still clear and quiet. Suddenly, like it was being torn apart by something, a gigantic crack appeared, as though it was splitting the entire sky into two halves. The crack grew bigger and bigger, and only when it grew the size whereby a dozen people could enter it at the same time, did it finally stop expanding.

The people below could not wait any longer, as they took out their swords one after another and flew into the crack. However, the ones that moved were just the wandering practitioners. After

all, the disciples from the various sects still had to attend to their courtesies, and they still stood unmoving in their original positions.

A Nascent Soul-stage practitioner walked over, and smiled at the two people who came to lead the Ancient Hill Sect group. “Dear Reverends, as there are so many disciples from your Ancient Hill Sect, why don’t your group enter first?”

Zi Yuan seemed to have been waiting for these words, and did not decline. He turned and said to the fifty or so Azoth disciples behind him. “This journey will be dangerous, everyone, please remember to not act recklessly at all times. The entrance will close in a month’s time, everyone must make haste to return before the entrance closes.”

Everyone’s voices were in unison as they replied. “Yes!”

Zi Yuan waved his hand, and the disciples summoned their flying swords one after another, flying towards the entrance.

“Be careful, follow me closely!” Wang Xuzhi turned to the back as he spoke, and then, pulled Zhu Yao as they flew towards the entrance. When she entered the entrance, the jade pendant on Zhu Yao’s neck flashed for a moment, before instantly reverting to its initial look. However, no one noticed this.

After entering, what came into view was a different scenery. In front was a humongous forest where its boundaries could not be seen with a single glance. The disciples that entered earlier had

already scattered, and in their current position, there were only the dozen few Ancient Hill Sect disciples who had just entered.

Zhu Yao, who was used to following a group, naturally flew over as well, however, she realized they were saying their goodbyes. It seemed like these people had already decided on their groups since the beginning, and had already scattered after entering inside. Zhu Yao who was left behind was a little speechless, as she tugged onto Wang Xuzhi beside her. “Who are we going to go with?”

Wang Xuzhi pointed to Xiao Yi in front of him, and his expression was a little unhappy. “Master had instructed me to follow senior-martial uncle Xiao’s group.”

Zhu Yao looked at Wang Xuzhi who was extremely unwilling, yet, in her heart, she was a little happy. She did not know the exact location of the “Wood Spirit”, and in her dream, she simply saw that Xiao Yi would find it in an ancient ruin. However, as for the location of that ruin, she still did not know of it. And she was still worried that she did not have an excuse to follow Xiao Yi just earlier.

Little fatty Zhao was the last to enter the Secret Realm, and the moment he landed, he ran towards a green-clothed lady in the crowd. “Junior-martial sister Lu Cha!” His figure was big-sized in the first place, when he squeezed in, it instantly pushed the few disciples beside him a few steps away.

The female practitioner whose name was called, slightly furrowed her brows for a moment, yet, she still responded him with a polite smile. “Senior-martial brother Zhao.”

However, little fatty Zhao was oblivious, and began to chat even more enthusiastically. “Junior-martial sister, are you already in a group? If not...”

“Senior-martial brother Zhao, I have already decided to be in the same group as Senior-martial uncle Xiao.” Before he could finish what he wanted to say, Lu Cha interrupted him. She then rightly took a step back to the side, and stood beside Xiao Yi.

“Is that so...” Little fatty Zhao was depressed for a moment, then suddenly, as though he had thought of something, he continued. “It’s fine, incidentally, I have yet to find a group, why don’t I join your group as well?”

“Junior-martial nephew Zhao!” Xiao Yi laughed coldly. The both of them had a feud with each other in the first place, and currently, his voice became even colder. “It’s still best that you follow the rest of the Weapon Mountain disciples. There are many people in our group, I’m afraid it would be too much of an inconvenience for you, and we might not be able to take care of you.” Not only did these words contain rejection, it even carried contempt as well.

Little fatty Zhao’s face stiffened a little. Looking at Lu Cha in front of him, his eyes revealed a certain amount of obsession, and he held in the anger within him that was about to explode. “Senior-martial... uncle Xiao, it’s fine. I can take care of myself.”

Since he had already put it this way, Xiao Yi could not reject him

anymore either, and could only silently allowed him to follow them.

Zhu Yao who was watching at the side, felt a little helpless. This was really a twist of fate. When the two of them were still little wimps, Xiao Yi had been bullied by little fatty Zhao a couple of times. Now, their roles were actually reversed. However, seeing the way little fatty Zhao was acting, he seemed to really like that girly called Lu Cha.

It's a pity...

Zhu Yao looked at the girly who was following closely behind Xiao Yi, and she only had a single thought: while the dropping flowers pine for love, the heartless brook babbles on unrequited love.

“What are you looking at?” Wang Xuzhi saw her shaking her head, and then sighing, over and over again.

I'm looking at the commotion over there of course. Zhu Yao pointed to the front.

Chapter 51: What Grass Is That?

Following her line of sight, he curiously looked over. He instantly understood, and explained to her. “Currently, little fatty Zhao is Weapon Mountain’s chamber disciple. His talent is pretty good, but he’s too overly anxious, and frequently uses medicinal pellets to raise his cultivation. Although he barely managed to form his Azoth Core, his realm is still unstable. I really wonder why Reverend Zi Yuan allows him to come to the Secret Realm.”

“Then what about that one over there?” Zhu Yao pointed to that girly called Lu Cha a little curiously.

“That’s Lu Cha, a chamber disciple of the Medicine Mountain, with the Fire and Earth Dual-Spirit Veins. She had formed her Azoth Core long before little fatty Zhao.” Wang Xuzhi’s tone contained a certain amount of praise. “I heard that the Medicine Mountain Lord has the intention to betroth her to little fatty Zhao, and have them form a practitioner-pairing companionship. However, it had yet to be officially announced, and from the current looks of it...”

Wang Xuzhi did not say any further, however, Zhu Yao had already understood. So there was actually such a thing going on, it’s no wonder little fatty Zhao stuck to her that much. In the sect, the number of people forming practitioner-pairing companionships were not in the minority, and even the Sect Master had a practitioner-pairing companion as well, however, it was rumored that she had been in isolation training to nourish her Nascent Soul, and Zhu Yao simply had not gotten the chance to see her.

Their group consisted of ten people, including her, there were five other female practitioners. The one leading the group was actually a disciple from the Medicine Mountain, and his name was Chen Yi, an Azoth Paragon. He counted the number of people, made sure that there were no mistakes, before leading them into the forest. “Let’s go!”

Zhu Yao pulled onto Wang Xuzhi and followed after them, occasionally, she would pay attention to Xiao Yi in front. Because, in the dream, he found the “Wood Spirit” by himself, in other words, the time for the Wood Spirit to appear, was when he was all alone. She had to put him on a close watch.

Xiao Yi seemed to have realized her gaze, as he turned his head over and gave her what he thought was an elegant smile. Zhu Yao instantly choked, and almost puke.

It was certainly not because Xiao Yi was ugly, rather, as long as he made an expression, the BUG word on his face would distort accordingly. And, as a technical staff, when she saw this word, her first reaction was to definitely think of patching up his face!

However, because of that one smile of his, Zhu Yao instantly felt killing intent, and it was even coming from the few female practitioners beside him, as their eyes were as though they could not wait to swallow her up alive. Hey, hey, hey, can you girls please not misunderstand? I’m really not interested in your **.

“There should be many ‘Fresh Green Herb’ nearby, everyone,

split up and gather a few of them. We will gather back here in two hours.” Chen Yi took out a piece of map and examined it for a moment, before telling the other nine people. Nobody had any objections, and dispersed in all four directions.

Zhu Yao curiously asked. “There’s a map for the Secret Realm as well?”

“That’s a map drawn by our seniors who have entered ‘Tasyoluk’ in the past.” Wang Xuzhi explained. “Every sect has them, and every Azoth Paragon disciple, before entering the Secret Realm, could receive one from the Sect Master.” This was also why an Azoth Paragon disciple must be the one leading the group.

“However, there’s only the map for the outer area of the Secret Realm. The core of the Secret Realm has many demonic beasts, and it’s very rare for practitioners to come out of there alive.”

I see. In that case, she temporarily did not have to worry that Xiao Yi would find that ancient ruin first. After all, every sect had copies of this map, and if there’s a ruin, it would have already been found long ago.

“Let us head there and take a look.” Wang Xuzhi pointed to an empty spot in the east. Fresh Green Herb was an ingredient for refining pellets, and could be used for making Stopcolor Pellets. These herbs could be found outside, yet, they were not really usually seen, hence, the price of each was not a small amount. However, it was different in the Secret Realm. The medicinal herbs here seemed to flourish extremely well, and they had already found three stalks after walking for just two hours.

Zhu Yao did not really have knowledge on pellet refinements, her master did not allow her to eat medicinal pellets casually either. Hence, she was completely ignorant when it came to things related to medicinal herbs. If Wang Xuzhi had not said that small stalk of grass were Fresh Green Herb, she would have almost stepped onto it.

Wang Xuzhi carefully dug out that small stalk of fresh and tender grass, and then, placed it into a special container. He explained to her, all spiritual grass possessed spiritual energy, if they were not placed into unique containers, even if they were brought out, they would become useless due to the loss of spiritual energy.

Zhu Yao felt a little bored from his explanations. In the modern era, she was actually someone that could even cause a cactus which was under her care, to die. She really did not have any love towards plants. Looking all around for a moment, she still could not differentiate those green grass. However, she was still a studious child, and would ask things that she did not know.

“What’s that stalk of grass?”

“That’s Purple Moss, it can be used to refine Blood-Growing Pellets.”

“What’s that stalk of grass?”

“That’s Flowind, a common herb. It can be used to stop the bleeding of meridians.”

“What about that stalk of grass?”

“That’s Bishe, it possesses a deadly poison.”

“Then what about that grass over there?”

“That’s... really just grass.”

Wang Xuzhi felt his head aching a little from the questions. Were these not basic knowledge learnt when one just entered the sect? Why was she unable to even recognize medicinal grass? Was grand ancestral-martial uncle teaching his disciple seriously? “Little Bun, can you be quiet for a moment, that stalk you’re pulling right now is the Fresh Green Herb.”

“Ou!” Zhu Yao silently retracted her claws of ignorance, and suddenly, her eyes shone. “Hey, Xuzhi, I have a final question?”

“What is it?” Wang Xuzhi speechlessly turned his head over.

Zhu Yao weakly pointed to the front. “That patch of grass, why is it glowing?”

Wang Xuzhi turned to look, and his eyes instantly widened. He saw, on a spot not far away in front of him, there was a large patch of small grass glowing with silver light. Their leaves were half-translucent, and they looked crystal clear. Looking from afar, it

was as though the ground was covered with a layer of glass floor.

The two of them walked towards it, Wang Xuzhi carefully scrutinized it for a moment, before he agitatedly said. “These... These are See-Through Leaf Grass, and there’s such a large patch of them...”

See-Through Leaf Grass were necessary ingredients in refining Foundation Pellets. Foundation Pellets were very rare medicinal pellets, and even in Ancient Hill Sect, not all Essence Paragons were able to obtain Foundation Pellets, and only very few unique difficult quests would have them as rewards. Although he was already an Azoth practitioner and no longer needed it, with such a big patch of See-Through Leaf Grass, to the Ancient Hill Sect, it meant that a large number of Essence disciples could break through into Foundation.

“See-through Leaf Grass?” This name sounded familiar, and she seemed to have heard it from somewhere before. “What’s the use of this herb?”

“This is an ingredient used to refine Foundation Pellets.” Wang Xushi, a little excitedly, took out the container, and was planning to gather them.

“Wait a minute!” Zhu Yao instantly grabbed onto his hand. “What you’re talking about is the See-Through Leaf Grass that’s accompanied by the Heavenpulse Lotus?”

Wang Xuzhi was startled, and after pondering for a moment, he

nodded. “Indeed, I have heard that the See-Through Leaf Grass accompanies the Heavenpulse Lotus, but I have not heard of anyone finding the Heavenpulse Lotus beside the See-Through Leaf Grass.”

Zhu Yao finally recalled where she heard the term See-Through Leaf Grass from. It was Medicine Mountain Lord Hong Chou who incidentally said it, and as she was the Medicine Mountain Lord, she was obviously very familiar with medicinal herbs.

Back then, her body was still not of an one-year old infant, so her Spirit Veins could not be determined yet. That lolicon advanced-stage patient, had once joked about it before. Even if she had the trash Penta-Spirit Veins, Hong Chou could still find a Heavenpulse Lotus that could wash off her Veins, and help her clean out a nice Spirit Vein, at the same time, she could receive the See-Through Leaf Grass that accompanied it, allowing her to make contributions to the Sect.

If translated into human words: Gather a stalk of Heavenpulse Lotus, and you would receive a bunch of See-Through Leaf Grass as freebies.

Chapter 52: Treasure Protecting Demonic Beast

“You’re saying there’s a possibility for the Heavenpulse Lotus to be here.” Wang Xuzhi’s expression became a little tense as he swept his gaze through the big patch of See-Through Leaf Grass. The Heavenpulse Lotus which was capable of reconstructing meridians was only recorded in legends, and no one had actually seen it. However, since the air in this place was moist, and there were even so much See-Through Leaf Grass growing here, with every stalk looking spirited and lush, there might really be a pond with an exotic treasure growing right in front of them.

However, a place with an exotic treasure, other than a bunch of spiritual herbs accompanying it, there would be demonic beasts accompanying it as well. In other words, there might be at least a sixth-ranked demonic beast here, or maybe even an entire horde of them.

“Let us return first, and discuss with senior-martial brother Chen Yi whether we should investigate the place.” Wang Xuzhi gathered and place the spiritual grass inside the container, his face no long carried the initial excitement, rather, it was a little tense.

Naturally, Zhu Yao would not object, the more people there were, the easier it was to get the job done. After all, sixth-ranked beasts were equal to late-stage Azoth human practitioners. The two of them, an early-stage Azoth practitioner and a mid-stage Azoth practitioner, when encountering a sixth-ranked demonic beast, even if they did not die, they would still suffer serious injuries. And, with their Spirit Veins, their meridians did not need to be

reconstructed in the first place, so the Heavenpulse Lotus did not mean much to them.

However, before they even returned to the gathering point, they bumped into someone coming from right in front of them, and she was even Lu Cha, the girl little fatty Zhao was interested in. She was walking pretty hastily, and looked as though she was about to break into a jog. When she saw the two of them, she was startled as well. As though she was trying to hide something, she looked around for a moment, before nodding her head, as a way to greet them.

“Junior-martial sister Lu, what happened to you?” Wang Xuzhi casually asked.

Her expression instantly paled, and her smile looked a little forced. “No... Nothing, we just encountered a demonic beast, that’s all. Senior-martial uncle Xiao has already dealt with it, and I’m currently planning to inform senior-martial brother Chen.”

Zhu Yao became even more suspicious, and turned to look at the direction she came from. “You guys can’t have possibly entered that place filled with a big patch of See-Through Leaf Grass, right!?”

Lu Cha’s face turned even more pale, and revealed an expression as though her thoughts had been guessed correctly, yet, from afar, suddenly, an extremely loud roar sounded. The roar rang through the clouds, the three of them could not help but feel shaky for a moment, and even the ground began to tremble with them.

“It’s the sound of a demonic beast.” Wang Xuzhi stared towards Lu Cha with a reprimanding look, as every one of them had clearly realized what she was planning to do. Earlier, she was moving with Xiao Yi, the two of them had definitely seen that patch of See-Through Leaf Grass from the other side, and they had even entered it. However, they did not expect to startle the demonic beast accompaniment inside. Xiao Yi could not defeat it, hence, he had her come out to look for help.

But, just from hearing that roar earlier, that demonic beast was definitely not ordinary. As expected, not even a moment later, loud running footsteps could be heard, even the bird beasts in the trees dispersed and fled, as something was chasing over towards them.

“Senior-martial uncle Xiao?” Lu Cha anxiously looked at the direction of the sounds, as though she had just realized the severity of the situation.

“Let’s inform the rest, hurry!” Zhu Yao summoned her flying sword, pulled along Wang Xuzhi beside her, and with her eyes, she signaled Lu Cha to catch up to them. Only after flying towards the sky, could they finally see, on the ground not far away from them, a gigantic beast that was even taller than a house was currently running towards them.

The three of them speedily flew, and when they finally managed to reach the gathering point, Chen Yi and the other martial brothers and sisters were already standing there.

“What happened?” Chen Yi realized the situation was strange as well, as he hurriedly ran over.

Wang Xuzhi walked forward and explained the situation to the rest of them. Before he could even finish, suddenly, another roar was heard, and Zhu Yao simply felt a gigantic shadow looming over towards her.

“Little Bun!” Wang Xuzhi anxiously shouted, with an ashened look, he looked towards... the direction behind her.

Only then did Zhu Yao slowly turned her head a little stiffly. Behind her, was a gigantic monster. It looked like a bear, yet, it's covered in scales, and there were even three horns that looked like metal blades on its head. It stopped for a moment, and suddenly opened its mouth towards her, revealing teeth that were even longer than her legs.

And then, it stretched out its tongue,

and licked her.

Zhu Yao whose body was filled with saliva: “.....”

She was not ice-cream! Haah!

All these happened in a blink of an eye. The rest of the female practitioners were all frightened from the sudden appearance of a demonic beast, shrill screams rang through the air, and it was

unknown who did it, but a gigantic fireball was cast and thrown over.

When Zhu Yao was about to get burnt, Wang Xuzhi instantly rushed over, caught her, and they tumbled away.

The demonic beast seemed to have been angered by that fireball, as it roared and charged towards the group of people. Everyone had no choice but to summon their weapons one after another and engage it in battle. Various Mystic Arts were thrown towards the demonic beast.

Wang Xuzhi pulled Zhu Yao up, and summoned his long sword as well, shielding in front of her. Zhu Yao looked at that crazed demonic beast at the center. She was unsure if it was just her imagination, but she felt that earlier demonic beast did not seem to want to kill her.

As she thought of this, the demonic beast shot out a fireball, and it was flying exactly towards her direction. Zhu Yao flew to dodge it, and when she turned to look at the place she was standing at earlier, it had already turned into a crater of fire. Alright, she had confirmed it, it wanted to kill her now.

“Risefire Beast!” Chen Yi looked strangely at that demonic beast in the center. Risefire Beast was a very mystical beast, it had the fire element, yet, it liked to stay near sources of water, hence, it was resistant towards both water and fire. A newborn was a fifth-ranked demonic beast, and when it matured, it would be sixth-ranked. It had to be said, Chen Yi did have some talent in leading, as, when he recognized the identity of the demonic beast, he

immediately loudly reminded everyone. “Do not use fire and water Mystic Arts. Risefire Beasts are resistant to both water and fire.”

When everyone heard this, they hurriedly stopped using fire and water Mystic Arts, and changed to other Mystic Arts. There were even some who had flown directly towards it, and used sword techniques. Out of everyone present, Wang Xuzhi’s sword techniques were the strongest. By himself, he rushed to the very front, the sword skills he threw out completely left no openings, preventing the demonic beast from advancing even another inch.

“This is a fifth-ranked demonic beast.” Chen Yi became elated, as he realized that this was just a newborn beast. Although a matured Risefire Beast was comparable to an Azoth Paragon, at the very most, a fifth-ranked would just be comparable to mid-stage Azoth. Even if demonic beasts were innately stronger than human practitioners, with so many people present, taking down this newborn beast would still be a simple feat.

Zhu Yao wanted to help as well, however, other than Wang Xuzhi, no one knew she was a disciple of the Jade Forest Mountain, and it was inconvenient for her to use her skills. Hence, she could only follow the rest of the female practitioners, and stand at a spot a little further away. Occasionally, she would cast out chaining and binding arts, to restrict the demonic beast’s movements.

Chen Yi’s estimation was right, it was a newborn beast, and basically could not fight against the combined attacks. After a short while, the demonic beast had already fallen onto the ground from the slash of his sword. Fresh red beast blood flowed onto the ground.

Everyone cheered, and heaved sighs of relief. Chen Yi counted the number of people, and realized, other than three disciples suffering from light injuries, the rest were fine.

“Just what is going on?” Chen Yi asked Wang Xuzhi. Just when he heard the term ‘demonic beast’, this demonic beast appeared.

Wang Xuzhi moved to the back, making way for Lu Cha.

Lu Cha’s expression changed, before she said softly. “Senior-martial uncle Xiao, senior-martial brother Zhao and I, found a lot of See-Through Leaf Grass over there, however, for some unknown reasons, this demonic beast suddenly charged out. We did not dare to fight it, hence, I had no choice but to come back and inform everyone.”

“Then, where’s senior-martial uncle Xiao and junior-martial brother Zhao?” Chen Yi continued asking.

Lu Cha’s expression paled, as though she had only realized this problem. Logically speaking, the demonic beast had already been slain by them, so those two should have returned as well. Unless...

Before everyone could even ponder about the problem, that ‘unless’, fell from the sky just like that.

The first who fell on the ground was little fatty Zhao whose body was covered in blood. His waist seemed to have been pierced by

something, and was currently gushing out blood. His white robe had already been stained blood-red.

Before everyone could even investigate what happened, suddenly, a red wall of fire fell from the sky, blowing towards everyone. Two injured disciples, before they could even dodge, had already turned into ashes.

With a loud bang, a gigantic demonic beast that looked exactly the same as the one earlier, yet, was at least three times larger, had already stood right in front of them. The extremely thick smell of fresh blood filled the noses of everyone present, and its mouth still contained small flames that had yet to be extinguished.

Xiao Yi landed on the ground as well, looking entirely fatigued. Although he was not as severely injured as little fatty Zhao, he still had several small wounds on his body.

When that huge Risefire Beast landed, it immediately saw the small Risefire Beast lying on the ground nearby. Throwing aside the bunch of people present, it anxiously sprinted over. Using the horns on its head, it gently touched the corpse. As though it had realized it had already died, it let out sad 'wuuu' moans. It seemed like it was a mother beast.

Zhu Yao's heart could not help but tighten, this could not be the mother of that small Risefire Beast, right!?

As expected, after the huge Risefire Beast moaned for a while, it suddenly let out an ear-piercing roar. It turned its head and looked

even more angrily at the human practitioners on the ground. It heavily dug into the ground with its claws, opened its huge mouth, and spit out a ball of flames that was even larger than the one earlier.

“Not good, hurry and dodge!” Chen Yi who was still helping little fatty Zhao to close his wounds, shouted out loudly.

As though they woken up from their dreams, everyone quickly flew up on their swords. The place the fireball landed at, had already turned completely charred. Clearly, it was a hundred times stronger than that small Risefire Beast earlier.

Lu Cha waved her hand and summoned a gigantic icicle, and it flew towards the demonic beast. The moment the icicle made contact with the demonic beast, it instantly created a huge layer of ice, as though she was planning to freeze the demonic beast, and restrict its movements. However, the demonic beast was extremely quick, and a part of the place the icicle covered had already been shaken off by it. When another female practitioner saw this, she summoned countless of spiritual swords, attacking the demonic beast from all directions. Although they could not pierce through the demonic beast’s scales, it still increased the speed of the freezing process.

Just when the demonic beast looked as though it was about to completely frozen over, the Risefire Beast suddenly roared loudly, and the scales on its body began to perk up one after another. With a ‘huu’ sound, huge flames were released from inside the scales, and as though its entire body had been caught in fire, the ice on its body instantly melted completely.

“Mutated Rise-fire Beast!” Chen Yi exclaimed out.

Before everyone could even react, that Rise-fire Beast whose entire body was emitting fire, suddenly disappeared, and then, nearby, a scream rang out. Earlier, the female practitioner that was using spiritual swords to attack it, was already being bitten in its mouth. Its mouth closed, and the female practitioner’s screams came to an end, only the fresh stains of blood could be seen flowing out of the demonic beast’s mouth.

Everyone was shocked from that frightening scene. In just a blink of an eye, three people were dead. And, the demonic beast was completely unharmed. Mutated demonic beasts had always been one ranked higher than ordinary demonic beasts. This was a seventh-ranked demonic beast, and its movements seemed to be especially quick as well. Earlier, they did not even see clearly how it managed to reach behind that female practitioner.

Chapter 53: Piggish Party Member Strikes Again

“We... We... We can’t defeat it!” In the group, there were already people with the intentions to retreat. Two female practitioners had already summoned their flying swords, turned and planned to flee.

“Do not move!” Chen Yi planned on stopping them, however, in the end, he did not make it in time. The demonic beast leapt, and instantly, it disappeared once again. A moment later, it appeared right at the front of the two fleeing female practitioners, and spew out a ball of flames from its mouth.

The two practitioners did not even have the time to scream, and had already turned into ashes.

It seemed like this mother beast was truly enraged, and would not forgive any single person here. Zhu Yao tightened the fists next to her body, and tried her best to suppress the fear in her heart. Using the opening after the demonic beast shot out the flames, she cast out a wood Mystic Art, summoning countless vines, restricting the demonic beast’s four limbs. The demonic beast was caught unaware for a moment, and fell onto the ground.

“Now!” Zhu Yao loudly said. “Do not allow it to teleport to somewhere else again.” The small group which was initially made out of ten people, was now left with only Zhu Yao, Wang Xuzhi, Lu Cha, Xiao Yi, and the injured little fatty Zhao.

That two times earlier were extremely quick, and just by looking,

they would seem as though it had ran to each location. However, Zhu Yao realized, it basically did not have a sprinting posture each time. It was not that its speed was especially quick, rather, this Risefire Beast knew how to teleport.

Wang Xuzhi and Xiao Yi were the first to react, and they summoned their Sword Intent one after another, attacking towards the demonic beast. Only at the Azoth-stage could practitioners comprehend Sword Intent. Compared to spiritual swords, Sword Intent carried the caster's strong will, and seemingly with just a single slash, the Risefire Beast bled.

The Risefire Beast appeared to have become even more enraged, and began to struggle with all its power. Zhu Yao felt her strength slowly fading away, after all, how could a few vines restrict a seventh-rank demonic beast for a long period time?

“Lu Cha!” Zhu Yao shouted to the person beside her who was still in a daze. “Hurry and help!”

Lu Cha was startled for a moment, and then, she hurriedly raised her hand and summoned an icicle.

“The hell! Don't use ice!” Zhu Yao almost could not restrain herself from scolding her mom. This lady must have forgotten to bring along her brain when she left her home, right!?

Unfortunately, it was already too late, that piece of icicle had already struck directly on the demonic beast. The moment it made contact with the demonic beast's body, the flames on the Risefire

Beast instantly increased explosively, and the vines she painstakingly summoned were burnt completely. The Risefire Beast's figure flashed, and had already teleported behind Lu Cha while spewing out a fireball.

Lu Cha instantly widened her eyes, her face had already turned ashen as death approached, her eyes were filled with despair.

The Risefire Beast had already opened its mouth towards her, and suddenly, a blood-colored figure charged out, crashing Lu Cha aside, and had taken her place in getting bitten.

It was actually little fatty Zhao!

Even Zhu Yao was shocked, yet, this was evidently not the time to stay dazed, as Zhu Yao flew over with her quickest speed. Pulling up Lu Cha who was already frightened silly on the ground, she quickly distanced themselves far from the Risefire Beast. Before little fatty Zhao could get a single glance of Lu Cha, he was bitten into two pieces.

Lu Cha who was saved still looked terribly frightened. She did not even dare to turn back to look at little fatty Zhao who was already dead with his unwholesome corpse, and was simply frightened to the point where her tears were flowing out. Even her entire body was trembling.

Zhu Yao finally could not help but send a slap to her face. "Are you motherf-stupid? Don't you know Risefire Beasts are resistance to water and fire!?" Did she actually understand why she was

unable to freeze the demonic beast earlier!?

“I... What I used was ice!” Lu Cha replied, and sounded as though she was not in the wrong.

“Ice is water as well, idiot!”

She clearly knew that it was her ice which forced out the Rise-fire Beast’s flames, yet, she still dared to throw ice at it. You motherf--- must be a joke sent by the monkeys, right!?

Zhu Yao no longer had the mood to lecture the brain-deficient child. Summoning her flying sword, she once again cast a defensive barrier on herself, and warned the rest. “Everyone, put up your defensive barriers, the Rise-fire Beast can still teleport.” Currently, she could no longer bother about hiding her identity. First, live this through, then talk.

This time, Lu Cha was actually not in a daze, and obediently set up her barrier. Zhu Yao silently glanced at the little fatty Zhao on the ground, and suddenly felt a little afflicted.

With the circulation of her spiritual energy, Zhu Yao’s sword was instantly filled with purple lightning. Without hesitating, she rose to the skies, and slashed towards that demonic beast.

“That demonic beast’s scales are extremely sturdy, you’re unable to...” Before Chen Yi could finish his reminder, he saw the demonic beast emitting out a cry. With a bang, Zhu Yao’s sword

followed through and fell towards the ground, and a palm-sized wound on its body was currently gushing out blood. “Junior-martial sister Bun, you...”

The hell was junior-martial sister Bun? Zhu Yao glared at him, and suddenly recalled that she did not seem to have told them her name. Wang Xuzhi had never asked either, and had always been calling her Little Bun. They could not have thought that her name was actually Bun, right!?

The corner of Zhu Yao’s lips twitched, she turned and began to seriously go against the demonic beast. That strike earlier was purely coincidence, probably, that demonic beast did not think that the blade of her sword was imbued with lightning that was especially strong against demonic beasts, hence, she was able to slash it. She could not be this lucky another time.

As expected, the Rise-fire Beast on the ground once again disappeared. Zhu Yao’s heart tightened, unsure of where it would appear from next.

“Little Bun, are you alright?” Wang Xuzhi flew over, and stood with a posture of his back leaning against hers. “You wounded it, so it will definitely attack you first. You have to be careful.”

As expected, in the next moment, the demonic beast appeared right above her. A large blood-filled mouth came falling towards them, yet what it bit onto was a defensive barrier. What blocked it, was the sword tassel her master gave her. After blocking this life-threatening attack, she could not be this lucky again next time.

Zhu Yao and Wang Xuzhi speedily retreated, and Chen Yi and Xiao Yi rushed over as well.

Xiao Yi was already extremely skillful with his Sword Intent through training. A golden sword circled around him, as though it possessed life itself, and it emitted out a very cold sword aura.

The demonic beast, however, did not attack them head-on. Rather, its body flashed, and it once again disappeared.

“We must force it out!” Chen Yi tightened his fists. This demonic beast probably wanted to drive them to death. Although they could use their own barriers to defend, they could only use them to defend against a single attack. If a few more attacks were to come, none of them would be able to hold out.

“I have a way to force it out!” Zhu Yao raised her sword and said.

Only then did everyone seem to have realized the lightning glow on her sword, especially Chen Yi. “You... You’re a disciple of Jade Forest Mountain?”

Zhu Yao did not deny it either. In any case, they would find out eventually. “I think that, even if that demonic beast teleports, it should not be more than a radius of two and a half kilometers. I shall use my lightning to force it out, however, we only have three seconds. The three of you must kill it within that period of time.”

The expressions of the three people were a little heavy. Even if she was able to force the demonic beast out, it was, after all, a seventh-rank, an existence at the early-stage Nascent Soul level. Just the three of them Azoth practitioners, it might...

“We have to try it out!” Unexpectedly, the one who agreed was Xiao Yi. “Let junior-martial sister Bun force the demonic beast out, and I will strike it with all my might.”

“.....” Your sister’s a bun!

After the few of them had discussed the plan, they went into formation on the ground. Lu Cha awkwardly moved over, and stood at the center of the four. Zhu Yao curled her lips, and did not care about her.

Stabbing the longsword in her hands into the ground, she grabbed onto the hilt with a single hand, circulated the lightning spiritual energy in her body, and activated the Lightning Guiding Art towards the ground.

The quiet ground earlier began to be covered with lightning in all directions, and expanded quickly in every direction. Not even a moment later, the lightning had already filled a radius of two and a half kilometers. Zhu Yao attentively prevented it from continuing to expand outwards, rather, she began to directly guide the lightning.

Instantly, countless of lightning soared towards the sky from the ground. Like a growing tree branch, it stretched directly towards

the sky, and everyone's vision were filled with white lightning.

A long howl sounded, and a gigantic beast appeared in the skies above them. Its entire body was filled with lightning, and it looked to be in extreme pain as it struggled.

“It's out!”

Chen Yi immediately summoned countless of spiritual swords and attacked towards it. Xiao Yi and Wang Xuzhi did not hesitate either, circulated all of the spiritual energy in their bodies, and attacked.

Zhu Yao reduced the output of her spiritual energy, shrinking the range of the lightning, so that it would only surround the vicinity of the demonic beast, restricting its movements.

The attacks from the few of them finally bore results. The body of the demonic beast was already filled with wounds, however, this was still not sufficient to obtain victory. Xiao Yi's expression turned cold, and the shard of Sword Intent which was still pretty small earlier, suddenly turned into countless sharp blades, and attacked towards the demonic beast, leaving no openings behind.

Zhu Yao was shocked. To actually have Sword Intent of such strength, as expected of a protagonist who had activated his cheat, his level growth was especially quick. Her lightning had already disappeared. This large-scaled Lightning Guiding Art could only last for three seconds, any longer and she would not be able to hold out.

However, from the current looks of it, Xiao Yi's Sword Intent could achieve the same effects as well.

Zhu Yao powerlessly sat on the ground, and she could only occasionally supplement a few lightning strikes during the openings between their attacks. Clearly, that demonic beast could no longer beat them. Unable to control its figure any longer, it began to fall from the skies.

"Now!" Chen Yi shouted out loudly. Xiao Yi and Wang Xuzhi gathered two gigantic Sword Intent at the same time, and directly struck towards the demonic beast.

It looked as though victory was just a step away. The Rise-fire Beast had already suffered heavy injuries, and was definitely unable to dodge those Sword Intent.

It suddenly emitted out a huge roar, and its two bloodstained eyes, instantly emitted out a red glow, the flames on its body suddenly began to grow explosively. Those flames actually turned from the color of red to black, even Xiao Yi and Wang Xuzhi's Sword Intents were scattered by the flames.

The two of them spit out a mouthful of blood from the rebound of their Sword Intent. Earlier, they had used a large amount of strength, and hence, the rebound was especially serious. Currently, it seemed they no longer had the strength to move any further.

“It’s trying to forcefully make a breakthrough!” With a face of utter disbelief, he stared at that demonic beast. The surrounding spiritual energy had already begun to move violently.

If a demonic beast were to forcefully make a breakthrough, it would definitely bring about a violent disturbance of spiritual energy. If the demonic beast were to succeed in its breakthrough, it would bring down Tribulation Lightning. If the demonic beast were to fail, the demonic beast would die from self-destruction. Was this Risefire Beast planning to perish together with them?

“What... What are we going to do?” With an ashened face, Lu Cha looked towards the demonic beast whose entire body was burning with black flames. Her face was filled with tears, and she tightly grabbed onto Xiao Yi beside her. “Senior-martial uncle Xiao, are we no longer able to leave? I don’t wish to die here.”

Xiao Yi did not reply, even Wang Xuzhi and Chen Yi went silent. They were currently in the middle of the spiritual energy disturbance. Leaving aside the fact that the two of them were heavily injured for now, and were basically unable to circulate their spiritual energy and leave with their flying swords, even if they were completely unharmed, with such a huge spiritual energy disturbance, they did not have the energy to leave either.

Zhu Yao tightly gripped onto the hilt of the sword, stood up, strongly pulled it out, and with a stern expression, she walked towards the direction of the demonic beast. Sitting while waiting for her death, was never her style.

Chapter 54: The Chrysanthemum After The Demonic Beast Conclusion

“Little Bun, what are you trying to do?” Wang Xuzhi anxiously grabbed onto her hand.

“If we simply wait like this, we will only lose. We have to try something.”

“You will die!”

“I won’t!” Zhu Yao turned her head, smiled, and habitually stroked Wang Xuzhi’s head. “Wait for me, little wimp!”

When he heard this, Wang Xuzhi suddenly widened his eyes, as though he had just heard something shocking, he stared right at her. That name in his heart resounded greatly.

His grip suddenly tightened for a moment. “You’re...”

With a turn of Zhu Yao’s sword, the sword hilt in her hand easily knocked onto his nape. He was already severely weakened to begin with, hence, he instantly fainted.

“Chen Yi, take care of him!”

Not caring the three’s shocked expressions, she shakily walked towards the demonic beast which was making its breakthrough. If

there's one thing she learnt from desperately practicing her sword techniques with her master for these three years...

That would only be the perseverance... of seeking to get beaten!

Zhu Yao circulated all of her spiritual energy, and gathered them onto the sword in her hands. With the supplement of spiritual power, the lightning on the sword's blade grew even bigger, and continued to extend, to the point where a gigantic lightning sword was formed.

In situations like this, any deep and profound Mystic Art would be of no use. All she could do was to go head-on.

Zhu Yao rose to the skies, and swung her sword, striking towards the Risefire Beast which was in the center of spiritual disturbance. When the purple lightning made contact with the black flames, sparks instantly flew in all directions, and it actually suppressed an entire half of the black flames. Lightning was the bane of all demonic beasts. Other than natural lightning beasts, no demonic beasts possessed resistance against lightning. Currently, she could only rely on this fact to make a last stand. However, that large-scaled Lightning Guiding Art had already used up too much of her spiritual power, and currently, she could only use the tiny bit of the strength she had left to make a death struggle.

And, the more she approached the demonic beast, the stronger the resistive force. She felt that her body was already left with only a small amount of spiritual energy, and her entire body was in severe pain. However, she no longer had the thought to mind about it. Even if blood were to pour out from her hearts and lungs,

and blood were to spew out from her mouth like a water tap, she knew that she could not afford to retreat.

If she were to take a step back, the people behind her would only have death waiting for them.

She was not a heroine. Even more so, not a saint. She did not have the interest to sacrifice herself for the sake of others. The reason why she was struggling so much, was because she really would not die. She did not know why, but she felt that her resurrection that time, was not by coincidence. Even if she were to die again this time, she could return all the same.

Ever since she knew the reason why she was in this world, was to fix the “BUG” Xiao Yi, she was all the more undoubtful of this fact.

Probably, she completely did not have to this. Because, no matter if the demonic beast’s breakthrough is successful or not, the people here will all die. The moment Xiao Yi dies, the BUG will naturally disappear, and the five elemental Spirits, will not be brought to the Higher Realm by him. Naturally, her mission will be completed, and she might even be able to return to her former world because of this.

However, Xiao Yi was not the only person here. There was Chen Yi, there’s Lu Cha, and especially, there’s Wang Xuzhi, the kid she watched growing up since he was young. To have her give up on little wimp’s little life for an unclear “BUG”, forget about Doctor Wang, who had entrusted little wimp to her, strangling her to death as a ghost, she herself would even cast herself away. She was not that much of an asshole.

This did not have to do with morals, nor did it have to do with the bigger picture. This was simply the most basic conscience of being human, and it was also the last line she would not cross.

She was never anything like a heroic person, the reason why she swung her sword, was simply because she was still human!

No matter if she had seemingly exhausted her spiritual power, limitless fighting spirit was surging from Zhu Yao's heart, as though a string in her heart was suddenly pulled, causing her to find something that she had never been able to find, which had suddenly became open and clear.

The sword in her hands lost its lightning due to the exhaustion of spiritual energy, and Zhu Yao's figure of a woman carrying a sword, was instantly engulfed by the black flames. Even Chen Yi and the two others could not help but lower their heads. As expected, they were still unable to escape.

Suddenly, a bird cry rang throughout the clouds. A white flash of lightning suddenly broke through from within the black flames, soaring towards the high skies. And then, a gigantic phoenix was formed, its body was circled with sparks of lightning. As though it was a divine bird which had been directly formed by lightning, it had an enchanting, imposing aura that could sweep everything away.

"This is..." Chen Yi stared blankly at this phoenix which had suddenly appeared.

“It’s Sword Intent!” With a subtle look, Xiao Yi raised his head and looked at that phoenix, a divine bird, which had a vast imposing aura. “She comprehended it.”

“Sword... Sword Intent?” Chen Yi was even more shocked. Was Sword Intent not supposed to be a sword? Why did it have a shape of a phoenix?

The phoenix in the sky opened up its wings which were flashing with sparks of lightning, and charged down from the sky, flying straight towards the demonic beast on the ground. The black flames which would not bulge even by an inch, was swept by the lightning, and was instantly extinguished, while the demonic beast in the middle had already been pressed unmoving onto the ground by the phoenix’s pressure. The phoenix scratched with its claw, and instantly, the Risefire Beast which was forcefully breaking through, was torn into several pieces.

The phoenix once again cried towards the sky, before its white figure slowly disappeared.

The spiritual energy disturbance instantly quietened down as well, and only Zhu Yao’s body which was filled with blood could be seen standing beside the stack of that demonic beast’s scattered meat.

Zhu Yao, who finally could not hold on any longer, took a deep, deep breath. Her mouth, and her body, were all bleeding out blood which could not be patched up even if she tried. The jade pendant

on her neck, which was flashing with a soft white light, slowly reverted to its original color as well.

This was the first time she found out that someone could even bleed like this. Clearly, she felt that her blood was almost drained out, yet, there were still fresh blood pouring out continuously.

Her body swayed for several moments, before collapsing towards the ground.

Chen Yi and the rest finally reacted, and hurried over. Chen Yi reached out his hand to hold her, preventing the fate of her face being planted onto the ground. He carefully investigated, and found out that her meridians had seemingly been torn apart, and even her Azoth Core was at the verge of shattering.

“Can you still hold on!? Junior-martial sister Bun!”

Zhu Yao almost spat out a mouthful of blood on his face. Your sister’s a bun!

Seeing that he himself was barely able to hold on, yet, still sent her his spiritual energy, she held it in.

Seeing Zhu Yao who only had a single breath left, and her body was covered entirely in blood, the expressions of the three people present were actually different.

Chen Yi was shocked. This little martial sister was the weakest in

their group, with the cultivation of an early-stage Azoth. In the beginning, he was a little worried that she would pull everyone down, but he never expected that the one who saved him in the end was actually her.

Xiao Yi was silent. Recalling that lightning phoenix earlier, he tightened his fists. He had always believed that the so-called Sword Intent, was another sharp sword in a practitioner's heart, yet, he never expected that Sword Intent could actually possess such a shape as well.

As for Lu Cha, she had completely yet to regain her senses from her earlier fright, and her entire body was still trembling.

As for Wang Xuzhi...

Mn... He was still unconscious. He had not woken up.

Zhu Yao silently thought about that earlier strike of hers, if she was actually a little too ruthless with that knock.

“Senior-martial uncle Xiao, just how did you offend this demonic beast?” Seeing Zhu Yao had gotten a little better, only then did Chen Yi recall the reason for this situation. These two demonic beasts were mother and son. The higher the rank of a demonic beast, the harder it was to give birth. Just like a demonic beast such as this Risefire Beast, it would not easily leave their newborn beast by itself. And, if they had not encountered something special, the demonic beasts would not have attacked while putting their lives at stake.

A hint of fluster instantly flashed past Xiao Yi's expression, and he immediately reverted to his serious look. "We have indeed found See-Through Leaf Grass over there, and because of a moment of carelessness, we startled the mother beast. Junior-martial nephew Zhao and I was unable to fight it, and just when we planned on retreating, we did not expect that the rest of you had already killed the newborn beast. Probably because of this reason, the mother beast unleashed her brutal personality."

Chen Yi frowned. "You guys really did not find anything else?"

"Indeed, we did not." Xiao Yi firmly shook his head.

Yet, Zhu Yao felt a slight chill in her heart. She was definitely sure that he had already obtained the Heavenpulse Lotus, otherwise, that demonic beast would not have chased after the three of them so anxiously, and it would not have let her newborn beast to follow Lu Cha either. She had not forgotten, that newborn beast appeared while following after Lu Cha. Looking at how Xiao Yi was behaving, he would not be taking out the Heavenpulse Lotus no matter what.

Realizing that he could not get any answers from his questioning, Chen Yi did not push it any further. He looked a little desolately at the corpses of his sect brothers and sisters not far away. Danger was lurking everywhere in this Secret Realm, there was even a seventh-rank demonic beast at the outer area.

"I did not expect to encounter two high-grade demonic beasts the

moment we enter the Secret Realm.” He turned his head and looked at the corpse of the two demonic beasts. “Looks like we have to put even more caution as our highest priority.”

Zhu Yao nodded in agreement. “Fortunately, it’s only a newborn beast, if it was...”

Wait a minute! A scary thought popped out in Zhu Yao’s mind, her face instantly paled. She shakily pointed at the corpses of the two demonic beasts. “Earlier, we killed a newborn beast, and a mother beast. Then... where is it’s dad?”

Rooooar~~~

As though it was to answer her query, a familiar roar resounded from the forest.

The faces of the other three instantly ashened as well.

The hell! Is there even an end to this!?

“Chen Yi, bring Wang Xuzhi and head for the exit.” Zhu Yao said solemnly. “Xiao Yi, Lu Cha, the two of you head to the left, I will head right. We will separate into three directions, run!”

Xiao Yi nodded, and seemingly did not hesitate to pull Lu Cha who was still in a daze, and flew quickly towards the left with his flying sword. They no longer had any battle strength, if another demonic beast were to come, forget about a seventh-rank, even if it

was a fourth-rank, they would not have the strength to retaliate either. Splitting up and running was their only chance at survival.

“Junior-martial sister Bun, then, you...” Chen Yi had already summoned his flying sword as well, and looked a little hesitantly at the heavily injured Zhu Yao.

However, Zhu Yao did not even turn her head around. While summoning her own sword, she sharply said. “Head out of the Secret Realm immediately, no matter what happens, do not turn back.”

Chen Yi sighed, before holding the unconscious Wang Xuzhi, and flew towards the exit.

Seemingly at the same time, Zhu Yao flew in another direction with her flying sword as well. Earlier, when she forcefully used her Sword Intent, it had seemingly tore and disfigure her meridians to such a state. When she once again forcefully circulated her spiritual energy, her wounds burst apart, and fresh blood endlessly flowed out.

Currently, she could only pray that demonic beast fails in the intelligence department. She purposefully separated everyone apart. One, it was to shift away the demonic beast’s attention, and two, Lu Cha was not injured, as long as she did not seek death, it should be more than enough for them to flee. As for Chen Yi and Wang Xuzhi, the direction they were heading to was the Secret Realm’s exit, the distance was not far, and the demonic beast was unable to leave the Secret Realm as well. And she’s only a single person, a small target, the demonic beast should not simply chase

after her...

Roooooar~~~~

The hell, it really came chasing after her!

Zhu Yao turned her head and looked at the demonic beast which had a three-stories height behind her. As he chased, sand and rocks scattered in the air. She instantly thought of [lighting up a hundred candles](#) for her own luck.

The hell was it chasing after her for? Your mother! She was only a single person, why did it even chase her? Was it trying to bully a single lady?

Lighting up a candle: Giving a moment of silence.

Chapter 55: Compact, Practical, Suitable And Portable

Zhu Yao instantly felt like crying, you know? However, she could not stop her feet. The moment she were to stop, it would mean she was giving up on her chance at survival. She managed to kill that demonic beast by struggling to her death, before obtaining the “Wood Spirit”, she definitely could not die now.

However, her physical strength had already began to sing the exact opposite tune, and the speed of her flying sword was becoming slower as well. She could no longer squeeze out any spiritual energy, and instantly fell from the sky, slamming hardly onto the ground. Yet, she did not have the strength to even crawl up, and even her consciousness had begun to blur.

That humongous demonic beast had already rushed out of the forest, sprinting toward her with its bloody mouth wide open. Suddenly, the jade pendant on Zhu Yao’s chest emitted out a blinding white light, and at the moment when the demonic beast was about to swallow her whole, she could faintly see a white figure blocking in front of her. With just a simple raise of his hand, he grabbed onto that crazed demonic beast. Crackling bolts of lightning resounded in every direction, and then, he swung his hand away. The demonic beast landed heavily on the ground, with completely no signs of life.

Zhu Yao strived to see clearly the person in front of her, yet, her eyelids began to become heavier, and could only hear that person sighing deeply before she sunk into darkness.

Looking at the disciple who had already fainted, Yu Yan's deep frown instantly became a little deeper. Holding up his stupid disciple who had already turned into a bloody woman, he could not help but sigh again. He reached out his hand to check on her pulse, and then, internally visualized her cinnabar, his frown was unable to relax at all. All of her meridians were torn apart, her spiritual energy was depleted, and even her Azoth Core was already at the verge of collapse.

He really could not let this stupid disciple of his off of his sight for a single moment.

Standing back up while carrying onto the person on the ground, he turned and walked towards a nearby cave. When the demonic beast in the cave sensed a foreign presence, it leapt out while wailing~~ ㄥ|`o'|ㄣ loudly, exerting a majestic presence. A certain master did not even look at it, and released his pressure from his body. It frightened that demonic beast to the point where it cried 'myaaa' and crawled on the ground. It obediently let the cave to him, turned tail, and hid away.

A certain master who had forcefully taken a territory, placed his stupid disciple on a stack of dried grass in the cave. Then, he sat in a lotus position behind her, as though he was a hardworking little bee, he began to fix his disciple's torn meridians with great effort. By common sense, if the meridians were torn to such extent like Zhu Yao's, even if her life could be saved, she would no longer be able to cultivate to be a deity. However, her master was Yu Yan, after all! As the number one in the cultivation world, if he could not even save his disciple, his so many years of cultivation would have been for naught.

Yu Yan closed his eyes, and summoned his own Sword Intent. Instantly, a white dragon coiled around his body, swam about a couple of rounds, before slowly wrapping Zhu Yao in front of him. The white light emitting it became even brighter, and under the white dragon's coiling, the wounds on Zhu Yao's body were disappearing at a speed that could be seen with the naked eyes.

Hence, ten days passed.

When Zhu Yao woke up, she realized the wounds on her body had already disappeared, and even her spiritual energy had recovered. She was currently sitting in an extremely large cave, and she was the only person in the vicinity. While not far away from the entrance of the cave, a demonic beast which looked like a tiger yet had a pair of wings, was currently making sorrowful cries.

That actually was an eighth-rank demonic beast!

Zhu Yao almost let out her voice out of fright. And, when the demonic beast saw her sitting up, it looked as though it had received an even bigger fright.

With a 'puchi' sound, it dove into the bushes beside it, as though it was trying to hide itself the best it could. It struggled hard to stuff its humongous body into the bushes, revealing only a smooth, round head. It blinked its large eyes, and looked at her with a fearful expression.

What kind of situation was this?

Zhu Yao's expression darkened. Earlier, she felt like she was fleeing from the entire world when she was chased by a seventh-rank demonic beast, yet, why was a mighty eighth-rank demonic beast frightened to such an extent for? Could it be that, the higher the rank of demonic beasts, the lower their intelligence?

She shook her head, recalling the white figure she saw at the moment before she fainted. Why did she feel as though her master had came here?

Sensing attentively for a moment, the cave seemed to carry lightning spiritual energy that had yet to disperse, and it felt very familiar.

“Master?” She probed.

“.....” There was not a reply for a long time.

She slapped onto her chest, and smiled naively to herself. “I knew it!” How could it be possible for her master to silently follow her? “As expected, I’m thinking too...”

“What is it?”

“.....” Her smile instantly stiffened on her face. Master, you’re the devil, right!?

She looked at her surroundings for a moment, yet, she could not see that figure of his. “Master, where are you?” This ends of the

cave could be seen with just a single glance, and his figure was basically nowhere to be seen at all.

Seeing that she had already begun to flip over the demonic beast's old lair, his cold voice once again sounded. "Lower your head."

Zhu Yao lowered her head, only to see the white jade that her master had given her before she left, was currently emitting out a blinding light. A white mini-sized master popped out of that pendant, and he floated to about three feet away from her.

He was Yu Yan.

"Master!" Zhu Yao instantly widened her eyes, and looked at the mini-sized master. "How did you turn out like this?"

"What you're currently seeing is just a part of my soul." Yu Yan explained. "Practitioners with cultivation above that of Azoth cannot enter 'Tasyoluk'. So, I could only have my divine sense dwell inside this jade pendant, before I could enter this Secret Realm."

"Then why?" Was there a need to turn into such mini-sized?

"Although it's only a part of my divine sense, I'm, after all, a Demigod. If I were to appear oftenly with my original body, it will definitely be sensed by the formation in place. I will not be discovered only if I'm in this form."

“Master, the reason you’re here is?”

Hearing her bringing up this topic, Yu Yan coldly glared at her, and instantly begun to enter his teaching mode. “Your Azoth Core was shattered, and your meridians were torn apart. This master has never taught you to risk your life to fight with a demonic beast.”

“.....” Zhu Yao obediently lowered her head.

“If not for my appearance, I’m afraid your life would have ended right there.”

“Was it master who healed my wounds?”

Yu Yan did not answer, and simply looked at her even more sternly.

Zhu Yao revealed a smile, and instantly, she felt her heart was warm, as though she began to feel that it was not really that bad to have a master who liked to stalk his disciple.

“Thank you, master.”

“.....” Yu Yan was startled for a moment, yet, he still gave a straight face. “Stupid!”

“Yes, my liege!”

“Next time, think thrice before doing anything.”

“Alright, my liege!”

“Live within your means, that’s the way of cultivation.”

“That’s right, my liege!”

“And...”

“Are there any other instructions, my liege?”

“Your Azoth Core has yet to recover completely, do not easily act for the next few days.”

“Understood, my liege!”

“Shut your mouth.”

“Yes, my liege. No problem, my liege!”

“.....”

Through the few days of rest, Zhu Yao’s injuries were finally all

healed. Yu Yan found the determination to train her, and had especially picked out places with demonic beasts for her to go to. In the beginning, when Zhu Yao saw demonic beasts, she would have the thought of running away. Now, she would numbly pull out her sword, charge out, and slash about while getting herself beaten.

Zhu Yao never had much battle experience in the first place, hence, she was basically the one who would always get beaten up. However, with Yu Yan by her side, other than taking a few light injuries, there were no threats to her life. After a long time, her sword techniques had already been sharpened to the point where she was extremely familiar with them, and she could even unleash her Sword Intent at will.

Her Sword Intent was a lightning phoenix. Usually, when she summoned it, it would simply be tiny, and its size was not that much different compared to a pigeon's. It no longer revealed itself as the gigantic figure it had when she first used it.

Master said that her Sword Intent was the manifestation of her cultivation. When one comprehended Sword Intent, the Sword Intent would form into the most similar shape to one's thoughts at that time. Back then, she simply wanted to claw out a single chance at survival from that demonic beast. Hence, her Sword Intent, was a Phoenix which could rise from the ashes.

Master's Sword Intent, which she had seen before as well, was a white dragon. Zhu Yao silently thought to herself. Could it be that back then, her master wanted to become an emperor? Hence, his Sword Intent had a shape of a dragon? She silently imagined him seated on a dragon seat. Forget it. Clearly, the style is completely

wrong.

However, the two of them, one was a dragon, while the other was a phoenix. As expected of a master and his disciple, they were rather compatible. When she thought of this, she was still a little excited.

With Sword Intent, Zhu Yao's sword techniques had improved greatly. In the beginning, she could barely defeat fourth-rank and fifth-rank demonic beasts. However, after that, with just her alone, she was able to defeat a sixth-rank demonic beast as well.

Zhu Yao raised her longsword. She had successfully dealt with a sixth-rank demonic beast, yet, her body was already dog-tired, her spiritual energy, was even more so, depleted to the point where not even a single drop was left.

Sitting right down on her butt, she heavily gasped for air, and was completely unable to move.

A certain master popped out half of his body from the pendant in front of her chest, a hint of satisfaction surfaced on his ice-cold face. "This time, you're faster than the previous time by fifteen minutes. However, you could have been much faster with that sword strike earlier."

"Master..." A certain amount of awkwardness flashed out of Zhu Yao's expression, as though she wanted to say something.

However, Yu Yan continued on. “Demonic beasts which are incapable of transforming, usually have much large body figures, hence, their movements will always be much slower. You have to obtain victory speedily and decisively.”

“Not that...”

“Your control of spiritual energy is insufficient, and your grasp towards Sword Intent is still not enough.”

“Umm...”

“You did well with your offense, but, your defense is insufficient.”

“I’m trying to say...”

“You have to train more. You’re not allowed to slack off.”

“Master!”

“What is it?” A certain master finally realized the tone his stupid disciple used was off.

Zhu Yao’s expression darkened, pointed to his position, and her own chest. “Can you talk after releasing my chest?”

It's true that you're hiding in the jade pendant, but what's with the meaning of designing it as a necklace!? And master, if you want to come out, then do so. Why did only half of your body show itself? It felt like he had suddenly squeezed out of her chest. That's too immoral, was it not?

ps, Where do you think your hand is currently being placed on!? Hey!

“Chest?” Yu Yan tilted his head, and subconsciously looked at his surroundings.

Zhu Yao instantly felt terrible. The hell, even though she was flat-chested, it was not to the point where it could not be found at all, right? It really feels terrible if you're looking around like this for it, you know?

Don't think that I don't dare to smack you because you're my master!

Yu Yan looked towards the person in front of him who had suddenly been enveloped by a depressing aura. Just what happened to his disciple this time? Why could he faintly feel killing intent? Yu Yan felt even more odd, and finally, he once again concluded that his disciple was being stupid again.

Fortunately, he was able to hear that his disciple did not seem to be very happy to see him in his current location. Although he did not understand the reason, he still completely floated out, and slowly turned into his regular size.

Waving his hand and forming a few hand-seals, he set up a presence concealment formation beside his disciple, before sitting next to her, and cast his Mystic Arts on her.

Seeing that she had recovered to a certain degree, he was finally at ease. Sizing her up for a moment, his brows deeply creased again.

“Strip your clothes.”

“Kuh... Kuh kuh kuh?” Zhu Yao could not stabilize herself for a moment, and choked. She stared at him, unwilling to believe what she just heard. “What did you say?”

Chapter 56: When Heading Out, Bringing Along Your Master Is A Must

“Strip your clothes.” Yu Yan reiterated.

Out of reflex, Zhu Yao hugged her chest with her two hands, and looked at the person in front of her with widened eyes. What happened to being just girl friends?

“Mas... Master, this is wrong, isn't it?” This disciple sells her body, not her skills... Ah pui! I'm a pure and innocent lady.

Yu Yan ignored her stupid actions, silently took out a bracelet and passed it to her. “Change into this.”

She hesitantly took it, and only then did she realize it was a storage bracelet. The moment she wore it, it automatically shrank to the size fitting for her wrist. When she used her divine sense to inspect it, she realized the space inside was huge, and her own storage bag was completely unable to compare with it.

Taking a good look at the things inside, other than some regular talismans, the rest were several clothes for women, and it seemed like they had been prepared for a long time.

In the recent days, Zhu Yao only bothered about gaining experience by killing monsters with her life at stake, and basically did not have the time to take care of herself well. The white sect school uniform she was wearing, had already been torn with a

couple of holes. Although she could use the Dirt Removal Art to wash it clean, the holes could not be patched up.

So she wanted her to change her clothes. Say so earlier! It caused her to think her master had some impure and indecent thoughts about her.

Zhu Yao hid her earlier actions by faking out a few coughs. Only after taking out the clothes did she realize how completely prepared he was. It came with a full set of inner and outer wear, and there were different types of colors and styles. As expected, he was a good master.

“Thank you, master!” After saying her thanks cheerfully, Zhu Yao did not think twice and took off the outerwear that had already been torn with several holes, and began to change.

Zhu Yao had never been an attentive person, and adding that she had never thought of master as an outsider, she took off one of her underwear as well. Although she still had another underwear on her, a woman’s underwear had always been rather thin, and would always vaguely reveal some things that should not be revealed.

Yu Yan’s expression stiffened, and turned his head somewhere else out of reflex, his face strangely began to rise in temperature. He himself did not understand either? Supposedly, the one in front of him was his stupid disciple, so caring more about her should be his duty. However, why did he feel that, right now, it should be time for him to avoid her?

“Done!” Zhu Yao patted on her new clothes, and severely smugged. As expected, it was great to wear different clothes. A uniform set of clothes or whatever, simply did not have any aesthetic feeling.

“Mn.” Yu Yan responded. He silently picked up the school uniform that had been abandoned by her. He rubbed the wrinkles on the uniform, trying to look for the torn places.

And then... He took out a set of needle and string...

“.....”

Zhu Yao instantly felt that this image was simply too disillusioned.

You actually brought along needles and strings with you when you left! Master, does your master know about how “wifely” you are?

As expected, her master was a genius at life skills. Not even fifteen minutes had passed, and the holes on the clothes had already vanished. Zhu Yao took it, and inspected the places that were sewn. She completely could not see any traces of them. She could not help but silently think to herself. In these ten thousand years, did master spend them all on raising his life skills? Hence, he had not taken in any disciples till now.

Keeping the school uniform, Zhu Yao suddenly realized, other

than clothes, there were some irrelevant cloths in the storage bracelet, and they looked rather familiar. She then light took one of them out.

“Master, what is this?” It was long and rectangular, and it was even emitting out a faint silver glow.

Yu Yan raised his head and glanced at her. “It’s the remaining pieces of what you used back then. After that, because of the change in materials, I simply put them in.”

Zhu Yao touched the smooth cloth, and suddenly had a bad feeling. “Remaining? Remaining pieces of what?”

“Sanitary pads.” He said so seriously.

“.....” Why is my mouth so cheap? Why do I have to be so curious?

After separating from everyone, Zhu Yao was a little worried that she was unable to catch up to Xiao Yi, and hence, unable to find the “Wood Spirit”. After pondering for a moment, that “Wood Spirit” was at the core of the Secret Realm, and currently, her master was by her side. Even if she were to encounter a formidable demonic beast, she would still be able to retreat with her body intact. And, she would be able to find that ancient ruin, where the “Wood Spirit” was placed, much faster.

However, she never expected that Tasyoluk’s map would be as

large as this. When she entered, she thought that the forest, which she could not see the ends of, would be all, yet, when she exited the forest, an ocean actually appeared in front of her. And, it was the type which looked endless.

In an ocean like this, how was she going to find the ruins?

Zhu Yao felt a little saddened, yet, she could faintly hear a singing voice coming from nearby. The voice was very beautiful, as though the singer was weeping and complaining, it sounded like a lover was whispering his grief beside her, and she could not help but feel her heart aching from hearing it.

“It’s the singing voice of a sharkman.” White light emitted out from the jade pendant in front of Zhu Yao’s chest, and Yu Yan’s cold voice sounded. “A sharkman’s singing voice has the ability to manipulate one’s mind, do not be trapped within it.”

The moment Zhu Yao heard that, she immediately regained her senses, and escaped from that singing voice. After looking at her surroundings, as expected, on a rock not far from her, she saw four to five figures. From afar, they looked like human figures, however, unexpectedly, they had fish tails, and their blue long hair flowed down onto the ground.

The first thing she thought were the beautiful mermaids in fantasies, and was filled with curiosity. Carrying a slight excitement, she took a few steps forward.

When she just thought of getting a sneak peek and vanishing

right after, those Sharkmen seemed to have sensed something, and they turned their heads over one after another. Zhu Yao, who saw clearly the looks of those Sharkmen, her three views instantly shattered and fell onto the ground.

The body parts below the Sharkmen's head were still considered normal, however, those faces were simply too shocking. Two extremely dark eyes, as though two rocks had been embedded on each of their faces, their pupils were large, yet, there were no white parts of the eyes. Their noses were not upright, and they looked as though two holes were drilled into each of their faces. And their mouths took up an entire half of each of their faces, when the two corners of their mouths tear open, they instantly reach the back of their ears. With just a slight open of their mouths, their sharp metal nail-like teeth were revealed. They were extremely terrifying.

Zhu Yao was rooted to the ground out of shock, as though she could hear the sound of her fantasies shattering. Return me my mermaids!

Sensing an intruder, the Sharkmen on the rocks let out threatening roars one after another, and they revealed their mouthful of sharp teeth. As though they were about to pounce over in the very next moment, only then did Zhu Yao understood how idiotic it was to approach them. Sharkmen were eighth-rank demonic beasts, and any one of them was enough to beat her, let alone a group of them.

As expected, if one did not seek trouble, trouble would not come!

Just when she was about to skillfully retreat, the leading Sharkman suddenly startled for a moment. After carefully smelling her body, it suddenly retracted its killing intent. “Which tribe are you from?”

“Ah?” Zhu Yao was startled. What was it talking about?

When that Sharkman saw that she was unresponsive, it continued to ask. “Just which tribe of Sharkmen are you from?”

“Uh...” Sharkman? Her? “I... passed by here.”

“Passedbyhere? I never heard of this tribe before though?” That Sharkman was startled for a moment, and then immediately after, it said with a stern look. “You passed the boundary. Do you know that?”

“Boundary?”

“This place! Is our Harmonic Ocean Tribe’s territory, understand? This place!” He strongly pointed to a rock at the side which was fully covered with shells. “This place has already been marked by us. If you wish to hunt, head somewhere else.”

After saying that, the group of Sharkmen behind it nodded one after another.

Zhu Yao was a little weirded out. It seemed like these Sharkmen had taken her as one of them. But... Just where the hell did they

see that from? Her image was clearly different from them, alright?

“Kuh kuh, sorry, I got lost.” Zhu Yao probed. Since she was able to avoid a terrible battle, she would not mind acting as a Sharkman for a short while.

“Lost?” That Sharkman’s face was immediately filled with contempt, as though it was looking at her as though she was an idiot. “Just who the hell sent you here? How could you even get lost like this?”

“Uh... I was sent here by a monkey.”

“Monkey? Is that the name of your tribe leader?” That Sharkman began to look down on her even more. “Are all of your tribe members as stupid as you?”

“.....” You’re stupid. Your entire family’s stupid.

“Nevermind!” That guy sized her up for a bit, and suddenly, its eyes shone. Slapping its chest, it’s expression changed into a righteous one. “Seeing that we’re of the same race, I shall send you back. My name is Fishhere, the tribe leader of Harmonic Ocean Tribe.”

“Hoho, wouldn’t that be too much of a trouble?” She could not wait to flee, so how could she bring along a fish?

“Do not be modest.” That sharkman said with its arms crossed.

“Since you’re so stupid, I’m afraid you might not return home even after three days.”

“Really, there’s no need.”

“Don’t worry, I’m very familiar with the vicinity.”

“No need.”

“I said I’m sending you!”

“It’s really unnecessary.”

“Are you going to have me send you, or not!?” It bared its teeth!

“..... Alright, send me then!” You can’t force people like this. These hot-blooded ‘fish’-youth nowadays, are really hard to please.

When the Sharkman saw her yielding, it was finally satisfied. Slapping its tail, it moved towards her. Stretching its hand, it wrapped around Zhu Yao’s shoulder, demonstrating a brotherly look. “Tell me then, where do you live?”

“Uh.....” Zhu Yao hesitated for a moment, and suddenly, she thought of a plan. Why not have him bring her to that ancient ruins? After all, no human was more familiar of the terrain of this Secret Realm than a demonic beast. “I don’t really know that place is called either? It’s just that there’s a very ancient palace over

there. It's really big inside, and the spiritual energy there is abundant as well. Oh right, there's a very strong barrier set up outside, and normally, people are unable to approach it."

Hearing her finish her explanation, the the Sharkman's expression became a little strange. Looking at her from top to bottom, it's long and thin sharp teeth made 'guchiguchi' grinding sounds. "You're sure that you people live over there?"

Zhu Yao was exhilarated in her heart. As expected, he knew about it, however, she could not allow him to raise his suspicion. "We have always lived near it, however, tribe leader has never allowed us to casually head outside. This is my first time out here, hence, I got lost."

Fishhere stared at her for a while, before dispersing its suspicion. It lightly said. "Why would you people live in that sort of crazy place? I heard that, near those ruins are "Severed Lands", if you were to get sucked into it, your soul would be scattered."

Zhu Yao could only smile and nod.

"Alright then, seeing that I'm in a good mood, I will bring you home today. But, I shall put this out first, I will only send you to somewhere nearby. I won't approach the 'severed lands'."

"Thank you, big brother Fishhere." Zhu Yao immediately nodded.

Fishhere explained to the rest of the Sharkmen, before signaling to Zhu Yao that they could leave.

“Wait a minute, where are you going?”

Zhu Yao had only taken a single step, before she was pulled back by him. He pointed to the front, where the endless seas were. “This way.”

After saying that, with a ‘plop’ sound, he leapt into the sea.

They were using the water route!

Zhu Yao: “.....”

Zhu Yao instantly let out cold sweat, and felt the sense of danger where she was about to be exposed. Because... She did not know how to swim!

Chapter 57: Experiencing The First Marriage Proposal

“Hurry up, didn’t you want to return?” That Sharkman saw her idling around the shore for quite awhile and not heading down into the waters, and could not help but hasten her.

Zhu Yao was even more flustered. I’m doomed, I’m doomed. This time, I’m really dead. I wonder if it’s fine if I tell him that I don’t know how to swim?

Pui! Which Sharkman wouldn’t be able to swim?

“Water Repelling Incantation!” Suddenly, a cold voice sounded next to her ear. It was her master!

Her flustered heart instantly calmed down. Oh right, she could use the Water Repelling Incantation. That way, she could walk in the water like how she would do it on land. Zhu Yao instantly cast the Water Repelling Incantation on herself, and her body was immediately encased in a transparent air bubble.

After entering the waters, the water flow automatically bypassed her.

The Sharkman stared at her for a long while before it said with disdain. “Why do you like this ugly human look so much? Even after entering the waters, you don’t wish to change back at all?”

Although Sharkmen were able to transform since birth, due to living in the waters most of the time, usually, they did not love to transform into the shape of humans.

“Hoho, my hobby is a little unique.” Zhu Yao could only follow it up with a laugh.

“Whatever.” Fishhere waved its hand without a mind, moved its fish tail and began to swim into the deep waters. Zhu Yao hurriedly followed after.

After a short journey, until they were unable to see the rest of the Sharkmen at the seaside, Fishhere finally took a deep breath. Stretching its waist, it began to complain. “Finally, I’m able to take a break. This big brother here has been protecting the shore for many days, and I almost turned into dried fish from the heat.”

So it was just trying to be lazy. It was no wonder it was so enthusiastic about “sending her home”. “I wonder what big brother Fishhere is waiting there for?”

When Fishhere saw that she was interested, it began to chatter. “I don’t know where those people heard the news from, but they said that human practitioners would be passing by in these few days. Initially, I had planned on catching one or two to taste them. Unfortunately, it’s been so many days, yet, not even a ghost figure was seen.” As though he had thought of something, it suck in its saliva. “I heard that the flavor of those human practitioners, are absolutely fresh and delicious.”

The human practitioner who was absolutely fresh and delicious: “.....” Fortunately, it was blind, and had taken her as one of their kind.

Fishhere turned and looked at her, a hint of sympathy surfaced on his face. “Just by looking at how you seem to lack of bones, probably, you would simply flee if you spot human practitioners, right? If not for the rawsilk you’re holding onto, I wouldn’t have admitted that you’re a part of our race.”

Rawsilk! Zhu Yao was startled for a moment. She did not have such a thing on her body though? She only had a couple of clothes and...

She suddenly recalled the the few auntie pads she had in her storage bracelet.

The hell! Bro. You’re really hardcore!

“You don’t have to be so disheartened. “ When Fishhere saw that she was a little depressed, it consoled her. “Although you’re a little unfortunate, to not have been born well, however, as long as you’re hardworking enough, you will still have an opportunity to break through.”

It seemed like he had taken her as a sixth-ranked Sharkman which had a few deficiencies. Sharkmen were born as eighth-ranked demonic beasts, and if she were to be seen that way, she was not just your average unfortunate Sharkman then.

“But you still have to amend that strange hobby of yours.” Fishhere looked at her from head to toe, his face was filled with scorn. “Which Sharkman doesn’t like to have a strong and beautiful fish tail? Yet, you actually like to change into such an ugly form. If this keeps up, you will never be able to find a wife.”

“I’m a woman. I don’t need to find a wife.” It was enough to have mistaken her as one of their race, why the hell did it have to mistake her gender as well?

Fishhere was shocked. As though it had heard something unbelievable, it instantly widened its pair of eyes, staring straight towards her chest.

“.....”

The hell! Little buns are still buns, alright!? Are they to the extent where they can’t be seen?

“You... You... You, you.....” As though it had finally admitted it, Fishhere pointed at her out of astonishment. Instantly, it was at a loss of what to do, while that deep brown-colored fish tail was strangely turning red at a quick rate.

Not even a moment later, a perfectly steamed fish turned roasted.

“Why... Why didn’t you say so earlier?” Fishhere retreated far away, its face which was still mixed with a few thousands of

expressions earlier, instantly turned into one that showed as though he was not at fault. Lowering its head, it carefully peaked at her.

Was it so strange for her to be a woman? Why the hell are you being so embarrassed for? The image of a tyrannical CEO turning into a small and timid wife, was very terrifying, you know?

Rumors had stated, that the number of female Sharkmen in the Sharkman Race were extremely small, and in a single tribe, the number of female Sharkmen would not exceed ten. Hence, ever since they were born, they would be existences that were protected by the entire race, and, female Sharkmen would also have absolute authority among the Sharkmen. A few Sharkmen might not even be able to see a single female Sharkmen in their entire lives. Hence, it could be seen that encountering a lone female Sharkman was such an unbelievable sight. Though, Zhu Yao was only a counterfeit.

Ever since Zhu Yao had stated her gender, Fishhere became extremely awkward, and no longer dared to speak to her loudly. It only dared to steal a few glances of her from the corner of its glowing eyes. Its fish tail had also stayed in the roasted fish state throughout the entire journey, and it would even occasionally cast a shy look at her.

However, when that expression, was placed on a scary face, the effects could not be described using the word ‘terrifying’.

“Kuh, how much further is it?” Zhu Yao could not help but change the topic, her hair was already standing on ends. Do not

glance at me with that sort of expression anymore, if I had known, I would have quietly be a male fish with no chest.

Fishhere pointed to the front, and replied while suppressing its voice, as though it was afraid of scaring her. “It’s... It’s just right in front!”

Zhu Yao raised her head and look. In front, not far from where she was, was a shining ray of light. It was especially obvious in this dark seabed. She could even faintly see the shadows of shattered rocks and broken walls inside the light.

“Thank you, then I will be heading there by myself now.” Zhu Yao hurriedly bade farewells.

“Would you really be fine alone?” However, the Sharkman Fishhere became a little worried. “There’s a very strong barrier over there, and there’s not even a drop of water in there. It’s very dangerous.”

Zhu Yao shook her head. “It’s fine, I will know my way once I’m inside, so I can return by myself.” She could not always bring along a fish with her, right?

“Oh!” Fishhere nodded a little disappointingly. It worriedly looked at her a few times, and instructed. “Next time, do not run about randomly, otherwise, you will lose your way. If... If you’re lost again, you can look for me again.”

“Mn.” If I’m lost, how am I supposed to find you?

“Be safe on your way back.”

“Mn.”

Fishhere then finally hesitantly turned and swam away. Suddenly, as though it had thought of something, it quickly ran back, and stared at her with misty, glowing eyes. “Umm... I wish to ask, have you found a partner yet? If you haven’t, what do you think of me?”

“Eh?” What kind of godly development was this?

Fishhere waved its roasted fish tail. “I’m very muscular and strong, so I will definitely be able to protect you.”

“Uh...” Why was she in such an odd situation of being proposed by a fish?

“I know how to hunt, no one in my tribe is able to compete with me.”

“.....” However, she no longer needed to eat.

“The rawsilk I weaved is also the most beautiful among all of the Sharkmen.”

“.....” Could she use it as auntie pads?

“My ‘ability’ is really strong too. I’m definitely able to have you bear seven or eight little Sharkmen.”

“.....” Why did it turn into a yellow-zoned topic, hey?

“I’m even able to...”

Before he could finish, a ray of blinding white light was instantly released by the jade pendant on Zhu Yao’s neck, which instantly charged towards Fishhere who was still chatting her up without rest. Instantly, it was sent flying away. Before it even had the opportunity to wail, its figure could no longer be seen.

Master... is so violent.

The miniature-sized Yu Yan floated out of the jade pendant, and sat on Zhu Yao’s shoulder. His face which was usually cold, currently felt as though it was covered by another layer of ice. His entire body was even emitting out cold air.

A mere eighth-ranked demonic beast, dared to crave for his disciple!

“Go!” He spoke up. Even though it was just a short, single word, it was so cold that it felt as though it was about to drop scraps of ice.

Zhu Yao sensed that her master was angry, and his anger was not light either. But, why was that so? Rubbing her arm which was about to stiffen from the cold, Zhu Yao could only shut her mouth, and walked towards the direction of the ruins. Eyyy, master is so scary.

These ancient ruins were very strange. It was in the deep ocean bed, yet, as though it was being enveloped by a gigantic formation, inside the formation, was as though it was a piece of open land. Inside, there were even flourishing plants and trees, and a structure which looked like a old palace was situated in the center, exactly like the one she saw in her dream.

Regarding the “Wood Spirit”, Zhu Yao did not tell her master about it, because there would be too many implications. However, Yu Yan had never asked her why she wanted to head to that ancient ruins, nor had he asked why she knew of such a place. He simply gave her the free will to advance, and helped her deal with some troubles during the appropriate times.

With a master like this, Zhu Yao felt relieved, and was a little guilty as well. However, even she was unable to determine if everything that happened in the dream, was real. Hence, actually, a large reason for her seeking this “Wood Spirit”, was to prove her suspicions.

“Master, what are ‘severed lands’?” That Sharkman had emphasized on the dangers of the severed lands along the way, hence, Zhu Yao could not help but feel a little worried about it.

Yu Yan pondered for a moment, before answering. “It’s probably the very ends of this Secret Realm. Those demonic beasts that live here, unless they were to ascend, they are unable to leave this realm. Hence, they would not casually approach the edges of the realm.”

“Then what if we enter it?”

“I have no idea either. I have never heard of human practitioners entering it before. Probably, if we enter, either we return to the cultivation world, or our souls would most likely be scattered.”

He was so uncertain about it? It seemed like this place was very dangerous. If she could, she would not be willing to approach that place. However, the surroundings of the ancient ruins were rather safe. She had investigated them, and there was completely no presence of demonic beasts.

Just when she was about to enter that palace, suddenly, she heard a familiar voice.

“Senior-martial uncle Xiao, what in the world in this place?”

This voice was Lu Cha’s!

Zhu looked at the two people who were currently walking right over from not afar, and they were exactly Lu Cha and Xiao Yi who she had not seen for a long time. They did not have any traces of bodies being soaked, nor did they look like they had went through

a terrible battle, as though they had suddenly appeared in this place. Taking a closer look, she saw the glow of a formation that had yet to disperse underneath their feet.

The hell! So there was a teleportation formation here. Then why the hell did she walk for so many days for?

She hated the protagonist's cheat!

“This should be an ancient ruins.” Xiao Yi answered, while pointing to the structures in the vicinity. “Looking at the designs of the buildings here, they are designs that only the Ancient Era would have.”

“Then will there be great opportunities here?” Lu Cha's eyes instantly shone. The Ancient Era, was the time where both Gods and Devils existed, and was something the current cultivation world could never attain.

Xiao Yi was a little excited as well, as he nodded his head. “Since this place is so hidden and secretive, if not for those wicked people who trapped us in a cave, we would not have coincidentally encounter this teleportation formation, nor would we have entered this place. It seemed like the person who was designed this place, must definitely be a very powerful existence.”

Chapter 58: Sesame Opened A Door

“Haven’t we encountered a blessing in disguise, then?” Lu Cha was happy for a moment, then, as though she had suddenly recalled something, her expression was instantly dyed with resentment. “Those senior-martial brothers from Weapon Mountain were really too much. I already told them senior-martial brother Zhao’s death was unrelated to me. Yet, they did not believe it at all, and even acted against us.”

Looking at the cute girl who was in tears, Xiao Yi instantly felt his heart aching. “Little sister Lu, do not be disheartened. Justice lies in the human heart. Why is there a need for you to care about those who could not differentiate the right and wrong?”

“But... I’m very sad about senior-martial brother Zhao’s death as well.” Lu Cha rubbed the corner of her eyes. Although his death is unrelated to me, after all, we were still martial brothers and sisters, why wouldn’t they believe me?”

“Don’t cry, I’m still here. I will definitely not let anyone harm you.”

“Really? Big brother Xiao?”

“Of course, my good little sister.”

Looking at the two people cuddling with each other, Zhu Yao really could not help but roll her eyes. After listening to their conversation, clearly, the two of them fell down here due to the

Weapon Mountain disciples' attempt to exact vengeance. She had already long since understood Xiao Yi's personality, however, she never thought that Lu Cha would actually be such a disgusting person as well.

Little fatty Zhao was madly in love with her, and even died to save her. It's fine if she simply did not feel any gratitude towards him, however, she actually turned and flew into Xiao Yi's embrace, and even said that his death was unrelated to her. Zhu Yao even began to feel a little suspicious, back then, when she was given a name, Zhu Yao wondered if her parents had forgotten to register another word.

“Bitch”

[Green Tea Bitch!](#)

She instantly began to pity little fatty Zhao, and prayed that in his next life, he would not once again get to know such people.

And at that moment, Zhu Yao no longer had the interest to meet up with the two of them either, and walked into the depths of the palace. If she were to go with them, it might be possible that she would be stabbed in the back by that wonderful duo, and in their eyes, they would even convince themselves that she deserved it.

Yu Yan did not have the slightest of objection towards her decision. He was someone with a cold personality in the first place. Other than his own disciple, he was completely uninterested in everyone else.

Using his divine sense to investigate in an instant, the entire layout of the palace immediately appeared in his mind. It seemed that a certain barrier had been set up at the center of the place, and even he was unable to see it clearly.

“In the most inner area of this palace, something seems to be there.”

Zhu Yao shockingly turned to look at the miniature-sized master on her shoulder. “Master, are you a human-shaped detector?”

Human-shaped detector? What was that?

“This place isn’t big. By using my divine sense to investigate the place for a moment, I was able to know everything.”

“.....”

This was not big? Zhu Yao was a little speechless. Although her divine sense allowed her to see a distance of a few kilometers away, currently, what she could see here were just walls. Just how did her master do it?

“Go right!” Yu Yao reminded.

Zhu Yao turned into the right passage, and pondered deeply about the place her master spoke of, which should be where the

“Wood Spirit” was located. Although Xiao Yi had the protagonist’s cheat, it could not hold a candle against her own master, who was a human-shaped cheating device. She was even arriving there faster than them as well, so she could definitely be able to take it before them.

When she thought of this point, she could not help but increase her pace by a bit. What was mysterious about this was, throughout the entire way, she actually did not encounter any obstructions, and walked towards the most inner layer smoothly and unhindered.

Yet, she was stopped by a gigantic door.

It was a very unique door. A very strange demonic beast was engraved on it, and looked as though it was alive, swimming continuously above. The entire door was even glowing with a faint silver light. Even though it was a door, it did not have an opening, nor was there anything like a handle, that she could use to push it open with.

“Master?” Zhu Yao could only seek assistance and looked towards her own cheating device.

Yu Yan was also looking at this strange door with a frown. He pointed to the demonic beast on it and said. “An ancient mystic beast is sealed in this door, and it was most probably done by the owner of this palace. So as to protect the things inside this place, the owner purposefully used a formation to trap it within.”

“Then how do we go in?” Zhu Yao was already a hundred percent sure that the Wood Spirit was inside this place.

“This formation is too complicated. Within the formation, there’s still another three thousand lesser formations.” Yu Yan said with a frown. “If one were to casually touch it, that person will activate the mystic beast on the door, which will swallow the trespasser whole. Unless one knows of the password, or if it’s the owner of this formation, this door can then be opened.”

“Then is there really no other way?”

“Unless we were to forcefully dispel this formation. However, from the complications of this formation, dispelling it isn’t something that can be done in a day.” He turned back and looked towards Zhu Yao.

Zhu Yao sighed. She understood her master’s words. By the time they dispel the formation, Xiao Yi and Lu Cha would have arrived. It seemed like it was impossible to not bump into them anymore. Damn protagonist’s cheat.

Since she had to wait for Xiao Yi, Zhu Yao was no longer in a rush. Sitting in front of the door, she inspected the door closely. The mystic beast on the door looked very strange. It had a pale face, sharp teeth, a panther-like figure, yet, it had two pairs of long horns on its head. It’s claws were like that of an eagle’s, yet, it had a rough and stout tail like that of a snake’s. The strangest thing was, it had wings, and even three pairs of them, yet, they were not like that of a bird’s, rather, they looked more like a bat’s. It’s huge figure took up more than half of the door, and it looked extremely

clumsy when it swam about.

Zhu Yao stared at the door for six entire hours, and her master, who had been studying the formation, then looked towards the end of the passageway. “They’re here.”

From afar, she could already hear their footsteps. Her piggish party members were running late.

“Yo, long time no see!” Zhu Yao, who was sitting on the ground, supported her head with one of her hands, and greeted them. The moment Yu Yan had discovered them, he had already returned into the jade pendant.

Xiao Yi and Lu Cha was stunned, and various mixed expressions surfaced on their faces at the same time. There were awkwardness, shocked, and, a hint of suppressed unwillingness.

“Why are you here?” Lu Cha spoke up hesitantly, the smile on her face was a little forced.

“Fate, of course!” Zhu Yao waved her hand about with a smile, and said with utmost sincerity. “Back then, when I was chased by that demonic beast, I just knew you people will definitely find me. Haven’t we bumped to each other now?”

Xiao Yi’s and Lu Cha’s expressions became even more awkward. Zhu Yao was saying all these purposefully. Lu Cha no longer cared about little fatty Zhao dying for her, so why would she even think

of saving Zhu Yao? In their hearts, they might even be calling her an idiot.

“It’s great that you’re fine.” As expected of the protagonist, Xiao Yi immediately regained his senses. Looking at Zhu Yao from head to toe, he realized she was clean and tidy, and looked as though she were completely free from wounds. Looking back at themselves, when they entered the palace, they encountered many traps and formations along their way here, and had already been especially fatigued. He could not help but grow suspicious.

“Junior-martial niece Bun, how did you manage to escape?”

Your sister’s a bun! Zhu Yao held in her urge to roll her eyes at him, and began to make up a story made out of both truths and lies. “I don’t know either. I was chased into a mountain cave by that demonic beast, and then, I seemed to have stepped on a formation-like thing, when I woke up, I was already outside this palace. The layout of this palace is especially complicated. I have already been trapped here for dozens of days, yet, I was still unable to find a way out.”

So she was already here for many days, it was no wonder why she completely did not look flustered. Xiao Yi then calmed his suspicions.

“Junior-martial niece Bun, do you know what’s behind this door?” Xiao Yi discovered that strange door as well, and asked.

Zhu Yao shook her head. “I don’t know either. But, this door is

fully covered with formations, and can't be opened easily.”

“What a strange door.” Lu Cha's attention was brought onto the door as well, and with a swing of her hand, she went to touch on the door.

“Don't touch it!” Zhu Yao shouted out loudly, however, it was already too late. Lu Cha's hand had already touched on the door.

At that moment, the entire palace began to tremble, as though some sort of mechanism had been activated, that door began to shine with a blinding light. The mystic beast began to struggle strongly as well, and from the looks of it, it was about to break out of the door.

Even Zhu Yao instantly had the thought of destroying Lu Cha, as she stared ruthlessly at the culprit. As expected, she's a piggish party member!

Lu Cha knew it was her mistake, and weakly hid behind Xiao Yi's back. She looked at Zhu Yao with an aggrieved face, as though she was the one who was in the wrong.

Accursed Green Tea Bitch!

There was already no point in seeking accountability for this issue. Zhu Yao could only try her best to stabilize her body, while tensely waiting for what was about to happen with bated breath. Hopefully, that mystic beast was not the one being awakened.

Fifteen minutes later, the trembling finally stopped.

And the light emitting out from the door began to slowly dim as well, yet, nothing happened. The three of them heaved sighs of relief.

At this moment, the mystic beast on the door suddenly stretched out its head, as though it had penetrated through from the other end of the door. Opening its huge mouth, it let out a huge roar. Its roar was very sharp, and it could not be described clearly, however, it carried a heavy air of brutality. When the roar entered their ears, they momentarily felt giddy and their visions were blurred. That mystic beast's pair of bell-like eyes swept past the three of them, and then, stared right at Zhu Yao, who was the closest. "Password?"

Zhu Yao was startled. Password? What password!? Only a ghost would know! Earlier, she was not the one who knocked the door anyway, so why was it asking her?

Seeing her not answering for a long time, the beast's head approached closer and closer, with its mouth slowly opening wider and wider. Zhu Yao simply felt a fishy smell was assaulting her from all around, and it looked as though it was about to bite her.

Password, password, obviously, it could never be...

"Open Sesame!" Zhu Yao blurted out.

It would be strange if it worked!

The beast's head stopped. It stared ruthlessly at her, and then, it's mouth instantly closed, and it returned back into the door. With a loud bang, that huge door, slowly opened while moving to the left.

The hell!? It really worked!

This mystic beast couldn't be called Alibaba, right?

Before Zhu Yao could even feel shocked, a huge gust of wind suddenly blew from the other side the door, sucking her straight inside. Zhu Yao had not prepared any defenses, and even Xiao Yi and Lu Cha were swept inside by the wind as well.

Darkness instantly filled her vision. She felt as though she had fallen into a bottomless abyss, and she descended constantly. A humongous pressure engulfed over, and Zhu Yao instantly felt her as though her chest was about to be torn apart and her cinnabar was about to be shattered. The huge strength of that pressure, was simply causing her to be powerless, leaving her with no energy to resist, it really hurt! Even her consciousness was beginning to waver.

“Concentrate, calm your spiritual energy, protect your Dantian.” A cold voice sounded. The pressure on her body suddenly slackened, and she was finally able to relax.

Master.....

Zhu Yao immediately circulated her spiritual energy to protect her own cinnabar and keep her consciousness clear. Only after a good long time did she finally heave a sigh of relief.

They were currently in a barren land, and her surroundings were only filled with dim light. Xiao Yi and Lu Cha were laid down beside her. They most probably fainted due to that pressure earlier.

Suddenly, an old, hoarse voice sounded.

“This old man has waited for so many years, and finally, the destined ones are here.”

Turning her head to look, a white ghostly figure was suddenly floating in front of her. That person was an elderly with white hair and brows, and his face was covered entirely by his beard, causing his expression to be invisible. However, his pair of small eyes narrowed into a line, as though he was extremely happy.

Lu Cha sounds like Lü Cha, which stands for Green Tea. Green Tea Bitch: An internet slang used to describe a young woman that likes to dress and act in a certain fashion in order to portray herself as pure and innocent (ie: like green tea). However, in reality she is a gold-digging slut that won't think twice before she sells her own body or steps on someone's throat to get to a higher place (aka a bitch). First popularized by Chinese netizens when a whole bunch of female models and actresses were revealed to be paid

escorts/prostitutes for the rich and powerful during a fashion expo in 2013.

Chapter 59: The Shameless Deity

“It’s been so many years, finally, there’s someone who can take on my mantle.”

Zhu Yao guessed that this should be the owner of these ruins, and the “Wood Spirit” should be in his hands. However, he did not have a physical body, it seemed like he was just a strand of divine power left by the former owner.

“Master?” What should she do now?

“Wait and see.”

Hearing this, Zhu Yao returned to lying on the ground, and continued to act dead.

The white old man stroked his beard, and floated over. After looking on the ground, he was suddenly stunned. “Why are there three?”

The old man frowned, and seemed to be in a difficult position. “Then let’s choose the one with the best Spirit Vein!” First, he looked at the most left, where Lu Cha was, and muttered to himself. “Fire and Earth Duo-Spirit Veins. Although she has qualifications of the upper tier, she’s not suitable for my Arts.”

Hence, he shifted his gaze to Xiao Yi, and his eyes momentarily shone, revealing a hint of delight on his face. He then inspected his

Spirit Vein, and the delight in his eyes grew even more. “Metal and Wood Duo-Spirit Veins! Good, good, good!” He said the word ‘good’ three times in a row, his eyes had already narrowed into a pair of lines, and then, finally, he looked towards Zhu Yao.

Zhu Yao figured that this old man should be thinking of choosing the disciple with the best Spirit Vein, and he will then pass down his Arts and “Wood Spirit” to the selected individual. After all, this was how it always worked on TV.

She was not the least bit worried of her own qualifications, after all, what she had best was her Lightning Spirit Vein.

As expected, the old man reached out his hand to inspect her qualifications, and again, as expected, he revealed a shocked expression on his face, and seemed as though he was about to blurt out. “It’s Lightning...”

The old man looked at her, and then, looked at Xiao Yi who was at the center. Then, he decisively turned and walked towards Xiao Yi. “Let’s still pick this child instead.”

The hell!?

Do you have to be that bias?

Zhu Yao could not help but jump up. “What happened to the promise of picking the best Spirit Vein?”

“You... How are you awake?” The old man was stunned for a moment, and looked disbelievingly at Zhu Yao who suddenly rose. “Impossible. How could an Azoth-stage practitioner defend against my pressure?”

“There’s no need for you to care about that!” Zhu Yao could not help but roll her eyes. She had a hot temper in the first place, and hated unfairness the most. Also, he was just a spectre, so he would not be able to do anything to her. “Didn’t you want to choose the one with the best qualifications? How can his qualifications compare to mine?”

“Uh... Kuh kuh!” The old man cough out a little awkwardly. “Little girly, don’t be agitated. Although your qualifications are good, I’m a little more destined with this boy, so I decided to pass down to him.”

“You’re already dead, what do you need destiny for?” Zhu Yao did not believe him in the slightest. Earlier, when he inspecting their Spirit Veins, she had already felt it. Clearly, he very despised both her and Lu Cha, yet, he behaved solely different towards Xiao Yi. It was as though, the moment he saw him, an expression of delight appeared on his face. Unless...

She looked at the spectre from head to toe. “You can’t be gay, right?”

“Gay? What this ‘gay’ thing?” The old man was startled for a moment.

The more she thought about it, the more Zhu Yao felt that it was a possibility. “In other words, you’re into men.”

When those words fell, the old man was instantly flustered. “Y-Y-You... You’re... You’re wrong!”

“Then why is your face red?” His face had reddened to the point where his white beard could not cover it, alright?

“Th... Th-The... The weather’s hot!” The old man used his hand to fan himself in a panic, while he tried to defend himself. “How could this old man... this old man... be interested in this... this little brat.”

She did not say he was interested in Xiao Yi. Could this could be considered as a confession he made by himself?

Zhu Yao was already hundred percent sure. So he was really gay, it’s no wonder he would not pick her nor Lu Cha.

“Little... Little girly.” This old man faked out a few coughs. His face was filled with embarrassment from being seen through. “This old man sees that you possess pretty good comprehension ability. To be able to meet you here, we can be considered as fated as well. Although I’m unable to pass down my Arts to you, I have a few treasures here, why don’t I gift you one?”

“Was this a bribe? Incidentally, she did not have an excuse to obtain the “Wood Spirit”.

“Is that true?”

“Of course it’s true!”

“Then I want the ‘Wood Spirit’.”

“.....” The old man was instantly at a loss, and looked even more shocked as he stared at her. “How did you know I have that!?”

“You don’t have to know how I know about it. Just give me an answer. Are you giving it to me or not?”

“This...” The old man looked even more hard-pressed, and turned to look at Xiao Yi who was on the ground. “It’s not that I’m unwilling to give it to you, it’s just that this spirit of the wood element, does not easily admits someone as its master. Furthermore, this ‘Wood Spirit’ can assist my disciple in his cultivation.”

“If you don’t give it to me, I will tell everyone in the cultivation world, that you’re gay.”

The old man instantly softened. “... We can always talk things out.” Gritting his teeth, he then turned and waved his sleeves. The surrounding fog scattered by a bit, and in front of him, six wooden chests appeared. “Little girly, this ‘Wood Spirit’ has followed me for many years, yet, I’m still unable to make it submit. It could be seen that only someone who is fated can wield such a spiritual

item. Over here, there's six chests. Pick one. If you're... Ehhhhhh!!”

Before waiting for him to finish, Zhu Yao had already walked over, and picked up the one on the furthest right.

The old man was filled with unretractable shock, as he looked at Zhu Yao was calmly holding onto the chest. “Y-Y-You... How did you know that the Wood Spirit was in that box?”

Zhu Yao's face darkened as well. It was hard for her to not recognize it, alright? Because the two words “Wood Spirit” were floating above that chest. And, they were in the same font and same boldness as the word “BUG” on Xiao Yi's face. Even if she did not want to recognize it, it was difficult for her not to, alright?

“Could it be that, in this world, there's really such a person of great luck!?” The old man mumbled to himself, and the eyes he was looking at her with began to be filled with envy and hate.

Zhu Yao, however, did not bother to care about him, and opened the chest.

What's hilarious was, the chest only had a small tree sapling inside, and it was even bud with only two leaves. It was currently twisting its white and tender branches, twisting it to the left, and then, twisting it to the right, as though it was dancing.

Probably because it was suddenly interrupted, that small sapling

paused for a moment. It slightly raised its head, and then, let out a gentle...

“Chick?” (With changing tones!)

“.....”

Are you a chicken?

Zhu Yao was speechless. Yet, that little sapling covered itself with its two leaves out of extreme embarrassment, giving a shy look as though it's dark secret had been exposed.

“Are you the Wood Spirit?” Zhu Yao asked.

Only then did that small sapling slowly unfolded its leaves. Tilting its body, as though it's to answer her, it let out another sound. “Chick...”

A little sapling with such good spirituality. Zhu Yao could not help but poke its leaves, and gave it a praise. “You're pretty cute!”

When those words fell, with a ‘pupu’ sound, between the leaves, a small red flower instantly bloomed.

“.....” Zhu Yao had a subtle feeling.

Yet, that little sapling held onto that small red flower in the center with its two leaves, and with a strong pull, it picked the flower out of its body, and then, passed it over to her.

“... Thank... Thank you!”

“Chick~”

Why did she feel that this “Wood Spirit” was a little weird. Was it this friendly to every person it meets for the first time?

Zhu Yao had an inexplicable expression as it turned around the little red flower she was gifted with, yet, the old man suddenly moved in, and said with a stern expression. “Little girly, you have to be careful. This ‘Wood Spirit’ isn’t as simple as it looks on its surface...”

Before he could even finish, the little sapling suddenly grew out the leaf on its left, instantly turning it into a size of a palm, and strongly slapped towards the old man’s face.

Before the old man could even cry out, he had already been thrown dozens of meters to the back by its slap.

“.....”

The little sapling returned to its original size. Twisting its white and tender branches, it acted cutesy towards her. “Chick~”

As though the one who sent him flying was not it.

Zhu Yao: “.....”

Seeing that she was not responding to it, the little sapling became agitated. It instantly leapt out of the chest, jumped onto the lid of the chest, and even used its two leaves to hug onto one of her fingers, and rubbed her finger with its body.

“Chick~”

So cute. Alright. She gave in.

“Do you want to leave with me?”

The little sapling tilted its body. “Chick!”

In that instant, Zhu Yao was a little hard-pressed. She had obtained the Wood Spirit, but now the big problem was, where was she going to put it? After all, it was not good to put a spiritual item in her storage bracelet, and the most important was to prevent Xiao Yi from discovering it.

“Little girly, you can’t bring this ‘Wood Spirit’ out.” As she was hesitating, the old man suddenly floated over. The affectionate expression on his face had disappeared without a trace, rather, it was now dyed with a bit of haziness.

What did the Wood Spirit signify? The control rights to all of the wood spiritual energy and spiritual plants in the world. No one would easily hand such a treasure to someone else, moreover someone who had cultivated for ten thousands of years like him. Although he had already fallen long ago, he was still unwilling.

With a wave of his hand, the chest in Zhu Yao's hands instantly closed, and flew into his hands.

She knew it would not be this simple. Zhu Yao could not bother to speak to him either, and summoned her flying sword.

"I can't even bother to argue with someone like you who doesn't keep to his words. Show your hand!"

When he was alive, this old man might be a famous individual, at the very least, he was a practitioner at the Nascent Soul stage, and he might even be a practitioner of the Ancient Era. However, no matter how powerful he was, currently, he was just a spectre. She just could not believe that she would not be able to beat him.

"Hoho, you're extremely arrogant for someone of such a young age." The old man looked at her with belittling eyes. His entire face began to distort, and even his voice began to turn ghastly. "You don't know how big the world is."

He suddenly did a hand-seal with a single hand, summoning a fire dragon. Zhu Yao was just about to block it head-on, but the old man actually turned, and attacked towards the strange door in the

sky above where they came from.

Zhu Yao was stunned. Why the hell did he not think it through and decide to smash his own door?

Very quickly, Zhu Yao realized what he was trying to do. Under his attack, the door still looked completely unscathed. However, it was not as quiet as before. The mystic beast on that door, began to struggle out from inside the door.

He was trying to release that mystic beast!

Zhu Yao was extremely shocked. First, a head popped out of the door, immediately after, a large half of its body got out of the door. As it struggled, it roared out with extremely huge force, and with every inch of its body escaping, its figure grew twice as big.

Zhu Yao's heart trembled. Even from such a far distance, she was still able to feel the bloody smell coming from that mystic beast body. It's ferocity could be clearly seen.

Finally, that mystic beast broke out of the formation. Facing towards the sky, it emitted out a long roar, and was even more ear-piercing than the previous one it made. Even though she had tried to defend against it with all her might, her blood flow was still scrambled by it.

Zhu Yao spat out a mouthful of blood, and was no longer even able to stand steadily. Once again, she fell onto the ground, and

pain filled her entire body. She could feel that even her breathing had gotten difficult. This pressure was the same as when she first entered this place. She had thought that this was released by the old man, but it had always been this mystic beast who did it.

The mystic beast seemed to have discovered her. With a leap of its four legs, it came running towards her.

The hell, why the hell did animals like to chase after her to play? She hated little animals!

Chapter 60: Master Will Wait For You At Jade Forest Mountain

In the nick of time, the jade pendant on Zhu Yao's neck emitted a white light, and Yu Yan flew out from inside, summoning his spiritual sword and attacked towards the mystic beast.

Zhu Yao's body relaxed, the pressure was completely dispersed, only then did she regain her breathing.

“A Demigod-stage practitioner!” The old man's expression changed, and was filled with utter disbelief. “Impossible. How could a Demigod-stage practitioner appear here? Just who the hell are you?”

“Your grandma!” Zhu Yao once again raised her own sword.

“You...” The old man was extremely furious, his face had turned pale. He took a deep breath, as though he was trying to suppress his own anger. Only after a moment did he laugh coldly. “Little girly, don't be too complacent. Do you really believe that with a Demigod-stage practitioner here, you're able to beat me? All of you shall die here.”

“What do you mean?” She suddenly had a bad premonition.

The old man snorted coldly. “Who do you think these ruins belong to?”

Zhu Yao was instantly stunned.

The old man began to laugh even more arrogantly. “It was simply a coincidence for this old man to obtain this ‘Wood Spirit’, however, because of someone’s plot, I died. And then, it just happened that my soul was absorbed into this mustard seed dimensional space that fell from the Higher Realm. And by fate and coincidence, I then dwelled in these ruins. That sealed mystic beast is the owner of this place.”

“What did you say?” Zhu Yao’s heart tightened.

“That’s a mystic beast that came from the Higher Realm. Do you think a mere Demigod-stage practitioner from the cultivation world can go against a divine beast that came from the Higher Realm?”

Master...

Zhu Yao raised her head towards the sky, yet, she was unable to see the figures of her master or the mystic beast, she was only able to see occasional black and white specks of light flashing past. She could not help but feel a little flustered. In the cultivation world, a demonic beast required to reach the eleventh-rank, comparable to a late Demigod-stage practitioner, and experience the Ascension Lightning Tribulation, before being able to ascend to the Divine Realm. If this mystic beast came from the Higher Realm, then it was at least an eleventh-rank mystic beast. However, in usual situations, she would never believe that her master would lose, however, currently, her master only had a part of his divine sense, he was basically unable to use his full strength.

“Hahaha.....” The old man laughed very complacently. “Little girly, when up against this mystic beast, you people have completely no chance of victory.”

Zhu Yao’s heart tightened, and stared at that gloating old man, flames of fury began to rise within her. Haaah, this hot temper of mine!

She did not care what she was holding onto with her hand, and simply threw it towards him with a swing of her hand. With a ‘Dong’ sound, it landed right on target.

With a ‘bu’ sound, the old man smashed onto the ground.

“I don’t have any chance at victory against that thing, however, I have all I need to deal with you.”

When Zhu Yao got angry, she forgot all of the Arts and Techniques she had. Raising her fists, she began to pummel them at the old man’s face. “This is what you get for being a big mouth! This is what you get for speaking nonsense!”

The old man seemed to have never expected that she would be so unclassy and directly use her fists either, and he basically had completely no way to retaliate. In just a few moments, his head were all filled with buns from her bashing.

“Aiyo, aiya, I’m dying, I’m dying, I’m dying! Stop!”

“Only your sister would stop, you’re already dead. I don’t mind if you were to die even more thoroughly.” Zhu Yao began to bash with even more force, and neither did she forget to step on his butt with her feet, strongly grinding them a few times. You damn gay old man!

“Little girly, it hurts, it hurts, it hurts... How can you do this to an old man... Aiyo, gentler, gentler!”

“Speak. How can we seal that mystic beast again?”

“I don’t know that either.”

“So you’re not telling?” She continued her bashing, her target, was his face!

“Aiyo, little girly, young lady, gentler! I’m dying, I’m dying!”

“So are you going to speak?”

“I... I really don’t know!”

Continue bashing...

“Even if you beat me to death, I wouldn’t know either.”

“Then why is it that, earlier, when we entered, it did not break out of the seal?”

“This... I don’t know either.” The old man felt like crying. “After I was trapped in these ruins, I regretted. Because, no one could get past that formation on the door. I had waited for several tens of thousands of years, and there were countless people who had arrived outside the door. Yet, all of them were eaten by that mystic beast. You people were the first to enter here.”

Zhu Yao recalled Xiao Yi’s protagonist cheat, and determined that what this old man said was not false. Could it really be that only he could enter this place? Zhu Yao picked the chest that the old man dropped at the side.

The “Wood Spirit” was still staying inside obediently.

“Little sapling, I’m bringing you out of here. Are you willing to follow me?”

“Chick~” The Wood Spirit in the chest raised its branches, doing a cheering action.

At that moment, Zhu Yao found some comfort. Picking up the sword on the ground, she raised her head and looked towards the sky. If they were unable to beat it, then she would flee with her master. She had already found the thing she needed anyway.

As to something like reputation... What’s that? Can it be eaten?

Zhu Yao took a big step forward, yet, suddenly, a golden light shone at the side. Turning her head to look, Xiao Yi's body was currently emitting out a golden-colored light. A golden-colored layer suddenly floated out of his body, slowly forming into the shape of a sword.

The color of that sword was actually extremely unusual. It was dyed entirely in red, just like fresh, flowing blood.

“Metal Spirit!” The old man who had just crawled up, looked at that sword with a shocked expression. “This... This is the Metal Spirit! But... Why is it red?”

That's the Metal Spirit? Zhu Yao had always known that Xiao Yi managed to comprehend his Sword Intent because of his possession of the Metal Spirit. However, only now did she know that the Metal Spirit was actually sword-shaped as well. But, clearly, Xiao Yi was still unconscious, so why would the Metal Spirit appear by itself? And it did not seem to be very friendly.

The light emitting out from the Metal Spirit became even brighter, and it's color was still that unusual red. It was formed by the spiritualization of spiritual energy in the first place, so it should have been the purest and cleanest existence in the world. However, it's current state, forget about purity, it looked as though it was demonized.

“Chick?” The little sapling seemed to have been infected by that red aura as well, and it's initial white and tender branches were

slowly dyed in red, even its green leaves were beginning to change in color. After shaking for a moment, it actually floated up, and flew towards the Metal Spirit.

That Metal Spirit was calling out to it!

“Little sapling!” Zhu Yao called out, however, the Wood Spirit did not have a single reaction. As though it had been mesmerized, it continued to float towards the Metal Spirit.

In a panic, Zhu Yao kept the Wood Spirit within her own divine sense, isolating it from the outside world.

Only then did the redness on the Wood Spirit’s body begin to fade, returning to its initial color. Because of this short moment, it seemed to have tired itself out excessively, the entire sapling curled, slowly shrinking into a ball.

Zhu Yao’s instincts were telling her, there was something wrong with that Metal Spirit.

The Metal Spirit which had lost its guiding target, became even more violent, and began to take in a large amount of metal spiritual energy from the surroundings. In an instant, stones and sand flew, the surrounding air began to surge, and even the the sky began to sway.

“Not good, the formation here has been broken.” The old man’s figure began to fade for a bit.

Amidst this, a bang was heard. A mystic beast fell from the sky, and its gigantic figure was covered entirely in blood. Immediately after, a white figure flew down as well, his clothes were as white as snow, and was not tainted in the least.

“Master.” Zhu Yao instantly heaved a sigh of relief, and could not help but step forward and praise him.

Yu Yan coldly said. “Leave this place.”

Zhu Yao’s sprinting steps paused, and after a careful look did she realize that her master’s presence was very unstable, and even his figure had begun to fade.

“Master...” He was injured.

While that demonic beast had stood up once again, its entire body emitted out an even stronger pressure than before, roaring as it charged towards Yu Yan. As though it had been utterly angered, its pair of bloody-red eyes stared straight at him.

Just as it was about to pounce over, suddenly, the sky and ground suddenly shook. Earlier, what Zhu Yao saw was a barren land in front of her, and when the scenery changed again, they were actually still standing in the ruins.

The palace was collapsing at the speed visible to the naked eyes, and a ray of golden light surged upwards, breaking through the

ceiling and rushed straight towards the sky. The metal spiritual energy from all directions drew towards that pillar of light.

The mystic beast seemed to have caught itself within that pillar of light, and was unable to stand steadily. Hence, it could only jump to and fro, leaving the radius of the pillar of light.

“Metal Spirit?” Raising his head to look at the pillar of light which suddenly appeared, Yu Yan began to frown deeply.

He formed a hand-seal with a single hand, yet, he did not attack, rather, he summoned a flying sword. He still did not turn his head back, and simply said this with a tone that was filled with sternness he had never used till then. “Fly out of this place with this sword. This sword will protect you until you reach the entrance of the Secret Realm.”

“Master?”

“The metal spiritual energy particles have gone berserk, I’m afraid this entire Secret Realm might even sink under them.” Yu Yan said. “Remember to fly out with all of your strength, do not hesitate!”

“Then what about you, master?” Clearly, he was already injured.

Yu Yan finally turned around, stretching his hand, he stroked her head, carrying that face which was still as cold as ever. “Hurry and leave. I’m just a thread of divine sense. Even if I disappear, there

wouldn't be a problem.”

“How could you be fine?” Are you taking me as a three-year-old child? One's divine sense originated from the real body, and was a part of one's soul. If one's soul was missing, how could the real body be fine? “If master isn't going, I'm not going either.”

“Be obedient.” Yu Yan's expression sank. “Master will wait for you at Jade Forest Mountain.”

“Lies! I'm not a child, you know!”

It looked as though Yu Yan was about to say something, however, the mystic beast had already charged out of the metal spiritual energy's grasp, persistently pouncing towards Yu Yan.

The hell, this damn hateful little animal.

“Hurry and leave!” Yu Yan waved his hand, and Zhu Yao had already been sent dozens of meters away, as he turned around and took it on.

That spiritual sword that had been summoned by Yu Yan, stopped right before Zhu Yao.

Zhu Yao tightly clenched her fists. She was basically unable to help at all, however, she was unable to leave behind her master and go off alone.

There must be another way.

After looking around the surroundings, she realized, that old man whose head had turned Buddha-like after being bashed by her, was carrying Xiao Yi and sneakily moving towards a pillar on the right.

“Damn gay old man.” Zhu Yao picked up a rock, and threw towards him. With a ‘pa’ sound, she struck on target.

“Aiyo!” The old man cried out. “Little girly, I have already given you the Wood Spirit, what else do you want?”

“Why are you being so sneaky for?”

The old man’s expression changed, yet, it instantly returned to normal. “Hoho, little girly, you have misunderstood me. I was simply afraid that this kid would get injured, so I pulled him out.”

Zhu Yao did not believe in the slightest, and coldly stared at him. Hugging her fist, she strongly cracked it, emitting out a crackle. Are you telling or not?

The old man swallowed his saliva, and only then did he answer honestly. “Uh... Little girly. Look, that berserk Metal Spirit doesn’t seem it will stop anytime soon, and instead, will charge right out of the Secret Realm. When that time comes, the Secret Realm will collapse. If, by then, the Metal Spirit still doesn’t stop, there might

be a possibility that it will implicate the entire cultivation world. I see that Demigod-stage practitioner has a high cultivation level, if he were to make a gamble with his full strength, he might be able to stop it...”

Zhu Yao ruthlessly stared at him.

The old man’s shrunk his neck. “Uhh... I’m saying that under this pillar, incidentally, there’s a teleportation formation. Although it’s unusable now, if this Secret Realm collapses, or when the disturbance of the metal spiritual energy reaches its peak, the natural laws of this place might slacken for a moment, and when that time comes, we can be automatically transferred out of here.”

Chapter 61: Zhu Yao Version 3.0

Zhu Yao went silent for a moment, clenching the fists next to her. “Then what about him? If the Secret Realm collapses, what will happen to my master?”

“He’s just a thread of divine sense, as long as you have a chance to get out, there will always be a way to fix one’s divine sense.”

“And what if it can’t be fixed?”

“Uhh... Uhh... Then probably, during the Ascension Lightning Tribulation, he will have to suffer quite a bit.” If one’s divine sense was incomplete, forget about suffering, even if he was a Lightning Spirit Vein Holder, probably, he would still be zapped to the point where his ashes would not even remain.

Zhu Yao instantly felt her heart aching. As expected, her master had already resolved himself to death, hence, he was so anxious to have her leave.

Taking a deep breath, she held in the surging heart-plugging feeling. “Old man, what other ways are there to stop the berserk Metal Spirit?”

“Unless there’s a spiritual power, equivalent to the strength of the Metal Spirit, suppressing it, we only have that Demigod-stage practitioner to stop that metal spiritual energy disturbance.”

“Spiritual energy disturbance...” Zhu Yao muttered these few words, she seemed to have...

Zhu Yao had already made her decision in her heart. Circulating her spiritual energy, she summoned vines and pulled over Lu Cha from not far away. This gay old man, as she thought, he did not care about the lives of women.

Placing Lu Cha beside Xiao Yi, she ignored the old man’s look of despise, took down the jade pendant her master gave her from her neck, and placed it in Lu Cha’s pocket.

“Tasyoluk” had a formation outside that prevented practitioners whose cultivation level were above Azoth from entering. Hence, her master could only reside in this jade pendant. As long as this jade pendant were to leave the Secret Realm, her master would naturally be sent back.

Zhu Yao sat in a lotus position, and sensed the lightning spiritual energy she was most familiar with from the surroundings.

Now...

Let’s have this spiritual energy disturbance kick up a notch!

That’s right, she was taking in the spiritual energy into her body.

In her experience as a practitioner, she had only recklessly taken in lightning spiritual energy once, and that one time had brought

about a lightning spiritual energy disturbance. After that, when she was forming her Azoth Core, her master had only allowed her to take in energy from those purple bolts of lightning.

It's just spiritual energy disturbance, right? Metal Spirit? So what!

This lady here knows how to do it too!

As Zhu Yao willed it, the surrounding lightning spiritual energy particles, carrying sparkling little tails, began to pour crazily into her body, endlessly. Her meridians once again gave out that familiar pain, and Zhu Yao could only clench her teeth and hold on. She recklessly circulated her Azoth Core, suppressing the spiritual energy.

In an instant, the sky which was initially dim, became as dark as the night. Within the tumbling clouds, lightning flashed and thunder roared.

In an instant, Yu Yan noticed his disciple's abnormality. He turned and looked shockingly at his disciple who was on the ground. This stupid disciple, what is she thinking?

"Stop now!" Yu Yan struck away that pestering mystic beast with his sword, and flew towards his disciple. However, he was blocked by the layers of lightning spiritual energy, his cold face carried anger that he never had before. "Yu Wang, you have only just formed your Azoth Core, and you're unable to endure such amount of lightning spiritual energy."

Zhu Yao looked at him, and could not help but spit out a sentence. “Your sister’s Desire...”

Remember your own disciple’s name well, hey!

“Be obedient.”

Zhu Yao still ignored him. Disciples had their rebellious phases as well, you know.

Releasing her divine sense, the pouring of lightning spiritual energy became even more wild, and in an instant, a white gigantic flash of lightning, as though it was a gigantic dragon, charged towards the sky, as if it was trying to tear apart the entire sky.

“Yu Wang!” Yu Yan’s frowned deeply. He had decided to circulate all of the spiritual energy inside him to break apart that ray of lightning, and forcefully pull his disciple out of it.

In an instant, the entire Secret Realm twisted.

“Now!” The old man’s expression carried delight, and instantly, he activated the formation. The formation brightly lit up, and the three figures began to disappear. In just a moment, they had already been sent outside.

Yu Yan, who was just about to charge out and save her, in a flash,

disappeared without a trace as well.

At that moment, Zhu Yao finally heaved a sigh of relief. Great, I still made it in time.

However, the Metal Spirit did not stop.

She could feel her cultivation level rising explosively. However, with every increase, the pain in her body would increase. Her veins all over her body had already been torn apart, and the severe pain was almost causing her to lose sense of her four limbs. However, the pain seemed to have been coming from her divine sense, and it was basically unable to subside. She could already sense her Azoth Core shattering apart.

Squeezing out her last bit of consciousness, she struggled to control the lightning spiritual energy, wrapping them around the Metal Spirit's pillar of light.

Roooooar~~ ㄥ|`o'|ㄣ

A roar sounded, that mystic beast suddenly came out from nowhere, yet, when it was unable to find his earlier opponent, it became even more furious. Hence, it roared and growled at Zhu Yao, the only living being on-site.

Why would Zhu Yao even have the mood now to care about it? She instantly turned her head over and scolded.

“Shut up!”

When those words fell, a bolt of Heavenly Lightning zapped towards it, emitting out a heaven-trembling roar. However, it did not land on the mystic beast, but on the sea waters which were severed off at the side. In an instant, a large half of the sea waters dried up, revealing a big piece of empty land.

“Meooww....” The mystic beast seemed to have been frightened that tyrannical strike, and even the sound it made had changed. Its stomach laid on the ground, its tail was shivering, and its two paws held onto its head, as it no longer dared to look at her.

Zhu Yao no longer had the energy to care about this freak. Her consciousness had already begun to blur, and the spiritual energy in her body had already reached its peak. Her cultivation had already rushed towards that of an Azoth Paragon’s, and the spiritual energy was still rapidly increasing.

Her Azoth Core could not endure such spiritual might, and had already shattered. She knew that the best way to keep herself alive now was to form her Nascent Soul.

However...

The hell, she did not know how. Her master had yet to teach her that! This was largely equivalent to someone who managed to skip grades and entered the high school that one had dreamed of, only to have the teacher tell her that what was taught here was the university curriculum!

Haah, did her life have to be this unfortunate!?

Hence, she could only have the lightning spiritual energy particles wrap about that berserk metal spiritual energy particles with all her might. She saw the two making contact with each other, and began to disperse. Only when the entire pillar of light was wrapped around by the white lightning, did that pillar of light, as though it had been blown away, along with that wild ray of lightning, disappear without a trace.

The surroundings were instantly utterly silent.

Zhu Yao fell onto the ground. She had completely turned into a bloody person, and no longer had the ability to take in spiritual energy into her body.

She was actually still alive. As she thought, heavens cared about good people. Even though she was unable to move, Zhu Yao had the silent impulse to give heavens a thumbs up. Like a bloody pile of mess, her body spread on the ground. She looked at the Metal Spirit floating in mid-air, as it disappeared from the sky with a flash of light. It seemed like it had returned to Xaio Yi.

Zhu Yao felt that she had to sleep for several days and nights before she could get up. Suddenly, she heard loud bangs. When she turned to look, at a place to her right, it had begun to cave in at a large scale. At the place where the ground was, a large piece of black region. She completely could not see anything clearly at all, yet, it looked as though it was a gigantic black mouth, currently

swallowing this Secret Realm.

Zhu Yao suddenly recalled the words of that Sharkman – Severed Lands!

The hell! If she had known she would leave, why the hell did she arrogantly force her master back?

Is it too late to regret my decision? Master... Come back!

Unfortunately, facts had proven that, even a prized treasure could not be used to buy medicine for regrets.

The caving in spread to where she was lying at, and then, she felt into the deep abyss. She continued to fall, however, she did not feel any pain.

Zhu Yao could not help but rejoice a little. She was fortunate that she was only falling, at the most, she would only lose some arms and legs. According to the no-death rule when one were to fall from a cliff and enter another world, she would still be alive.

As she thought of this, suddenly, in front of her, with a sizzle, a familiar dialogue box appeared. And this was written neatly on it.

Congratulations, you have thoroughly died once again. It's time for you to resurrect. Please choose: Yes or Yes!

Haah~ This is getting on my nerves!

What happened to the promised no-death rule?

This lady here has yet to die, this lady here is still living, and I'm still breathing.

However, that dialogue box completely did not care about her objection, and began to crazily pop up one after another in front of her.

Zhu Yao's angry!

So as to prevent the tragedy last time from happening again, Zhu Yao decided to close her eyes.

However... why did they pop up in her mind as well!?

Not choosing. This lady here isn't going to choose at all.

Even when the dialogue boxes had filled up her entire vision, Zhu Yao did not have the intention to choose.

The dialogue boxes finally stopped their wild pop-ups, and then, another dialogue box appeared, carrying a red exclamation mark, and a warning.

You have went past the time limit. Your choice will now be automatically selected! Countdown in 10 seconds...

9、8、7.....

The hell! What happened to your humanity? Do you believe that I will ask for your bank account number?

3.....2.....1

In the next second, Zhu Yao once again saw that damn loading bar!

The protagonist Zhu Yao is dead!

The story has... Your sister's story has ended! – flips table –

Once again, when she saw light, the first thing Zhu Yao did was inspect her body. Great, long arms, long legs. Very normal, not an infant, and there's nothing suspicious stuffed inside her mouth.

She looked around for something that could reflect light. Incidentally, there's a clean and smooth rock that was even shining light in front of her. Zhu Yao instantly sprinted over, and inspected herself in the reflection.

Great, very complete. Inside the reflection was a very upright young girl, wearing a navy-colored gown. Her hair was not very

long, yet, it was nicely bunned up on top of her head. Her eyes were filled with heroism, and the most important aspect was that her height was around hundred and seventy centimeters. Zhu Yao, who had been a person of short stature for several years, expressed her satisfaction.

The only flaw was, she was still flat-chested. Touching in her chest, it was even flatter than the little bun back then. Zhu Yao silently retorted that it might be because all of her nourishment had went to her height, hence, the flatness.

“Little brother, mind if I ask if ‘Ancient Hill Sect’ is written here?” Just as she was inspecting her new body, suddenly, a youth appeared next to her, and patted on her shoulder.

“Of course not! The Ancient Hill Sect is...” Zhu Yao said as she shook her head, yet, she swallowed back her words after seeing the three big words stated on the stone.

The hell, it really was the Ancient Hill Sect.

“Little brother?” The youth saw that he was stunned, and could not help but pat on his shoulder again. “I’m sorry, I’m a wandering practitioner, so I don’t really recognize words. I’m just about to seek admittance in the Ancient Hill Sect. I heard from rumors that there’s a teleportation formation here, so I came here to take a look. Little brother, help me look at it, is this the place?”

“Uh, it’s here alright.” Zhu Yao rubbed off the cold sweat off her head. She did not expect that she resurrected right at the doorstep

of her own home.

“Thank you, little brother.” The youth returned him a bow, and then, walked towards the right of the stone. The formation lit up, and his figure began to fade, yet, he did not forget to bid her goodbye. “Little brother, see you.”

“See you.” Zhu Yao returned a reply, and momentarily felt a little strange. Why the hell did he call her little brother? She once again looked at the reflection in the stone. A navy gown with bunned up hair. So she was wearing a menswear, and adding that she was tall, it was no wonder he had mistaken her.

Arc 03

Chapter 62: Identity Verification

Zhu Yao sighed, and was silently disgusted with that person's eyes. How could he think that she was a man!?

Unconsciously, she used her hands to tidy up her clothes, however, she felt there was something additional in between her legs, and suddenly had a bad premonition.

She turned, and silently pulled out her pants...

“.....”

No, no, no. There must definitely be something wrong with the way she pulled out her pants. How could she have an additional organ? Let's try again.

She pulled her pants out again...

And closed it! She must definitely be seeing things.

Rubbing her eyes, she once again pulled out her pants...

And closed it.

“Ahhhh!!!!”

Zhu Yao screamed out.

Why!? Why!? Why!? Why!? Why did I change into a man!? This doesn't make sense!

The reason why she resurrected next to a rock, was so as to make it convenient for her to knock herself to death?

Zhu Yao instantly felt terrible, and could deeply sense the evil intentions of this entire world.

Whoever you are, come out! Let us talk about life!

“Chick?”

In front of her, a green light flashed, and a green-colored thing leapt out.

Zhu Yao looked at this bonsai which just appeared right in front of her, and it was even not even rooted in soil. It gave a quite a scare.

“What the heck is this?”

That bonsai leapt forward, curled its little branch, and rubbed it against her leg. “Chick~”

This familiar voice...

“You’re Wood Spirit?”

“Chick!” The bonsai nodded.

“Why are you here? And you even grew up so suddenly?” Zhu Yao stared at it a little shockingly. Back then, when it was in that chest, it was still a little beansprout, and it even only had two leaves. How did it suddenly turn into a bonsai?

“Chick, chick chick chick chick chick...” The Wood Spirit strongly waved around its little branches, as though it was explaining to her.

Unfortunately, she did not understand a single thing.

“Forget it! It’s fine as long as you’re still alive!” Back then, as she was panicking, she placed it into her divine sense. She did not expect that it would follow her along with her after her resurrection. Zhu Yao stroked its little leaf. It couldn’t really grow into a tree, right?

“Chick!” The Wood Spirit stretched out two little vines, forming two small arcs. Then, it connected them together, forming a heart shape.

Was this... giving her praise?

Zhu Yao felt it was a little funny, and strongly stroked its leaf, yet, she touched something slippery.

“Meoow~” A little beast head popped out of the leaf, it’s a miniature-sized ferocious face. It was actually that mystic beast.

Reflexively, Zhu Yao’s stroke turned into a slap, and the slap swung right towards it.

And then, a ‘pa’ sound was heard. Gurururu. The mystic beast rolled a dozen of rounds, was sent a good few meters out, and only stopped when it struck onto a tree trunk.

“Me...ow...” The miniature-sized mystic beast crawled up with a pitiful look, as though it was hurt from the fall, it limped its way back to her.

Zhu Yao’s heart clenched, and activated all of her defensive mechanisms. She had not forgotten how ferocious this mystic beast was in the Secret Realm. She habitually thought of summoning her own flying sword, only to realize that she did not have a single thread of spiritual energy in her body. The hell, damnable resurrection debuff.

She turned around and carried up the rock beside her. Even if she did not have any spiritual energy, she still had physical strength. “Don’t come near me! If you come any closer... I will smash you to death!”

The mystic beast was startled. Its pair of black slippery eyes looked directly at her... looked at her...

And then, slowly, a layer of mist rose, as though it was about to cry in the very next moment.

Zhu Yao who was carrying the rock: “.....”

Hey, you’re the one bullying people. What are you trying to pull here?

“Wuu... wawawa...” As expected, that mystic beast laid on the ground, pedaled its paws, and began to wail out loudly.

“.....”

“Waaah...”

“Stop crying!”

“Waawaa....”

“I won’t smash you anymore.”

“Waaaaaa...”

“I really won’t smash you, alright?”

“Waaaaaa...”

“Enough!”

“Waaaaaa.....”

“Shut up!”

“.....” The crying stopped.

It just had to make her angry. Zhu Yao felt a terrible headache. Walking over, she squatted next to the miniature-sized mystic beast, and poked its little head. “Tell me, why are you here?”

“Meow~”

“Why are you following me?”

“Meow~”

“Just what are you planning?”

“Meow~”

“Meow, your ass!” Zhu Yao raised her hand and gave it a slap. “You’re still acting? Don’t think I’m unaware that you’re able to speak.” That old man in the Secret Realm had already said it, this thing descended from the Higher Realm. Demonic beasts that did not possess the ability to shapeshift, would be able to change its form after reaching the tenth-rank. At the very least, it was an eleventh-ranked demonic beast, so it was impossible for it to be unable to speak.

The mystic beast used its two front paws to stroke the part of the head she smacked, while it continued to look at her with a pitiful look, and weakly squeezed out a response. “It hurts~”

Zhu Yao’s expression darkened. She hugged and cracked her fists, emitting crackling sounds, as she said with a cold smile. “Do you believe that I will hurt you even more?”

The mystic beast’s expression paled, and instantly properly knelt down. Fearfully looking at her, its little eyes rolled. “I dropped into the Severed Lands as well, that’s why I’m here.”

“Lies!” Zhu Yao once again gave it a slap. “The number of things that fell into the Severed Lands were many, why are you the only one here then? Are you thinking I’m dumb!?”

It lowered its head, and looked as though it admitted its mistake. “Before I fell, I... I hid inside your divine sense as well, so...”

Zhu Yao frowned, this might be a possibility. Back then, she was only holding onto her last breath, if someone were to take that

opportunity to enter her divine sense, it would be absolutely easy.

“Then why did you become like this?”

The mystic beast’s tone was filled with even more sadness. “I don’t know either. My cultivation is still present, yet, there’s not a single strand of spiritual power in my body.”

That’s because you did not charge your batteries. Zhu Yao instantly understood that its situation was the same as hers. They just had to get struck by lightning, and the issue would be solved.

“Then why did you hide inside the Wood Spirit?” Zhu Yao continued to ask. “Since you’re already out here, shouldn’t you take the opportunity when I’m unprepared, and run far, far away?”

“I... I wish to follow you.” The mystic beast embarrassingly scraped the floor with its claws.

“Why?”

“You’re very strong!” Its pair of eyes suddenly looked towards her, as though it had seen its idol, sparkling stars filled its eyes.

He had never seen anyone capable of reviving from the dead, even if it was in the Higher Realm, he had not seen one either. And at the moment when she resurrected, he could faintly sense the presence of a thread of Heavenly Will. “If I were to follow you, I

will definitely be able to return to the Higher Realm sooner. I can help you, and I can even become your contracted beast.”

Zhu Yao replied it with a simple “Hoho!”

No matter how friendly he looked, it was still a demonic beast. Earlier, it was still her enemy, and had fought with the intention to kill.

What she could not forgive the most was, it even injured her master. That was simply unforgivable.

“Goodbye!”

“You... Don’t go!” The mystic beast became a little anxious, and directly hugged onto her legs, as it was dragged along as she walked. “I’m really useful. I’m an eleventh-rank. There’s very few demonic beasts in this world that’s capable of going against me.”

Continue walking...

“My nose is very sensitive, I can help you find spiritual herbs...”

“I don’t need it!”

“I can help you find spiritual weapons...”

“No need!”

“I can even help you rein in demonic beasts.”

“I don’t care!”

“I... I can even help you warm up your bed.”

“Scram!”

Zhu Yao felt she had been marked by that mystic beast. No matter where she went, it would follow. And as it followed, it would let out very pitiful ‘wuuwuu’ sounds. She could not bother to deal with it, in any case, currently, it did not have any spiritual power, so it was unable to hurt her.

Keeping the Wood Spirit in her divine sense once again, Zhu Yao planned on returning to Jade Forest Mountain first. At the very least, she had to inform her master of her well-being. And, according to her previous experience, another hundred years should have passed again.

Back then, when she was killed by the fox demon, her master had actually destroyed the entire Silent Melancholy Forest out of anger. This time, she forcefully sent her master out of “Tasyoluk”, he might even be more furious.

What she was even more worried about was Wang Xuzhi. That little wimp had always acted on impulse, without caring about the

consequences. She was afraid that if she was not looking, he would run to find Xiao Yi and seek his own death again.

The more she thought about it, the more worried she became. After inspecting her vicinity, this place should be one of the teleportation formations that were set up by the sect in various locations. The actual distance to Ancient Hill Sect was actually really far. Looking at the three large words “Ancient Hill Sect” that were written on the rock, she walked into the teleportation formation beside it.

With a flash of light, she had arrived on an island in the seas. And in the sky above the island, were several floating mountains. This was exactly the scenery she was familiar with.

She had returned.

Zhu Yao raised her head and looked at the tallest mountain that was floating there, and instantly felt a peaceful sensation. She really wanted to immediately fly over, and hug that stupid and lacking master who had always played a fool out of his own disciple.

Then here came the problem...

How was she going to go back? Her Dantian was absolutely empty, and did not have even a single thread of spiritual energy. She was completely unable to fly at all!

Raising her head, she looked at the disciples flying about in the sky. Zhu Yao felt deeply saddened, as she hoped for a disciple to notice her, and bring her up the mountain, before finding an excuse to return to the Jade Forest Mountain.

However, she had waited for half a day, although there were many people flying about in the sky, not one of them took a look at the island here. Every single of them was rushing in and out.

Especially that one who was flying especially fast, with a flash of his white figure, he disappeared without a trace. Not even his figure could be clearly seen, before he disappeared with a whoosh.

And with another whoosh, he returned.

Ehhhhhhh! The hell! He really came back!

The white figure flashed, and a figure dressed in snow-white clothes stopped in front of her. That face, which looked as though a thousand years of ice had covered it, was emitting out a cold aura, as though she would obtain frostbites if she were to go take a single step closer.

Yu Yan stared straight at the unfamiliar youth in front of him, and did not say a single word for a long time.

Disciple?

No wait, why is he male?

However, on his body, there's clearly the presence of a strand of his own divine sense. His disciple had all along been stupid, and was even specialized in courting death in various ways, it might be just a disguise.

Master. Zhu Yao felt so moved, she was about to cry. As she thought, her master was reliable, he was here to pick her back again. Her voice choked out, and she was just about to charge forward and hug his legs.

“Mas...”

Before she could even finish, Yu Yan suddenly took a few fast steps, and stood a step away from Zhu Yao. He gently reached out his hand to hold onto her collar, and then...

With a whoosh, it was pulled open. The action was crisp and without the slightest of hesitation.

Zhu Yao, whose clothes were pulled apart: “.....”

Flat!? Yu Yan felt a little conflicted. He inspected her chest twice, and then, his light of sight slowly moved towards her lower body.

.....

Reflexively, Zhu Yao tightly grabbed onto the top of her pants,

and screamed. “If you dare to take off my pants, I will dare to destroy you, my master.”

Even if she had turned into a man, there was no need for him to strip her naked in their first meeting, right!?

Yu Yan frowned, and only then did he take back his hand. He stared at the unfamiliar man in front of him, and was still uncertain.

Chapter 63: Making A Fool Out Of A Beast Without Discussion

“Yu Wang?”

“Your sister’s Desire!”

“Seems like I’m right.” Yu Yan heaved a sigh of relief.

Zhu Yao expression darkened. Was there a need to use this type of method to identify her?

“Let’s return.” Yu Yan sighed, picking up his own disciple, he rose in the air. In an instant, they returned to the peak of Jade Forest Mountain.

Looking at his disciple’s new look from head to toe once again, he could not accept it no matter what. She actually turned into a man. An unclear knot surfaced deep in his heart for some odd reasons.

“How did you become like this?”

Zhu Yao shook her head. “I don’t know either. I fell into the Severed Lands, and after I woke up, I became like this?”

Master, we’re no longer able to become good girl friends, I wonder if you’re looking for a gay friend?

“Severed Lands?” Yu Yan frowned even deeper. Recalling everything that happened in the Secret Realm, his heart was filled with unrestrained fury, and the cold aura he emitted became even more evident.

Zhu Yao could not help but feel a chill down her spine. Master looks so scary, is he about to burst out? She silently took a step back.

And another step back.

“Not complying to your master’s orders, and acting arbitrarily, you need to be punished!”

Zhu Yao’s little heart trembled. “Umm... Is it alright if you don’t hit my face?”

“Come over here!”

“Master...”

Yu Yan did not say another word, it’s just that the cold aura around his body was becoming even more rapid. It seemed like she was unable to escape from this. Zhu Yao could only slowly, and slowly, moved towards him, and heroically stretched out her left hand.

Hit me then, as long as you don't hit my face.

Yu Yan was startled for a moment. Looking at the hand in front of him, his brows furrowed. With a wave of his hand, he moved a piece of rock over and sat down on it. Then, he strongly pulled his disciple's hand, and had her entirely pressed on his thighs. Aiming at a certain part of her body, he began spanking.

The hell, why is he hitting my buttocks? Zhu Yao felt like crying, as he was not being lenient in the slightest, and her lips curled from the pain.

"Aiyo, stop... stop. Master, I admit my mistake." If he were to continue spanking, her buttocks would bloom.

Yu Yan paused for a moment, and was hesitating if he was putting enough strength into his punishment.

Roar~~ ㄥ|`o'|ㄣ

At this decisive moment, that mystic suddenly popped out of nowhere, and, ignoring the difference in strength, charged at Yu Yan as it began to roar.

With a wave of his hand, Yu Yan slapped towards it. The mystic beast was instantly slammed a few dozen meters away, and once again, struck towards a tree.

It crawled up miserably. As expected of a master and his disciple,

even the way they attacked was exactly the same.

“This demonic beast...” Yu Yan recognized this demonic beast as well. Holding his disciple up and protecting her behind him, he looked as though he was about to attack.

A certain mystic beast, which was hurt from the fall, cried out. “Waaaah, mistress, he bullied me!”

“He bullied me as well.” Zhu Yao rubbed her own buttocks, and gave it a helpless look.

Master:

Master sure was ruthless, her buttocks were about to split into four.

“You subdued this mystic beast?” Yu Yan turned and looked towards his disciple.

Zhu Yao shook her head. “I did not. It wanted to follow me on its own accord.”

Yu Yan’s expression instantly turned cold, and he raised his hand, as though he was about to summon a bolt of lightning. That mystic beast trembled, hugging its head with its two paws, it miserably shouted. “I’m her beast, I’m her beast...”

Zhu Yao looked at it scornfully. At the very least, it was an eleventh-ranked demonic beast, did it have to act so pitiful?

When the mystic beast saw that she did not have any reaction, it became even more saddened, and began to roll around the ground, crying. “Wuuuuu, you even know my true name, yet you still don’t admit me as your beast. Bad person, wuu... I don’t care. I want to be your beast, I want to be your beast.”

“.....” Zhu Yao was exasperated, and she almost responded it with this line. I don’t want to be on top!

She could forget about becoming a man, but was there a need to go on the Boy’s Love route!?

“When did I ever know of your true name?” She was straight.

The mystic beast stopped, leapt up, and replied with a serious look. “When we were at the Secret Realm, didn’t you call me? You even had me open the door.”

Open the door? Zhu Yao was startled for a moment, and suddenly recalled that joke password. The corner of her lips twitched.

“You... can’t be called Sesame, right?”

The mystic beast tilted its head. “That’s right!”

The hell! Why were you named so casually? Does your parents know about this?

“Although a demonic beast’s true name has a very strong binding characteristic, it’s only restricted to demonic beasts below the tenth-rank.” Yu Yan’s expression turned cold. “Just what is your goal for following my disciple?”

The expression of the mystic beast, Sesame, instantly stiffened, however, it immediately returned to that utterly shameless look it had earlier, and it said even more miserably. “Obviously, it’s because mistress is very strong, by following her, I’m able to return to the Higher Realm much sooner.”

Yu Yan waved his hand and summoned a bolt of lightning, striking it right next to the mystic beast. Instantly, a large crafter appeared, and his expression became even colder. “Tell the truth.”

“What I said... was the truth.”

Bang! Another bolt of lightning struck. This time, however, it directly struck onto its tail. That long tail, instantly turned into two sections.

“My tail!” Sesame cried out in pain, and turned to hug its tail which had lost half of its form. However, its feet slipped, and it tumbled into the huge crater that was formed earlier, its entire body was now completely stained with dirt.

When it had finally managed to stop rolling, it turned and looked at its half severed tail which was still oozing with blood. Baring its teeth, it roared out loud, and went to pounce on Yu Yan regardless of its current state. “I’m going to duke it out with you!”

With a wave of her hand, Zhu Yao slapped right towards it, and once again, slapped it away. Hearing her master say as such, she had thought about it as well. The reason why it was following her was definitely not as simple as just ascension.

Yu Yan used an Art, and had Sesame, who was still flopping about, fixed at its position. Zhu Yao walked over, and with her palm, she patted on its beast head. “Speak, what’s your goal? An eleventh-ranked demonic beast can activate the Ascension Tribulation Lightning on its own, there’s basically no need to rely on others to ascend.”

Sesame paused for a moment, and then, refuted angrily. “When we demonic beasts face our tribulation, there’s only one out of ten chance to survive. Lightning naturally suppresses us demonic beasts, and it’s even more so if it’s the Tribulation Lightning of Ascension. I will be zapped to death.”

Yu Yan slightly narrowed his eyes, and coldly spoke. “It might be the case for other demonic beasts, but if it’s you, that’s impossible.”

“.....” Sesame was startled, and instantly stopped its struggle.

Zhu Yao suddenly recalled what that old man once said. Sesame

was a mystic beast that came from the Higher Realm, which meant that it had once faced the Ascension Tribulation, and had reached the Higher Realm alive. Then, even if it had fell back into the Lower Realm, even if it were to face another round of Tribulation Lightning, it would absolutely not pose any danger to its life.

Having realized this, Zhu Yao slowly rose and took a step back. Little animals are too smart, there's a need for humans to make up for their IQ.

Sesame looked at the two people back and forth. As though it felt that it could no longer hide it any longer, it instantly retrieved the cutesy and pitiful expression it had earlier, and its voice carried a hint of provocation. "Hmph, I didn't expect to be seen through. As expected of a Demigod-stage old monster."

Old monster?

Yu Yan frowned, and responded. "Takes one to know one."

If a Demigod-stage practitioner was considered old, then this demonic beast which had ascended long ago, was as old as the horizon. He turned to look at his own disciple. Mn, he was not old in the slightest.

Sesame's expression stiffened, and once again clenched its teeth. It took a deep breath to hold it in, and leisurely said. "Indeed, I'm capable of ascending, however, I caused some trouble in the Higher Realm back then, and it's inconvenient for me to be exposed. So, when this little lady... uh, this little kid ascends, I wish to use the

name of a contracted beast to return to the Higher Realm, so as to prevent being discovered.”

What’s the meaning of that pause earlier, hey!

“Why me?” If it only had to find someone that could ascend to bring it along, then would it not be faster if it was her master?

“Because you’re easily fooled!”

Pa! Zhu Yao once again gave it a slap. The hell, why do I feel that people that who speaks the truth, are always asking for a beating!?

“Stop hitting, stop hitting!” Sesame dodged her hand in a panic, and explained. “The words I told you earlier are not lies! The reason why I’m following you, is because you’re really strong. You have a great fate that an average person do not have.”

Great fate? Why did she not know about it? Other than dying frequently, was there any other fates?

“Even if my disciple can ascend.” Yu Yan took a step forward. “She does not need to risk doing this. She does not need to offend deities of the Higher Realm right after her ascension.”

Only then did Zhu Yao realize this. The hell. This Sesame was clearly using her as a shield.

“But before that, I will use all my abilities to help her become a deity.” Sesame looked at Yu Yan. “And in any case, even if I wish to stay here, you can’t do anything about it.”

Yu Yan’s expression sank, and instantly, killing intent rose in all directions.

However, Sesame completely did not mind at all, and continued to provoke him. “If I’m not mistaken, the reason why I’m like this, is because I do not have a single thread of spiritual power in my body. As long as I charge up my spiritual energy by taking in spiritual energy into my body, I will naturally restore myself to my previous form. I had just tried it earlier, and restored a bit of my spiritual power. You’re unable to kill me.”

Taking in spiritual energy? Zhu Yao was startled for a moment. Did she not have to be struck by lightning? Back then, her master said that the lightning had incidentally charged up the spiritual energy inside her body, and hence, restored her cultivation. So, she only had to replenish her spiritual energy, and did not need to be struck by lightning.

Uh...

She wanted to cry for her own IQ’s sake.

Yu Yan went silent, and tightened his fists. Although it was impossible for him to lose, currently, they were not in the Tasyoluk Secret Realm. If they were to fight, he was afraid that it would pull the entire Ancient Hill Sect into it. But to have such a

threatening individual staying by his disciple's side, he was unable to stay unworried.

“Lay down the Life and Death Contract.”

“Fine!” Seeing that he had compromised, Sesame was joyous, and agreed to it very happily.

Closing its eyes, its four limbs were placed on the ground. It circulated the single strand of spiritual power in its body to summon its own core, and a blue pearl could be seen flying out of its mouth, floating right about its head. Sesame raised out its front paws to touch it, and the core instantly flashed a hint of blood red, and a drop of red liquid was taken from it.

“This is my essence blood!” Sesame turned and looked towards Yu Yan, and then, returned its core into its own body.

Yu Yan spread out his palm, and the drop of blood automatically flew towards him, floating right above its palm. He turned and looked towards his disciple beside him. “Take out your hand.”

“Ah?” Zhu Yao was a little dazed from the scene, yet, she still obediently reached out her hand. What is this for?

Yu Yan stretched out his hands and rolled up her sleeves, revealing her entire arm. He pressed the drop of blood into the back of her hand, and instantly, there was an additional red dot on her hand, blood red and dripping.

Why did she feel like she was being tested for her virginity?

Sesame was a little unhappy. Clearly, Life and Death Contracts had always been tapped on the forehead, why did he pressed it on her hand? Recalling that he was its mistress' master, it held his comments back in.

“Alright, from now on, I’m yours.” Sesame rolled around on the ground, and returned to its former shameless look. “You have to properly pamper me, alright?”

She felt like beating someone.

“Mistress, I’m going to recover my spiritual energy for now. You must think about me!” After saying that, it took the half of its tail that was severed earlier from the lightning strike, and with one leap and another, it had ran far away.

Zhu Yao: “.....”

Just what the hell happened? Can someone explain it to me?

“This is a blood contract!” Yu Yan rolled down her sleeves, and explained. “As long as this contract exists, if you’re injured, the same injury will be applied on the body of the contracted. This is a contract for mutual death with demonic beasts.”

“So, if I’m injured, it will be injured as well. Then if it’s injured, will I...”

“No!”

In other words, it’s an one-sided suppression?

“Then if I were to die?” She recalled something.

“Naturally, it will die as well.” Yu Yan calmly replied.

The corner of Zhu Yao’s lips twitched, and bitterly raised out two fingers. “Master, I have already died twice, because of this, you can’t have...”

Yu Yan’s expression became even calmer, as he reached out his hand to stroke her head. “Return to the cottage, let me help you inspect your injuries.”

“.....”

Master, is it really alright for you to divert the topic like this? Clearly, you’re making a fool out of that mystic beast, right!? And, where did you see that I’m injured? There’s absolutely no need to inspect, right!?

Chapter 64: The Stuck Cultivation

After a few minutes, Zhu Yao then realized how necessary it was to inspect her body.

“Your Azoth Core has been shattered.” Yu Yan retracted the divine sense he used to inspect his disciple’s Dantian, and his expression was heavy.

“Then, I...” If my Core has been shattered, shouldn’t it be game over?

“Although your Core has been shattered, your realm is actually at the Azoth Paragon level.” Yu Yan deeply frowned. “It’s a little similar to the shattered Core right before nourishing one’s Nascent Soul, but, because you currently don’t possess spiritual energy, there’s completely no trace of you forming your Nascent Soul.”

“What master means is... I’m stuck?”

Yu Yan nodded.

“.....”

The hell, when others nourished their Nascent Souls, either they would die from their Cores being destroyed, or they would successfully raise their cultivation. What’s the meaning of hers being stuck right in the middle?

“In this period of time, refrain from taking in spiritual energy to recover your cultivation.” Yu Yan instructed with a stern look.

“What happens if I recover my cultivation?”

“If your body possesses spiritual power, you will definitely be forced to form your Nascent Soul. When that time comes, your spiritual power will be insufficient. If you were to take in spiritual energy then, it will cause a spiritual energy disturbance, but if you don’t take in spiritual energy, your Nascent Soul formation will fail.” When that time came, she would definitely die from her Core being destroyed.

“Then, what am I supposed to do?” Zhu Yao felt like crying. She had the cultivation, yet, not the spiritual power. Did she have to quietly become a cripple for the rest of her life?

“No need to worry.” Yu Yan stroked her head. “Wait out as I find a place with abundant lightning spiritual energy, you can directly nourish your Nascent Soul then.”

Although that was the case, Zhu Yao knew her situation wasn’t optimistic. The spiritual energy in this world all followed a certain rule. For example, water spiritual energy was abundant at the waterside, wood spiritual energy was abundant in forests, fire spiritual energy was abundant in volcanoes, metal spiritual energy was abundant near mines, while earth spiritual energy, even more so, was everywhere.

Yet, she just had to be a Lightning Spirit Vein Holder. She had

never known of anywhere abundant with lightning spiritual energy, and a place like that was simply only found in legends. Of course, other than this method, it could be possible with having the various Spirits by the person's side as well. An example would be Xiao Yi's Metal spirit. As long as he willed for all of the metal spiritual energy in the world, he would be able to use it. However, in this world, there were all five of the different Spirits of metal, wood, water, fire and earth, yet, the Lightning Spirit simply did not exist. Isn't this a complete bullshit setting!?

“Chick~” As though it had sensed her depressed feelings, the Wood Spirit leapt out of her divine sense. Stretching a soft green vine, as though it was to console her, the vine wrapped around her wrist. “Chick?”

“This is... the Wood Spirit?” Yu Yan looked at the little tree which suddenly leapt out.

Only then did Zhu Yao realize that she had yet to tell her master about the things regarding the Wood Spirit. “I encountered it in Tasyoluk. Back then, it and Sesame hid in my divine sense, and when I resurrected, they came over as well.”

“Mn.” Yu Yan nodded. Actually, he had already guessed most of it. His disciple had changed her look, yet, that mystic beast could actually appear instantly by her side, so it had definitely come along with her. If it had hid in her divine sense back then, then it could be understood completely.

“Master, I have something that I need to tell you.” Zhu Yao pondered for a moment, and decided that it was still best to clearly

explain everything to her master. When she hid the truth from him, it had always caused her to feel a deep guilt and remorse. And, it was not like it was something shameful, so why could she not talk about it? “Actually, I’m not a person from this world.”

“Oh.” Yu Yan calmly replied.

“.....” Oh? Just an oh, and that’s it? This reaction wasn’t right. “Master, I’m saying, I’m not a person of the cultivation world. I came from another world, a place completely different from here.”

“I know that.”

“Ah! Ah!?” What did you know? “When did you know about that?”

Yu Yan turned his head and pondered for a moment, before answering. “The first day when you climbed the mountain.”

“The hell!” Zhu Yao could not help but swear. The hell was this? Then why the hell was she so anxious earlier for?

“Your words and actions are different from ordinary people.” Yu Yan calmly analyzed. “Back then, I guessed that you came from a certain unknown place, and adding your affinity towards Lightning Spiritual Energy that exceeds ordinary people, I’m even more sure about it. Not to mention that you have resurrected twice.”

“.....” Why did she feel like she was the only idiot in this world?

Resentment....

Raising her head, she shot a resentful lightwave at her master.

However, Yu Yan calmly continued to mess up her hair persistently. “Is there anything else?”

“.....” Do not speak to me, I’m very sad now. With my IQ, I might as well catch chickens!

“Although I know of this, do not speak of this easily to anyone else. Understand?”

“Of course! I’m not...”

Oh no, why did she suspect that she was really an idiot!?

A certain master continued to stroke her head.

Zhu Yao might as well tell her master about everything. Beginning from her work in the modern era, to the irregularities after she crossed into this world. However, they had a generation gap of an entire world, so, a lot of effort had to be put in to fill in the gaps.

Hence, the main point had completely derailed.

“What’s a computer?”

“Uh... A tool used to calculate.”

“The people of your world isn’t able to count?”

“No, it’s just that using a computer is much faster.”

“What’s koukou?”

“It’s QQ, a tool used to chat.”

“You people need to use a tool to chat? Are your bodies naturally crippled?”

“==, no. It’s just that it can be used to send messages through long distances.”

“Sound Transmission Talisman?”

“Right!”

“Then, what’s a net game?”

“An online game that allows people from all around the world to play as a pastime, at the same time?”

“On line? A game that connects lines together?”

“Line is just a metaphor. Generally speaking, it’s a game that allows people from all around the world to play together, even without leaving their own homes.”

“A large-scale Sound Transmission Talisman?”

”“Mn, something like that.”

“The people of your world, used so much effort to make such a large Sound Transmission Talisman, just to play a game as a pastime?” Yu Yan calmly looked at her, and gave her a ‘are there huge pits in your brains’ look.

“.....” What to do? Why did she feel that the people of her world was very silly?

“Master, what happened to Wang Xuzhi?” Zhu Yao decided to change the topic. She really worried that without her around, that little wimp had did something stupid again.

The hand on her head stopped, and a certain master’s expression sank. “Tasyoluk has already been closed, naturally, he’s on his way back here.”

“Tasyoluk!” Zhu Yao was a little shocked. Was it not supposed to open once every five hundred years? Could it be that, this time, her resurrection has costed her five hundred years of time? “When did he set out?”

Yu Yan looked at her strangely. “Naturally, he went with you.”

“With me?” Zhu Yao was startled, and suddenly had a guess. “Then master, the place you were heading to earlier...”

“Half of the divine sense that I left with you was forcefully ousted from ‘Tasyoluk’.” Yu Yan looked at her with a slightly furious expression. “Hence, I decided to rush over to take a look. I did not expect that, the moment I left Jade Forest Mountain, I would sense you on that island.”

He was thinking of rushing over to save her, right?

“I admit my mistake.” Zhu Yao hurriedly admitted her wrongs. The moment she recalled that punishment earlier, her buttocks ached. Deep in her heart, she was a little moved, but happiness filled most of it. She did not expect that her resurrection this time would be so timely, and there was basically not any difference in time. She gave a thumbs up.

Yu Yan rose. Walking away a few steps, he reached out his hand and chanted an incantation. Not a moment later, a white light flashed, and a white jade pendant laid on the palm of his hand. It was exactly the jade pendant in Tasyoluk he hid his divine sense in.

Since his disciple had returned, naturally, his divine sense did not need to be left inside any longer.

He gripped his hand, and the pendant instantly shattered. A white light floated out, and slowly returned into his body.

Zhu Yao went forward to look, and did not see any difference. Originally, she had wanted to learn this sort of cloning technique, however, her master did not have any intention to teach her. He then explained the situation of nourishing a Nascent Soul in detail, various methods to react to them, and his experiences. After pondering for a moment, he explained the various states of a Demigod as well, while he was at it.

Although the time spent from the Nascent Soul stage to a Demigod would take at least a thousand years, or even a few thousand years, this disciple of his had always skipped levels. A month ago, she had just stabilized herself at the early Azoth realm, yet, now, she was beginning to form her Nascent Soul. This speed of skipping three levels, it was still best for him to make early preparations.

Zhu Yao became a little dizzy from his words. The so-called Nascent Soul formation her master spoke of, was actually to use her spiritual energy to refine her divine sense, to the point where her divine sense could be firmly congregated, and also to the degree where it could leave her body. Her master's divine sense clone, was actually the result of his divine sense refinement.

Back then, when she stopped the Metal Spirit in Tasyoluk, she brought about a spiritual energy disturbance. The expanding

spiritual energy instantly shattered her Azoth Core, causing her to not be able to form her Nascent Soul. So it was because she did not guide the spiritual energy into her divine sense. As expected, there was a mistake in the way she handled it.

Divine sense was a person's most important part, and was an existence equivalent to a soul, so it could be imagined how much pain one had to endure when one had to refine his or her soul. Zhu Yao silently lit a candle for herself, who was about to form her Nascent Soul.

With this single lecture, it lasted until evening, and only then did her master released her. As someone who had no ability to defend herself, naturally, she was confined by her master. This time, she herself was willing.

She did not know where Sesame ran off either, as it had never returned.

Just when she was about to sleep, suddenly, she heard a familiar voice.

“Sword Mountain's Wang Xuzhi, wishes to meet ancestral-grand master.”

Little wimp was back!

Before waiting for the person inside the cottage to respond, Wang Xuzhi who was wearing the sect's uniform flew down. His figure

was a little fatigued, and his clothes were still stained with blood that he had yet to clean off. His hair was in a mess, and what he now lacked was just the word “exhausted” on his face. However, his pair of eyes was exceptionally spirited as he stared at Yu Yan.

“This disciple greets ancestral-grand master.” Wang Xuzhi gave Yu Yan a bow.

Yu yan frowned, and was clearly a little irritated. Only after he sat down on the stone chair, did he finally nod expressionlessly.

Wang Xuzhi glanced at Zhu Yao who was at the side, and suppressed the curiosity in his heart. “This disciple has something to ask ancestral-grand master about. Ancestral-grand master, please solve this disciple’s confusion.”

Yu Yan did not reply, his line of sight was not even directed over at him. He never had any patience towards other people.

Wang Xuzhi could only grit his teeth and continued asking. “This disciple wish to know about the little infant Little Bun you brought back ten years ago, whom you had taken as a disciple. Was she actually your previous personal succeeding disciple, Zhu Yao?”

Zhu Yao was shocked. It seemed like the last call she gave him back then at Tasyoluk had exposed her. It was good that she had currently changed into another character.

“Ancestral-grand master, please tell this disciple the truth.”

“What does that have to do with you?” Yu Yan raised his head, and cast an expressionless look at him, and replied with this sentence, as though he was asking for a beating. As expected, he hated other people’s disciples the most.

Wang Xuzhi choked, and a hint of anger surfaced on his face, yet, he was unable to let it out. Gritting his teeth, he took a deep breath. “This disciple simply wish to tell ancestral-grand master, your second disciple is currently trapped in the ‘Tasyoluk’ Secret Realm. I request ancestral-grand master to land a helping hand, and tell this disciple if there’s any other way of entering the Secret Realm?”

Yu Yan did not answer. He simply turned his head and stared at Zhu Yao.

Uh...

The spectator is innocent.

Chapter 65: Nascent Soul Formation Period

“Ahem!” Zhu Yao could not help but step out. “Umm... This little brother, that ‘Tasyoluk’ Secret Realm will only open once every five hundred years, if she did not come out in time, then she will have to wait for another five hundred years for the entrance to open. Not to mention practitioners who are above the cultivation level of Azoth are unable to enter the place. The way you put it, you’re making things a little difficult for him.”

Wang Xuzhi tightened his fists, as though he was suppressing something with all his might, and completely did not look as though he bothered about her. After a moment, he hugged his fist and bowed to Yu Yan. “If that’s the case, this disciple is afraid to have offended you. The reason why this disciple has come here is to simply confirm if big sis Zhu Yao had returned. But now it seems... Since ancestral-grand master does not have a way to enter the Secret Realm, then I will find one myself. This disciple takes his leave!”

As though he had decided on something, his expression was even more firm, as he turned and left without the slightest of hesitation.

Seeing that expression, Zhu Yao’s heart shook. This little wimp could not be thinking of forcefully entering ‘Tasyoluk’, right? The barrier outside the Secret Realm could even block against Demigod-stage practitioner, if an Azoth practitioner like him were to forcefully enter the place, he would definitely be crushed into smithereens.

As she suddenly had a bad premonition, the words to stop him

blurted out just like that. “Little wimp, you’d better come back here, right now!”

Just as he was about to step out, his feet stopped. He suddenly turned his head over, his pair of eyes stared widely at her, and his expression was filled with disbelief.

“.....” Uh, is it too late to regret?

“Big sis... Zhu Yao!?”

As expected, it’s too late.

A certain master turned his head over as well, and threw a pair of scornful eyes at her, as he shook his head with a disappointed expression.

Uh... Just why could she not change her habits of having a cheap mouth?

“Big sis Zhu Yao, you... why are you...” Wang Xuzhi, sprinted back like the wind, and swept his gaze at her from top to bottom.

“Don’t ask me. I want silence.” If you ask me who’s silence, I will beat you to death.

Wang Xuzhi’s eyes fixated on her chest, and he raised his hands as he wished to pressed on it.

With her palm, Zhu Yao slapped away his claws, and then, she raised her hand and gave him a huge bump on his head. “Stinky brat, what are you doing!?”

“No... Nothing. I just... just... Big sis Zhu Yao, You... Why did you turn into...” Probably because of the blow from the truth was too large, Wang Xuzhi began to speak incoherently.

Did she not just simply switch a character? Was that so hard to accept?

However, Wang Xuzhi was even more confused, and even more anxious. “I... I couldn’t find you in the Secret Realm. And after coming out, I still wasn’t able to find you. You... You returned... You finally returned...”

“Why are you crying?”

“I’m not!” Wang Xuzhi hurriedly rubbed his eyes, and he said those words rather smoothly.

“You’re still denying it!?” Seeing this big youth whose words were becoming messier, and had begun to shed tears, Zhu Yao felt her heart aching a little. “I’m fine. Your big sis is an unkillable machine, I simply changed my form, that’s all.” She stroked the back of head which she had knocked onto earlier. So this little wimp actually returned into the Secret Realm to find her. At least you’re considerate, I didn’t pamper you for so many years for nothing.

“Form? Then, right now, big sis Zhu Yao is really...”

“That’s right, I’m a man!”

“.....” Wang Xuzhi opened his eyes wide, and his hand trembled as he pointed at her.

Zhu Yao patted on his shoulder, and in her heart, the thought of bullying someone had resurfaced once again.

“Now that I have turned into a man, will you despise me?”

“Of course not!” Wang Xuzhi loudly answered.

“You’re still the best.” Zhu Yao acted like she was moved, and rubbed the corner of her eyes, as she threw a flirtatious look at him. “Little wimp, do you still remember what you said when you were little? That you will definitely marry me. I believe we have all grown up, and it’s about time to fulfill your promise. Take me as your bride then. If not, I’m fine with taking you as my bride too.”

“Ah? Ah?”

Wang Xuzhi suddenly took a step back, and looked at her with a conflicted expression. His face turned from red, to white, and then green, it was so fascinating, she could not shift her gaze away at all.

“Enough.” As though he was unable to endure this irritating thousand-mile reunion, a certain master was in a bad mood, as he coldly stared at Wang Xuzhi. “You have trespassed into the Jade Forest Mountain. I will not fuss about this matter. Leave!” Someone else’s disciple, hurry and scram! Don’t teach my disciple bad things.

Wang Xuzhi looked at Zhu Yao, and his expression was conflicted. As though he had encountered a huge problem, he could not bear to leave.

“If we get the opportunity in the future, I will discuss with you about it again in detail...” Zhu Yao narrowed her eyes, approached the side of his ear and said with emphasis of each and every word. “The. Things. Regarding. Our. Marriage.”

“.....” His legs turned limped, and left Jade Forest Mountain like he was flying.

Zhu Yao’s stomach began to ache from laughing. He really could not handle scares. Was her turning into a man something that he could not accept that much? Look at how calm her master was...

Not only did he not despise her, he even stripped off her clothes directly the moment he saw her.

==

No, wait. That was not something that she should be happy

about.

The second day after her return, a certain master, so as to prevent other disciples from suddenly trespassing and teaching his disciple bad things, silently activated the formation of Jade Forest Mountain. Wang Xuzhi was completely unable to enter, and Zhu Yao's only entertainment had disappeared as well.

However, the heavens seemed to be purposefully not allowing her to stay idle, as she felt strange in the early morning. The sky above the entire Ancient Hill Sect was a little dark, which seemed to be a precursor for a huge storm. Even the heavenly cranes on the Jade Forest Mountain began to cry out crazily.

As though something had brought about their uneasiness.

The pressure of the air was very unbearable, and Zhu Yao felt strangely flustered, and kept feeling as though something was about to happen. Raising her head, she looked at the sky, only to see the tumbling dark clouds, and something seemed to be brewing inside the layers of clouds.

Normally, the Ancient Hill Sect was a blessed land, and would always be bathed by spring sunshine, a large-scaled gloomy weather like this rarely happened. The more Zhu Yao stared at those clouds, the more muffled she felt her heart was. She kept feeling as though something was in the middle of the clothes, something that she felt very intimate to.

“Someone's forming his Nascent Soul.” Yu Yan frowned as he

looked at the tumbling lightning clouds in the sky. “With such a huge heavenly might, it seems like the Lightning Tribulation will be falling soon.”

“Lightning Tribulation?” Could it be Xiao Yi? However, he had only formed his Azoth Core not too long ago. Even if he had hidden his cultivation, it could not possibly allowed him to reach the level of an Azoth Paragon in just a single month. Unless....

Zhu Yao suddenly recalled that berserk Metal Spirit. Although the Metal Spirit stopped its disturbance, it had taken in a huge amount of metal spiritual energy. If it had returned to Xiao Yi’s side in that state, it was not impossible for him to instantly form his Nascent Soul. So the one forming his Nascent Soul was really him?

Zhu Yao instantly felt a little depressed. She seemed to have unconsciously helped him out.

Raising her head, she looked at the mass of black clouds, and suddenly recalled back then when Xiao Yi was forming his Azoth Core. She thus made a joke. “Master, do you think the Heavenly Lightning this time, will come zapping at us again?”

Yu Yan was startled, as though he had thought of something, he suddenly turned towards his own disciple, and his eyes instantly shone.

“Master?” What happened to him now?

“Follow me.” Yu Yan summoned his flying sword. Turning to look at his stupid disciple who had yet to understand, as though he seemed to despise her slow movements, he picked his disciple up by the collar, and rose into the air. His figure flashed, as they flew towards the eastern direction.

“Master, we can always discuss things first.” Was there a need to pick her up this way?

Yu Yan did not say a single word, he simply flew towards the very edge of the Tribulation Clouds, and stopped at a small island far from the Ancient Hill Sect.

Placing Zhu Yao down, he did not explain, and simply, like a hard-working little bee, began to set up various formations on the island. Although Zhu Yao was not very familiar with formations, she could faintly see that, the formations he had placed down were all concealment-related formations.

“Master?” Give me an explanation!

After a few minutes, Yu Yan finally stopped, and threw a bombshell. “You shall form your Nascent Soul here.”

“Eh?” What kind of situation was this? Forget about lightning spiritual energy, the amount of spiritual energy on this island was very sparse as well. What kind of national level joke was this?

Stupid. Yu Yan shook his head, and pointed to the Tribulation

Lightning up in the sky. “Can you sense the lightning spiritual energy within those lightning clouds?”

Zhu Yao nodded. Not only was she able to sense it, she had a feeling that the thing inside the clouds were especially trying to come to her, yet, they seemed to be restrained by something.

“When the bolts of Tribulation Lightning descend, you shall do your best to guide them to this island.”

“What master means is...” Zhu Yao finally understood. His intention was to have her form her Nascent Soul by taking in the lightning spiritual energy from the Tribulation Lightning. What else could have more abundant lightning spiritual energy than Tribulation Lightning? Her master was very smart, and she gave him a thumbs up. “I understand.”

“Your master will use the Lightning Guiding Art as well, to aid you in guiding the Tribulation Lightning over. You shall form your Nascent Soul with all your might.”

“Mn!”

Zhu Yao instantly sat in a lotus position, closed her eyes, and calmed her emotions. She attentively sensed the Tribulation Clouds over there, and could faintly see the sparks within the layers of tumbling clouds.

The sky had completely turned dark, and suddenly, a thunder

roared, and a bolt of white lightning flashed from within the layers of clouds. Hurry, over here. Hurry, over here. Hurry, over here. Zhu Yao silently thought.

That bolt of lightning struck down, and just when it looked as though it was about to land on the person in Ancient Hill Sect who was facing the Tribulation, it suddenly did a curve, headed straight for the little island, and impartially struck onto Zhu Yao's body.

A large amount of lightning spiritual energy instantly poured into Zhu Yao's body. An indescribable pain ached through her entire body, to the point where she could not even straighten her hips. Especially the place where her Dantian was, as it looked as though it was about to be shattered apart.

Only then could Zhu Yao really feel what it felt like to shatter her Core. This pain was exactly the same as how she felt right before she died at Tasyoluk. After resurrecting, she did not have any spiritual energy, so naturally, she could not feel the pain of her shattered Core. Now, the pain, as though it had suddenly fragmented, came attacking once again, and she seemed to be unable to hold on, as the pain she was experiencing was as though her heart was crumbling down.

“Pay attention, and guide the spiritual energy into your divine sense.”

Yu Yan's words sounded.

Zhu Yao instantly regained quite a bit of consciousness, and

instantly used all of her might within her body, to guide the lightning spiritual energy particles that was going rampant in her body, into her divine sense, however, this brought about an even more unbearable pain. If the pain of a shattered Core could be taken as a pain on a physical level, then this time, it was her soul which was in pain. However, she simply could not stop, and could only continue to guide the spiritual energy and refine her own divine sense. Zhu Yao even began to have thoughts of swearing.

She was actually still clearly conscious right now, it was definitely a miracle. Just when she thought that she was able to hold on, even without her guidance, the second bolt of Heavenly Light actually came striking towards her, and the spiritual energy in her body increased explosively.

The hell, was there a need to be this quick?

Zhu Yao had no choice but to crazily guide the lightning spiritual energy into her divine sense, causing the sense of pain to intensify. Immediately after, the third bolt, the fourth bolt, every bolt was stronger than the previous one. Those bolts of Tribulation Lightning seemed to have grown eyes, as every bolt struck was smoother than the one before. In the end, they even saved the step of making a curve from Ancient Hill Sect, and directly zapped towards her.

Chapter 66: Admitting Into Ancient Hill Sect Once Again

Zhu Yao was about to cry. If this zapping kept up, she might actually die, and enter the palace [a third time](#)!

Yu Yan stood at the side, and worriedly looked at his disciple. Unfortunately, he could nothing to help. The path to forming a Nascent Soul was beyond difficult, many people had fallen here during their path to being a deity, and the success rate was not even one in ten thousand. Yet, the current situation his disciple was in, she had no choice but to form her Nascent Soul, and the bolts of Tribulation Lightning were her best chance.

However, these bolts of Tribulation Lightning were simply too straightforward with their zappings. Earlier, he was even worried that those Tribulation Lightnings could not be guided over, and had planned on forcefully guiding the bolts of lightning. From the current looks of it, there was basically no need for him to take action. As those bolts of Tribulation Lightning struck one after another, it felt like they were having a festival. He suddenly had a little doubt in his mind, was his disciple's bizarre affinity to lightning spiritual energy good or bad?

Zhu Yao had begun to feel a little numb from the pain. Her consciousness was beginning to blur as well, but she could only mechanically take in the spiritual energy.

“Chick~” A clear and crisp voice suddenly rang from deep in her heart.

It's the Wood Spirit, crap. I have forgotten to take it out. It won't be oppressed to death by the lightning spiritual energy, right? Zhu Yao worriedly looked into her inner world, and what she saw was, at the corner of her divine sense, a small little bonsai was currently at a loss as it watched a large amount of lightning spiritual energy suddenly pouring in.

Zhu Yao thought of taking it out, however, currently, she no longer had any strength to spare. Zhu Yao suddenly felt a little guilty. Sorry, little Wood Spirit.

“Chick... Chick...” The Wood Spirit seemed to have heard her inner thoughts. Waving its little tree branches, it suddenly flew out of that small corner, stretched out two little vines, pulled a small mass of lightning spiritual energy, and then, fly back into her divine sense.

Like a small little porter, it began to busily go in and out.

Zhu Yao: “.....”

It was actually not afraid of lightning spiritual energy. Could it be that, after staying in her own divine sense for so long, it had gotten used to it?

With the Wood Spirit's participation, the rate of her taking in spiritual energy had improved. However, the Heavenly Lightnings that were becoming even more saturated, continued to charge her up.

“Chick chick chick chick chick...” The Wood Spirit was a little anxious. Two vines were no longer enough to satisfy the requirement, hence, it stretched out four vines.

“.....”

Such a moving porter, Zhu Yao silently gave it a thumbs up.

She finally had the spare strength to refine her divine sense as well, in other words, to train her Nascent Soul. She could only use the lightning spiritual energy to constantly train her divine sense. Time ticked by, and her divine sense began to become even more condensed, it slowly gained the rough shape of an embryo, like a little infant, and it began to look clearer as the time passed. The pain on her body had slowly subsided as well.

The lightning spiritual energy no longer needed her guidance and could now freely enter her body.

Only then did she have the spare strength, and she looked at the Wood Spirit.

Wah. When did it become a tree? What happened to the promised little bonsai?

Could it be that because it was in contact with a large amount of lightning spiritual energy, it grew up?

“Chick...” The Wood Spirit which was waving its countless vines seemed to be extremely tired. After weakly calling out, it retracted its own vines, and flew deep into her divine sense. And then, it reached the side of her Nascent Soul, and as though it was sleeping, it no longer moved.

Thanks for the hard work!

Zhu Yao silently said.

Her Nascent Soul had been completely formed, and coincidentally, the Tribulation Lightning had stopped as well. After restoring her damaged meridians, she opened her eyes.

Looking at her surroundings, it was not too much of an exaggeration to call it the place unrecognizable, as everywhere was filled with the charred traces. If her master had not placed down the formations beforehand, this entire island might have been sunk by the lightning strikes.

And Yu Yan was standing at a position five steps away from her.

“Master, I formed my Nascent Soul.” Zhu Yao complacently waved her hands, and she felt absolutely brilliant!

“Mn.” He sized her up for a moment, satisfyingly nodded, and then, he relaxed his furrowed brows.

Raising her head to look in the direction of the Ancient Hill Sect,

the Tribulation Clouds had already begun to disperse. Earlier, with such a big commotion, and those curving bolts of Tribulation Lightning, it could be believed that everyone in the Sect had sensed it. After the Tribulation Clouds were dispersed, they would definitely come forward to investigate. They had to think of a good counter-measure.

“Mistress, I’m back. Did you think of your cute beastie?” Sesame suddenly popped out of nowhere, and with a single swoop, it pounced towards Zhu Yao, and was slapped away by Yu Yan along the way.

With a crash, its entire body was stained with soot. Sesame crawled up with a hurt expression, bared its fangs at Yu Yan and roared, and then, it once again changed into a pitiful expression as it looked at Zhu Yao. “Mistress, he bullied me. You have to help beastie.”

Zhu Yao rolled her eyes at it, recalling that the Wood Spirit had struggled to help her form her Nascent Soul earlier, when comparing the former and the latter, this savage beast was completely firing at the horse after it had bolted.

“Eh, mistress, you formed your Nascent Soul.” Sesame seemed to have just realized the difference in Zhu Yao, and like a little puppy, it ran and jumped around her a few rounds. “That’s great. I knew my mistress was incredible.”

Zhu Yao pinched its face, and pulled it to the two sides. “Why are you back?”

“It hurts, it hurts, it hurts!” Sesame shook its head and struggled out of her hands, as it used its own paws to rub the sides of its face. “I just miss you, my mistress. Hence, the moment I recovered my spiritual energy, I immediately rushed back. Mistress, how can you be so heartless!”

“I can even be vexatious too!” Zhu Yao pressed onto its head, and used even more force as she rubbed its little head.

“Wuuuu, it hurts, it hurts...” Sesame did not have anywhere to hide, and could only allow her to rub it. Tilting its head, it looked towards Yu Yan at the side, and roared. “Hey, hey, hey! Manage your disciple!”

A certain master instantly ignored it, seeing that his disciple was a little lively, he absolutely did not have any opinions on it.

“I wonder which Daoist friend is practicing his arts here? I’m Zi Mo from Ancient Hill Sect. I wonder if esteemed one is willing to see me?”

Zi Mo, the great family head of Ancient Hill Sect was a little saddened recently. A strange movement happened at the Secret Realm “Tasyoluk” which only opened once every five hundred years, and nearly half of the fifty odd disciples the Ancient Hill Sect sent over were lost. This was the biggest loss they had since the beginning of the Sect. This was not the thing that he was most worried about. During the accounting of numbers of the disciples who returned, a female practitioner with unknown background,

and was called “Bun” by his personal succeeding disciple, was missing.

If he had investigated, he would not have known, but after investigating it, even his soul shook from fright. This Bun was actually that little infant his ancestral-grand uncle had brought back ten years ago, the second disciple of Jade Forest Mountain. He really wondered why a ten year old little girl would actually like to play with her life, and not anything else. With just the thought of his ancestral-grand uncle’s wrath, he could every part of his body aching.

Haah. When thinking of this ancestral-grand uncle of his, Zi Mo thought he was rather unfortunate. For more than ten thousand years, his only wish was to take in a disciple, and just when he finally managed to find one, he took a disciple in, and she died. Then, he took another in, and she died again. There was basically no room for him to breathe! Zi Mo even began to suspect if his ancestral-grand master was really the bane of his... Ah pui!

He thought long and hard for an entire day, yet, he will still unable to think of how to explain to his ancestral-grand master.

And then, another problem just had to appear again.

When Sovereign Feng Yi’s disciple came back, he was suddenly forming his Nascent Soul. This was originally a very happy event. Yet, just when he was supposed to experience a Tribulation, an abnormality occurred. The bolts of Tribulation Lightning crackled and struck for a long time, yet, none of them zapped onto the person who was forming his Nascent Soul. Rather, every single one

of the bolts very merrily struck towards the east of Ancient Hill Sect.

He had lived for so many years, yet, he had never seen Tribulation Lightnings that could zap mistakenly, and, in the east, an abnormal spiritual power wave was even being spread. Zi Mo instantly could not idle any longer, calling up a few disciples, he decided to personally take a look.

Mn, it was definitely not to avoid his ancestral-grand uncle.

In the end, when he reached the point of the Tribulation Lightning's descent, he found many exquisite formations being set there. He had originally thought of using the principle of being polite before resorting to force, and roared out. He did not expect that the people inside would actually open the formation for him.

Zi Mo looked towards the place, and when he clearly saw who it was that was standing there, his legs gave way, and he had almost fell off his flying sword.

“An... An-An-An... Ancestral-grand uncle!” Why was this Sovereign here? He did not even have a single precaution prepared at all.

Wait a minute!

Who was that especially good-looking youth with delicate features standing beside his ancestral-grand uncle? His ancestral-

grand master seemed to be, consciously or unconsciously, protecting him as well. He could not have suffered too big of a blow regarding the incident of his disciple, and then... accidentally, went astray, right?

Zi Mo was instantly overwhelmed by his thoughts, and a moving tear fell, yet, he could not allow this dog-blood story to be revealed to the world.

No, no, no. There must definitely be a mistake in his thinking process. How could his ancestral-grand uncle have this sort of hobbies? Hohoho~

Zi Mo silently looked towards that “person who cannot be revealed to the world”, and was shocked to discover that he was actually an Nascent Soul Reverend. Ancestral-grand uncle’s eyes were really high!

Only after he asked, did he discover that he was actually a wandering practitioner, and had planned on admitting into the Ancient Hill Sect, yet, when he coincidentally passed this island by, he discovered this demonic beast. When he was unable to beat it, ancestral-grand master had fortunately rushed over, guided the Tribulation Lightning on the fly, and aided him in subduing in this demonic beast.

Ancestral-grand uncle who rarely stepped out of his house, actually moved to save someone on his own accord? Who was this youth, who was given such a honor? As expected, the relationship between these two was definitely not so simple, right?

Zi Mo looked towards the demonic beast which was as tall as a small mountain behind them, and only after careful inspection did he realize that it was actually a ninth-grade demonic beast. It was no wonder there was a need to guide the Tribulation Lightning over to subdue it. However, why did he have to help an outsider subdue it? And he even simply gave it to him just like that. This was a ninth-grade demonic beast, that was comparable to an elementary-stage Demigod! Ninth-grade! What happened to not letting one's fertile water flow into other's field?

Even if he was “someone you could not reveal to the world”, this was too much, right!?

Zi Mo took a deep breath, and was just about to tactfully express a few words of discontent to his ancestral-grand uncle.

Yet, he actually simply turned to look at the youth behind him, without even leaving a single explanation, with a whoosh, he flew off by himself.

Zi Mo: “.....”

Haah, as someone who was experienced in cleaning up others' mess, what could he do about it? But when he thought that this person was here to admit into the Ancient Hill, and was one of them in the future, the ninth-grade demonic beast would naturally be in their own field as well. Zi Mo suddenly felt relieved once again, and with a courteous face, he invited this youth who was even younger than him back.

The age of practitioners who were above the Foundation level could not be discerned by looking at their faces. Although he looked like a youth, Zi Mo who had seen and experienced many things, did not dare to address him as an elder. And this person might even be that person whom his ancestral-grand uncle “could not reveal to the world”.

“I wonder what’s Reverend’s Daoist name?”

Zhu Yao was startled for a moment. Back then when Zi Mo called out to them, she had already guessed why her master wanted Sesame to revert to its original form. Hence, she muddled her way through explanations, other than her identity as a wandering practitioner which she had thought up at the spur of the moment.

Evidently, her master was a little discontented with the last bit, hence, he angrily went off. That’s right. He was angry. Though, she was the only one who was able to discern that.

“Uh... I do not have a Daoist name.” Zhu Yao chuckled. “My surname is Soi... and my given name is a single word Sauz.”

“So it’s Daoist friend ‘Soi’.” Zi Mo smiled courteously, and then, only after hearing a bit more regarding his identity, was he able to disperse his worries.

Zhu Yao had already gave herself the name ‘Soy Sauce’, so obviously, she would sauce her way through regarding the rest of her information.

Entering the palace a third time: The third time is just additional, the real phrase is 'Entering the palace a second time'. It came from a drama that has the same name. The first time, the protagonist? was sent to prison for being a traitor. After he was released, he did something unlawful again, and was sent to prison again. So, it just means that Zhu Yao might die 'a third time'.

Chapter 67: Promotion Ceremony

Naturally, Zi Mo would not mind such details. Wandering practitioners seeking admittance into Sects was a common occurrence, it was just that Nascent Soul Reverends were extremely hard to rein in. Usually, the lives of wandering practitioners were extremely difficult, and those who were able to cultivate into an Nascent Soul stage practitioner were extremely few, most of them would be used to living their own way, and would not think of being bound by Sects.

Hence, if there was a Nascent Soul Reverend thinking of admitting into a Sect, only an idiot would not agree to it. And, in Ancient Hill Sect, other than the Mountain Lords who were Nascent Soul Reverends, there were only another few dozens of them. With another Nascent Soul Reverend, their position would be more stable.

“For Reverend to choose to admit into our Ancient Hill Sect, is my Sect’s greatest honor. I wonder which Mountain in my Sect is Reverend thinking of entering?”

“I have not thought about that yet.” Zhu Yao honestly replied.

“Then does Reverend has a specialized field? For example, refining pellets, refining weapons, or creating talismans.”

“Refining pellets, refining weapons, creating talismans, I...” Zhu Yao lowered her head and pondered for a moment, and answered with serious look. “don’t know any of them!”

Zi Mo's legs gave way, and he almost fell off. There's actually people like you who haughtily express their incapacabilities?

The corner of his lips twitched for a few moments, and Zi Mo's face instantly darkened. Every Nascent Soul-stage practitioner, no matter how hard they cultivated, they would at least need a hundred years before they could form their Nascent Soul. They would be at least be proficient, or had learnt much of a particular craft in a hundred years, yet, he actually did not know any of them! Just how did he live till now?

"Then... Then which Mountain does Reverend prefer to create his cave residence in?"

Was she allowed to say Jade Forest Mountain? After all, she had lived there for so many years, and she had developed feelings for it. However...

Looking at Zi Mo's expression, if she were to say the truth, she would most probably be beaten to death, right!

"I have a few interests in taming beasts, and coincidentally, I had just taken in a ninth-ranked demonic beast. Why don't I head to the Beast-Taming Mountain? What does Sect Master think?"

"That's a very good idea!"

Zi Mo had planned on this as well. Hence, he quickly called a

disciple to inform the Mountain Lord of the Beast-Taming Mountain to prepare a new cave residence, to welcome a new Elder. Then, he headed to the various Mountains to inform of this matter as well. While he was at it, he informed everyone that Xiao Yi had successfully broke through into Nascent Soul as well, and selectively informed the various Sects, that they were going to host a promotion ceremony.

Ancient Hill Sect had gained two Nascent Soul-stage Elders in an instant, and Zi Mo felt that he could finally have a good sleep at night. Oh right, they even gained a ninth-ranked demonic beast.

Zhu Yao was very satisfied with her new residence. Compared to that cottage on Jade Forest Mountain, this cave residence was basically an imperial palace. Not only did it have a three small three-floored houses, there was a courtyard at the front and a small field at the back. There was even a big flower garden, a small bridge and a pond in the middle. It basically did not have a sense of narrowness at all.

Her room was at that house which was deep inside the flower garden. She heard that the two houses in front were used for the disciples she would take in in the future. With her characteristic of experiencing near death in three days, and an actual huge death in five days, she would only be able take in corpses instead of disciples. It seemed like that place over there would be empty forever.

Ancient Hill Sect's treatment to Elders were really good. Almost every Mountain had one or two Nascent Soul-stage Elders, and usually, they need not care about matters regarding the Sect.

There were naturally the various Mountain Lords who were in-charge of these matters, and there were a regular supply of nourishment provided by the Sect. However, if a big incident were to occur in the Sect, and there was a need for the Elders to come forward, the Sect would not be courteous about it.

Actually, she had her own plans for choosing the Beast-Taming Mountain. Because, the Beast-Taming Mountain's position was at the south-west, and the one with the highest cultivation was not the Mountain Lord, but Sovereign Feng Yi who lived at the peak of the mountain. She was Xiao Yi's master, and was the most important member of his harem.

Originally, according to the timeline in her dreams, Xiao Yi should have only formed his Nascent Soul fifty years after he left the Secret Realm. And when he was facing his Lightning Tribulation, he encountered an Inner Demon Tribulation in his heart, and had experienced a narrow escape before his Nascent Soul formation was successful. Yet, because of this, he was extremely injured, and when he needed to restart his cultivation all over again, he was saved by his master's "Water Spirit".

That's right, it's one of the five that could summon Shenlong when all five were gathered... ah pui! It was one of the five spirits that could bring about the end of the world – the "Water Spirit"! She did not know why the Water Spirit was in Sovereign Feng Yi's hands, and even more so, did not understand why she would take it out only when her disciple was about to die, and when he had only a single breath left.

Because in the dream, the main point lied in...

Feng Yi had to be naked to treat her disciple's wounds. As often as it gets, this cold-hearted and expressionless flower that could only be found up high in the mountain peak, was easily taken down by Xiao Yi. Then, during the treatment, there were developments of unhealthy and disharmonious movements that could not be written down.

Of course, these were all from the initial timeline. But in reality, Xiao Yi had formed his Nascent Soul fifty years earlier, and the Lightning Tribulation he should have gotten, was guided to herself, and had her own butt bloom from all the zaps. Not only did he not experience the Inner Demon Tribulation he should have gotten, she had even allowed him to successfully form his Nascent Soul without any pain and worry.

Recalling everything that she had done, the first time, so as to save them, she killed a demon fox, she died, and then, Xiao Yi formed his Azoth Core. The second time, so as to stop the berserk Metal Spirit, she saved them again, she died again, and Xiao Yi formed his Nascent Soul.

The hell, she was actually Xiao Yi's golden finger, right!? How could the Metal Spirit compare to her? It's basically weak to the max!

When she realized this truth, tears fell from her eyes!

Zhu Yao decided to return to her house, eat a packet of spicy gluten, and calm down.

I wonder if my life hacking master knows how to make them?

In the early morning, Zhu Yao was woken up by Zi Dan. Zi Dan was the Mountain Lord of Beast-Taming Mountain. His biggest hobby was to raise demonic beasts in his own mountain, if there was not a need, he would not leave his home. Hence, back then, she was not that familiar with him.

Zi Dan was riding an absolutely imposing, an awe-inspiring... pig! That's right! What this dignified Mountain Lord of Beast-Taming Mountain was riding on, was actually a wild pig. Zi Dan treasured this pig-like demonic beast more than a priceless gem. Every day, he would sleep and eat with it, and even his figure was developing to match its long horizontal figure.

That's right. The Mountain Lord of Beast-Taming Mountain was a fatty. He was a live and kicking fatty who had an estimated weight of three hundred kilograms.

When this fatty leapt down from the pig beast and sprinted over to her, she suddenly had the imagination that the entire mountain was shaking.

“Little brother~” Zi Dan smiled like a cheerful chrysanthemum flower, and as he sprinted over, he raised his leg and strongly crossed over the door's ledge, and his figure squeezed into her home.

St... Stuck!

He was actually stuck at the door!

“Little... Little brother.” Zi Dan’s chrysanthemum flower-like smile stiffened, and pleadingly reached out his hand. “Help out your big brother for a bit.”

Zhu Yao sighed, and resigned herself to grab his hand, and pull the radish out! She finally managed to pull out of the doorway.

Zi Dan, as though this was his home, poured a cup of water and gulped it down.

“I say, little brother. I have already told you this a long time ago, and told you to change it into a wider door. Yet, you just don’t listen.”

You were stuck at the door.

Why are you blaming me for that?

The corner of Zhu Yao’s lips twitched. “Senior brother Zi Dan, why are you looking for me?”

“Oh right, I almost forgot!” Zi Dan patted on his big thighs, and his farts instantly shook two to three times. “I’m here to call you, so that we can head to the promotion ceremony together. You’re a newcomer, so it would be a little awkward if you were to head

there alone. It's best if you were to head there with me."

So Xiao Yi's promotion ceremony was today. Zhu Yao instantly felt a little excited.

"Let's hurry, let's hurry. The various Sects and Clans have already arrived, we're the hosts, you know. It's not good to be late." As he said that, he pushed her forward.

"Since that's the case, thank you, senior brother. Let us go now then."

Zhu Yao thought of the matter regarding the Water Spirit, and walked out unhesitantly. After only a few steps, she suddenly heard Zi Dan's voice again.

"Little brother..." Zi Dan once again reached out his hand, and weakly spoke up. "Help... Help your big brother again."

He's stuck again...

Zhu Yao: "....."

Forming the Nascent Soul was the most important step in the path of cultivation. The path to cultivation was very, and extremely difficult. Firstly, one's Spirit Veins were the ticket to entering the cultivation world. As long as you possessed Spirit Veins, you would be able to take in spiritual energy and reach Essence. However, among the Essence-stage practitioners, only one

out of a hundred people would be able to successfully build their Foundation. And out of a thousand Foundation-stage practitioners, only one or two were able to reach the Azoth-stage. And, for Azoth-stage practitioners to promote to Nascent Soul, less than one out of ten thousand of them was able to do it. Hence, it could be seen how difficult it was to form a Nascent Soul.

But in Ancient Hill Sect, following after the mighty Sovereign Yu Yan, there was actually another person who was able to form his Nascent Soul successfully in a mere hundred years or so. The various Sects and Clans naturally felt hatred when they had gotten these news. However, what could they do about it, when the target of their hatred was the number one Deity Sect? No matter how much they were biting and breaking their teeth deep in their hearts, they would have to swallow them into their stomachs, and show their faces at their promotion ceremony. In reality, it was a show-off ceremony.

When Zhu Yao arrived at the great hall, everyone had already arrived. Inside the great hall, it was not like outside where everywhere was decorated and illuminated, the people standing there were all Nascent Soul-stage practitioners of her Sect – the Mountain Lords of the various Mountains, and the few Nascent Soul-stage Elders. It was a rare occasion for the three Sovereigns to be present as well, and sitting at the center was Sovereign Feng Yi.

She still had the prideful mountain peak flower look, and did not even bat an eye at “him”, the stranger who had suddenly appeared. Xiao Yi was standing behind her, mn, and the word “BUG” on his face was still as clear and refined.

Zi Mo however was rather enthusiastic, as he immediately walked over. Then, he introduced her, the new Elder with the “ninth-grade demonic beast”, to those Elders who did not usually appear much. When everyone present heard of this, their attitudes which were initially still a little cold, instantly became enthusiastic.

Zhu Yao silently felt that she seemed to be incomparable to a beast!

However, Reverend Hong Chou did not seem to care. After lightly glancing at her, she snorted coldly and turned back, her face was filled with disdain.

What happened to the promised true love? When she was a little infant back then, Hong Chou would bring her to watch the moon and stars, and call her cutie. Now that she had changed her character, Hong Chou actually snorted at her.

Damn lolicon!

“So it was Senior brother Soi, this little one here is Xiao Yi.” Xiao Yi walked over, and courteously bowed to her. In the cultivation world, strength was what mattered. The two of them were both at the elementary Nascent Soul-stage, so their positions were equal. However, he had a Demigod-stage master, yet, he called her ‘senior brother’. He sure had given her quite a lot of face. Even Zi Mo satisfyingly nodded at him, and felt that he had good eyes.

However, a trace of dissatisfaction flashed past Feng Yi’s face,

and a moment later, she recovered her expressionless face.

There's always a need to give some face to newcomers, after all.

“Little brother Xiao Yi!” Since he was giving her such enthusiasm, she obviously would not so illogical to not take it. “So you're little brother Xiao Yi, the one who had just formed his Nascent Soul. Congratulations, little brother Xiao Yi.”

With just a few words, she had stably gained her position as a ‘Big Brother’.

The corner of Xiao Yi's lips twitched for a moment, and he hurriedly hid it right after. After giving a few polite words, he once again returned to stand behind Feng Yi, and he looked like a good well-dressed role model.

Zhu Yao, however, was attentively inspecting him, yet, no matter where she looked, she felt there was something amiss. Ever since the Wood Spirit had followed her, her ability to sense Wood Spirit had become extremely strong. However, currently, she was actually unable to sense even a hint of wood spiritual energy in his body. Didn't he have the Metal and Wood Dual-Spirit Veins?

She suddenly recalled that Heavenly Pulse Lotus. Could it be that he had taken the Heavenly Pulse Lotus that could reconstruct his meridians, and had washed off his Wood Spirit Vein, becoming a single Metal Spirit Vein holder?

Chapter 68: Cat Fight When There's Nothing To Do

After pondering for a moment, it was extremely possible. When a disciple with multiple Spirit Veins wish to raise their levels, they had to take in a balanced amount of spiritual energy corresponding to each Spirit Vein at the same time. A Dual-Spirit Veins Holder had to take in two types of spiritual energy, while a Tri-Spirit Veins Holder, naturally, had to take in three types. He was a Metal and Wood Spirit Veins Holder, yet, because of the disturbance caused by the Metal Spirit, he had only taken in metal spiritual energy, and he did not have the Wood Spirit to help him take in wood spiritual energy. If he wished to form his Nascent Soul, his only way was to wash away the useless Wood Spirit Vein.

He was the protagonist after all, he's blessed with luck and benefits everywhere.

Recalling back then, because he hid away that Heaven Pulse Lotus, her body was filled holes made by the demonic beast, and had almost lost her life. However, in the end, she still earned from it.

As expected, she was given birth from the second wife, right? It must be, right!?

Zi Mo saw that everyone had arrived, and passed down the instructions to open the hall door, welcoming the Daoist friends from the various Sects and Clans, that were here to congratulate them, into the hall.

In but an instant, following after the resounding notification, people from various Sects and Clans walked in one after another. There were Nascent Soul-stage Elders from the various Sects, and there were also many elite disciples that were here as errand boys. All of them came forward with congratulatory gifts. First, they walked forward to the three Sovereigns to make their greetings, and then, had a small polite chat with Xiao Yi, before they were brought away by the disciples arranged by the Sect Master.

This process continued for a long time, and was completely monotonous. Zhu Yao was extremely bored watching this, and the smile on her face had already stiffened. However, as a named Elder, she had the responsibility to keep up her appearance. She could not even use the wondrous move of going for a toilet break, as, after she had set up their Foundation, she no longer had to eat, drink or head to the toilet.

After this boring ceremony had persisted for six hours, she finally understood why her master hated participating in group activities in the Sect so much.

I'm so bored! I wish for something to happen! A cat fight is fine too!

Suddenly, a bang sounded. The ground severely shook, and Zhu Yao who was bored to the point where mushrooms were about to grow on her, did not stabilize her footing, and had almost slipped.

The hell! Something really occurred!

Heavens, if you satisfy my demands so much, I will be very wilful!

This strange trembling lasted entirely for fifteen minutes before it finally stopped. Other than the Nascent Soul-stage practitioners on-site who were still sitting in their original positions, most of the other disciples were staggering from the trembling. The entire place was in chaos.

“Quiet!” A Nascent Soul-stage pressure covered the entire hall, and the people in the hall finally quietened down.

Zi Mo stood at the center, and solemnly said to the people outside. “What happened?”

“Sect Master!” A disciple hurriedly entered, his face was still filled with fear and anxiety which had yet to recede. “Due to the unknown reasons, the Great Mountain Protection Formation had suddenly collapsed.”

The Great Mountain Protection Formation was one of the strongest defenses Ancient Hill Sect possessed.

Zi Mo’s face paled, and in a flash, his figure had flew out. The faces of the various Mountain Lords present were terrible as well, as they followed after him one after another. As a named Elder, naturally, she was not an exception, and followed after everyone to the open square outside the Main Mountain.

Raising her head to look, she could see, what was originally a blue sky, suddenly shook. A layer of membrane-like thing, was being dispersed bit by bit, as though it was being slowly torn apart.

Zi Mo deeply frowned, and was both shock and furious. He called over the disciple who was protecting the formation's core. "Who was it who dared to destroy our Ancient Hill Sect's Great Mountain Protection Formation?"

"This disciple... doesn't know." The disciple bowed and replied. "Before the formation collapsed, no one had appeared in the vicinity of the formation's core."

"Are you sure there isn't anyone?" Zi Mo asked.

The disciple recalled for a moment, and once again, decisively shook his head. "Other than this disciple, absolutely no one has appeared."

Zi Mo went silent for a moment. The Great Mountain Protection Formation of Ancient Hill Sect was named as the number one formation in the cultivation world, because this formation was not set by just anyone, but by that person on Jade Forest Mountain. In the current cultivation world, other than that man himself, there's basically no one else who had the capability to forcefully break this formation, unless the formation's core was destroyed.

But, on this very day, in front of the various Sects and Clans, Ancient Hill Sect was given a huge slap in the face. He was afraid

that if the reason for this could not be found, from then on, it would turn into a joke in the cultivation world.

“Senior brother, the formation is about to collapse completely, it’s more important to protect the formation for now.” Zi Yuan took a step forward, and reminded Zi Mo who was submerged in his own fury.

Only then did Zi Mo suppressed his anger, and turned to instruct the disciples at the side. “Hurry to the Jade Forest Mountain and have your ancestral-grand master come over.”

And then, he signaled to the few Mountain Lords and Nascent Soul-stage Elders to cast and stabilize the formation, preventing it from collapsing any further.

Only when Zhu Yao took action did she understood why this formation was named as the number one formation in the cultivation world. The astronomical amount of spiritual energy needed, was basically nothing she could compare to. When she inserted her spiritual energy, it was like a drop of water in an ocean, it was completely ineffective at all. She was initially absolutely confident with her own cultivation, but instantly, she was slapped hard in the fact by cruel reality.

When she was just about to be unable to hold on any longer, the disciple who had went over to seek Yu Yan had returned, and he had a look as though he was about to cry.

“To inform Sect Master, ancestral-grand master has activated

Jade Forest Mountain's formation, this disciple wasn't able to enter."

"Then, what about message paper cranes?"

"The paper cranes weren't able to enter either."

Zhu Yao's face instantly darkened. Just what the hell was her master doing?

Zi Mo who was initially already utterly exhausted, had become even more utterly exhausted. This ancestral-grand uncle of his was initially hard to deal with, after he had taken a disciple, he got a little better. Just when he was about to return back on track, in an instant, two of his disciples died consecutively. He was able to understand if he were to vent out some of his emotions, but why the hell did it have to be in a time like this?

Zi Mo even felt like crying right in front of him. Just when he did not know what to do, suddenly, he saw that youthful and handsome young man at the side.

Suddenly, a plan rang out in his heart.

Oh, young man who "should not be made known to the world", the time when Ancient Hill Sect needs you has come.

Zhu Yao suddenly felt a chill down her spine, and when she turned, she coincidentally saw that strange gaze Zi Mo had.

What is this old man thinking of doing?

“I say, young man who shouldn’t be... ahem, junior brother Soi.” He almost exposed himself! Zi Mo faked out a few coughs to cover up. “I recall that you have some form of friendship with my ancestral-grand uncle. Can I trouble you to head over and request him to come over?”

“Uh...” If it was a request, then so be it. But what’s with those eyes of yours which have been constantly twitching? “It isn’t a problem for me to head over there, but I’m afraid if I were to pull my hand back now, the Great Mountain Protection Formation will...”

Zi Mo’s face darkened, and had only just reached this line of thought.

They had only managed to prevent the formation from collapsing so quickly by having this many Nascent Soul-stage practitioners insert their spiritual energy together, otherwise, the entire Ancient Hill Sect would have already fell onto the sea. If they were to pull out one of them now, it would be game over.

“This Sovereign shall take over!” A cold female voice sounded.

When Zhu Yao turned to look, behind them were the three Demigod Sovereigns, and the one who voiced out was actually Sovereign Feng Yi.

Zi Mo was startled, as though he had just recalled that the three Sovereigns were here as well, and silently wiped off his cold sweat. It was not his fault, these three people had not managed affairs for too long, even he had forgotten that they were Demigods.

“I will have to trouble the three Sovereigns.”

With the participation of the three Demigod Sovereigns, the collapsing formation instantly stabilized, however, the damage was still very large.

Feng Yi waved towards Zhu Yao, and Zhu Yao simply felt she was instantly bounced back by a ball of energy, and her spiritual power was withdrawn.

“Do what you need to do!” Feng Yi coldly spoke up, and she did not even turn her head to look at Zhu Yao at all, her face was filled with immense pride.

Zhu Yao rubbed her nose, and she planned on hurrying to the Jade Forest Mountain to haul her master here.

However, suddenly, a change occurred. A few dozens of steps away, in the vicinity of the formation’s core which was still rather calm earlier, a black fog suddenly emitted out. The fog was especially dense, yet, it did not disperse in all directions, rather, it slowly gathered and took shape. It actually turned into a gigantic demonic beast, and there were actually several dozens of them.

The constant roars instantly resounded through the clouds.

“They’re sixth-ranked demonic beasts!” The place had instantly sank into chaos.

“Disciples of Ancient Hill Sect, follow me to battle.” Xiao Yi, who was the only one who did not take action to maintain the formation, shouted loudly. Releasing his pressure, the place had finally managed to calm down. Casually summoning his own sword, he swung it and slashed towards the nearest demonic beast.

Zhu Yao’s legs instantly stopped as well. Summoning her spiritual swords, she activated a sword formation and threw it at a demonic beast which was currently rushing towards where the people were maintaining the formation. This demonic beast, however, was especially strange. With just a single slash, it actually reverted back into a mass of black fog.

When she looked around, none of the other demonic beasts that fell turned into fog. What the hell was this demonic beast? And these demonic beasts, seemed to have found its target as well, as they crazily attacked towards the few people who could not move due to them maintaining the formation.

And among the few people that were around them, only she was the nearest, and her cultivation level was the highest as well. Although, to her, a sixth-ranked demonic beast was nothing to be afraid of, she was unable to hold herself against a large number of them. Clenching her teeth, Zhu Yao could only summon Sesame

over.

“Sesame, clear the field!”

~~ Roooooar ~ ♪|`o'|~♪

The moment Sesame appeared, it instantly sat a demonic beast to death with its butt, and with a sweep of its tail, it blew another one away. Then, it complacently looked towards her in the eye.

“Meow~”

Meow your sister. Be a proper beast, what are learning to cry out like a cat for?

Although Sesame was suppressing his cultivation, and looked like a ninth-ranked demonic beast, however, after all, it was an eleventh-rank demonic beast. Fighting sixth-ranked demonic beasts was like chopping vegetables to it. With its participation, the entire scene instantly made a reversal, and they had finally managed to protect those people who could not move.

Zhu Yao instantly heaved a sigh of relief.

Yet, suddenly, she heard a strange laughter coming from behind. She suddenly had a very bad premonition.

“Hahahahaha, I have finally found the opportunity...”

When Zhu Yao turned to look, the demonic beast which she had slashed to death, turned into a black fog and was beginning to gather. It actually gathered into a shape of a man, and had coincidentally stopped right behind Feng Yi.

Crap!

Zhu Yao was unable to warn her in time, and that man had already took action. With a palm filled with a dense black aura, he had already struck towards Feng Yi.

Feng Yi instantly spat out a mouthful of blood, and before she could even retaliate, she had already collapsed.

All of these happened in an instant, basically no one had the time to react. Before Zhu Yao could even turn her body around, Feng Yi had already collapsed.

“Master!” Xiao Yi roared out out of panic, and wanted to rush over. However, he was heavily stopped by the demonic beasts.

That man, however, did not allow Feng Yi to fall onto the ground. Rather, extremely gently, he held her body, and carefully embraced her in his arms. Using his face which was filled with black scar marks, he buried into her bosom, and gently muttered out a few words. Just like how he appeared, along with Feng Yi, they turned into wisps of black fog, and disappeared without a trace.

The man's voice was very soft, however, it was loud enough for all of the Nascent Soul-stage practitioners to clearly hear.

What he said was: "I have finally obtained you."

Instantly, in Zhu Yao mind's, a word popped out. Fanboy?

Following after the man's disappearance, the demonic beasts that suddenly appeared, just like how they appeared, began to turn into masses of black fog and disappeared as well. And, they were even environmentally friendly, as even all the corpses of the dead demonic beasts were brought away as well. Everything had disappeared cleanly, and without a trace.

Chapter 69: Little Rescue Squad

This inexplicable big battle, ended in an inexplicable way.

Although their side did not have any cannon fodder who had lost their lives, they lost a Demigod Sovereign. To be exact, she was kidnapped.

As Feng Yi was taken away, the formation once again began to collapse. Zhu Yao could only bitterly go over to hold it again. And wasn't the consumption of this formation was too large? She was quickly being sucked dry.

Zi Mo silently passed her a pair of eyes, saying 'Help me'.

Zhu Yao felt like crying. Don't look at me. I can't leave right now either, unless you want me to shout?

It seems like I can try that...

"Sovereign Yu Yan, help us!" Zhu Yao at that moment, was possessed by [Xue Yi](#). "Sovereign, hurry up and come out! Come out, come out, come out! Don't hide inside quietly, I know you're at home." If he did not come anytime soon, she would die.

When those words fell, with a flash of white light, Yu Yan who was emitting out an icy aura had already stood right in front of her.

The hell, he really came!

Not only Zhu Yao, even Zi Mo was shocked. He did not expect that with just a cry from his junior brother, he was able to invite him down.

As expected, he's ancestral-grand uncle's "someone that can't be revealed to the world", right? He's definitely it, isn't he!?

Yu Yan coldly stared at his disciple. His face which never had any warmth in the first place, was not even more chilling.

"Mas... Sovereign!" Zhu Yao was startled by him, and had almost exposed herself. She could only chuckle and give him a silly smile.

"Disciple Soi Sauz, greets Sovereign." Zhu Yao obediently greeted him, and heavily emphasized on the word 'disciple'.

"Mn." Only then did Yu Yan nod his head, and his expression soothened. He was already irritated for being called out by his disciple in the early morning, and because of his own stupid disciple's stupid plan, she refused to identify him as her master, he really had the right to be angry.

With Zhu Yao's greeting, it reminded everyone, and a series of greetings sounded out.

"Disciple greets grand-uncle."

“Disciple greets ancestral-grand master.”

However, he did not respond to anyone else. He simply raised his head to look at the sky, at that formation which was damaged to the point of unsightly.

“Ancestral-grand uncle.” Zi Mo kept away his shock, and recalled the important business they had to attend to. “The Great Mountain Protection Formation of Ancient Hill Sect has been damaged by someone. We have already put in all our effort, yet, we were unable to stop the formation from collapsing. I hope ancestral-grand uncle can step in and fix it in time, and protect our Sect from danger.”

Yu Yan nodded, and single-handedly performed a series of hand-seals, and then, he waved his hand. The formation which was still endlessly absorbing everyone’s spiritual energy earlier, instantly stopped, and the formation had stopped collapsing as well. All of those who were casting their Arts, were bounced back.

Zhu Yao and the rest of her little companions were shocked speechless.

Just how did master do that? What are those hand seals? Why is it so strong? Teach me, teach me, teach me! With a pair of sparkling eyes, she looked towards her own master.

Unfortunately, she was instantly ignored. Yu Yan simply reached out his hand and stuffed a paper bag to Zhu Yao.

“The formation’s core under the sea has been damaged.” Yu Yan simply informed with a bland voice, and then, turning into a ray of white light, he flew down into the waters.

Zhu Yao blankly grabbed onto the paper bag her master gave her, and opened it.

This long shape, and bright red color.

It’s actually spicy gluten!

Why did he give her a bag of spicy gluten? Haah~

Wait a minute. Two days ago, because she was unable to get used to sleeping on her new bed, she seemed to have went over and asked her master, if he knew how to make spicy gluten. After she received a negative answer, she seemed to have casually told him the method to make it.

Then the reason why her master went into isolation this time was...

The answer to this was really too destructive to the three views!

Master, tell me honestly. Just what level have you reached with your life skills!?

The promotion ceremony ended with a slap in the face.

Facing this high-ranking personnel kidnapping incident, all of the other high-ranking personnel of Ancient Hill Sect opened an emergency meeting. After a series of discussion, they had made a decision. They could not bear to throw this face, hence, they had to definitely give a good slap back.

Firstly, during the meeting, the crime suspect had been confirmed. He was a man who had a crush on Sovereign Feng Yi since a thousand years ago. His name: Chen Ze. Class: Heretic Practitioner. And, he possessed the cultivation level of a Nascent Soul Paragon. This person had always loved Sovereign Feng Yi, yet, because of suffering a series of rejections, hatred and resentment was born in his heart. He then took the opportunity of this promotion ceremony, to create chaos and kidnap the Sovereign.

His actions were hideous, and had even went back on the basic principle of free love in the cultivation world. He should receive the condemnation of society and punishment from the heavens. The other high-ranking personnels of Ancient Hill Sect expressed outrage to this action of his, and immediately established a small squad for this incident. This squad had to capture the criminal, if not, eliminate him on the spot! At the same time, save the innocent victim – Sovereign Feng Yi.

Zhu Yao expressed a hundred and twenty percent of her support to this.

However!

Momma's egg, why me?

What's the meaning of dispatching her?

Regarding this move, Ancient Hill Sect's highest leading figure, Zi Mo, president of the student council, gave this explanation.

"Little brother Soi!" Zi Mo patted on her shoulder, and spoke to her with extreme earnestness. "You have seen the situation back then yourself. It all happened too quickly, and you had clearly seen that person's face. Also, Sovereign Feng Yi should be seriously injured right now, and incidentally, you have the Wood Spirit Vein, which is compatible to hers. You're the most suitable for treating Sovereign's injuries."

Zhu Yao gave a face. Why did she have to hide her identity, and say that she had a Wood Spirit Vein? Was it too late to regret?

"Don't worry. As long as Sovereign recovers from her injuries, I believe that, no matter how strong that heretic practitioner is, he won't be able to do anything against all of you."

Do you really think so? Earlier, didn't he completely make a fool out of a group of Nascent Soul and Demigod practitioners? Zhu Yao could not help but roll her eyes at him.

"I will entrust Sovereign Feng Yi to you, then!" Before she could even resist, Zi Mo had already hammered down his decision.

The small special task force for saving Sovereign Feng Yi had been officially established, and was formed by three people, Zhu Yao, Beast-Taming Mountain Mountain Lord – Zi Dan, and Feng Yi's disciple – Xiao Yi. The plan was to head to the base of heretic practitioners, Yucang City, which was near the Wild Lands, gather intel of Chen Ze's location, and execute the rescue mission.

Sovereign Yiran swiftly executed hand-seals with his two hands, and opened a teleportation gate. "The position of Yucang City is hard to be determined. So as to prevent you three from going in the wrong direction, this Sovereign will directly send the three of you outside the city. You must remember, that place is the territory of heretic practitioners. You must proceed with caution."

Before Zhu Yao could even express her statement, she had already been pulled into the teleportation gate by the hot-blooded Zi Dan.

"Wait a minute, I have yet to..." she had yet to agree to this, hey. At the very least, allow her to give her master a call.

Unfortunately, no matter how much force he used, she was unable to win against a fatty in a pulling match.

The scenery in front of them instantly changed, and the three of them was already standing on a patch of grassland.

Zhu Yao: "....."

She did not say a single word from the beginning to end, why was she dispatched to carry out such a dangerous mission?

What's worse was...

Turning her head, she looked at student Xiao Yi beside her, who would always be a piggish teammate. She felt like crying.

This time, she was going to die as well, right? She definitely would, right?

She was not sure if Xiao Yi was really a bug, however, on his body, he definitely had a buff called "All Party Members shall Die", and it especially had a 100% damage bonus on her.

She suddenly felt that living was especially tiring.

"Little brother, hurry, look." Fatty student Zi Dan, with his bulky arms, nudged Zhu Yao. Being pushed by an excessively large figure, Zhu Yao lost her balance, and had almost fell flat on the ground. The fatty pointed to the front. "That place must be Yucang City."

Zhu Yao silently took two steps back, and maintained a safe distance. Then, following his finger, she looked over. At a distance of about five hundred meters away, there was an ancient-looking city. The city wall was filled with countless scars and holes, and felt it had stood for a very long time. It's just that the entire city

was actually floating in mid-air. Occasionally, there would be groups of three to two people, riding various types of demonic beasts, or riding various strange mystic tools, towards the city entrance, and then, enter the city.

“Let’s immediately enter and gather news of master.” Xiao Yi anxiously said, and summoned his flying sword with a wave of his hand.

“Wait a minute!” Zhu Yao stopped him. “You can’t use your flying sword!”

Xiao Yi’s expression changed, and was about to vent out his anger.

Zi Dan, however, said with a smile. “Little brother Soi is right.” He pointed to those people entering the city. “This is the gathering point of heretic practitioners, and only deity practitioners specialize in using swords. If you fly over with a sword, your identity as deity practitioners will be immediately exposed. Haven’t you realized that, among those group of people who have entered the city, none of them flew in with swords?”

Only then did Xiao Yi calm down, and kept away the flying sword in his hand.

“My contracted spiritual beast, however, can be of use.” Zi Dan summoned his own mount.

That's right, it's that pig.

“Little brother Soi, if you don't mind, why don't I give you a ride?” Zi Dan sat on his own pig, and stretched an enthusiastic pig's trotter towards her.

I do mind!

“Alright.” She had never rode on a pig in her life, and it seemed to be bearable.

“But as for junior brother Xiao...”

“I shall use a mystic tool.” Xiao Yi pulled out a jade flute, and changed it into a size which allowed him to stand firmly on. When he stood on it, she had an imagination of him being sage-like. As expected, flutes were tools that could raise one's acting ability to flirt with girls.

“Alright, let us enter the city!” Zi Dan announced, and with a wave of his hand, the fat figure lowered his body into an arc...

And squeezed Zhu Yao down.

Zhu Yao: “.....”

Xiao Yi: “.....”

The hell, what happened to the promised two-seater mount?

“Hohohoho...” Zi Dan’s face was filled with apologetic intentions. “I’m sorry, little brother. I had forgotten to change the size of my spiritual beast.”

The corner of Zhu Yao’s lips twitched. Then why the hell did you invite me up?

My buttocks, yo... oh, it hurts!

Zi Dan increased the size of the demonic beast below him by two times. Only then did Zhu Yao once again climbed up, and sat a little further away out of fear.

She had no other options, she was poor after all. With her setting of constant resurrection, no matter what treasures she had, they were destined to all be of one-time use only. Currently on her, other than a normal spiritual sword, she did not even have a single mystic tool. Originally, she had thought of plundering a few from her master, however, no one gave her the opportunity to do so!

As two rode on a beast while the other rode on a mystic tool, in but a moment, the little rescue squad had arrived under Yucang City.

From up close, this city looked even more ancient. On the city wall, there were countless scars that were left from battles, yet, at the top of wall, there were various word talismans placed

everywhere, and they filled the entire wall in a packed manner.

Zi Dan explained her to that, the sigil on this city, was an ancient sigil. They were present in all four walls of Yucang City, and it was unknown who was the person who left them. However, the strength of the sigil was something no one could break. There were no restrictions on leaving the city, however, if one wished to enter the city, that person could only enter from the entrance of the city. Only leaving, and not entering, it could be said that it was a city that no one could break into.

This was also why, even though all of the Deity Sects knew of Yucang City, the gathering spot of all heretic practitioners, none of them had attacked it.

“Who goes there?” The moment they approached the city gate, a heretic practitioner with a ghastly face and with only a single eye, asked with vigilance, and inspected the three of them from head to toe. “What’s your business in Yucang City?”

Xue Yi: She’s a character from a TV drama. A very beautiful woman, and has a very straightforward character.

Chapter 70: The Queen Regnant

The three of them were startled. He looked like the city gate's guard, but why did he not stop the rest, but them?

“We’re here to avoid being hunted down for revenge!” Zhu Yao quick-wittedly said.

“Revenge?” This person was exactly a heretic practitioner who was in-charge of guarding the gate. He looked at the faces of the three people in front of him. “Who are you people running away from?”

“Naturally, it’s a Deity Sect.”

“So it’s another bunch of idiots who are here to seek protection after offending a Deity Sect.” The heretic practitioner laughed with scorn. “Do you know the password?”

“Password?” Zhu Yao was completely stunned. The hell she would know the password?

Wait a minute, could it be: “Open Sesame?”

Roooooar ㄥ|`o’|ㄣ

Before waiting for the guard’s reply, Sesame had already spontaneously leapt out, its two eyes looked at Zhu Yao excitedly,

implying: ‘Mistress, you called me?’

Zhu Yao:

However, that guard did not look even the least bit scared. He quickly got used to looking at Sesame, and had a face as though he had a clear understanding of what was going on. “Oh... So you people are beast practitioners, with those immoral things that you people do, it’s no wonder you people would be chased after by the Deity Sect. Go in then, don’t waste this big man’s time.”

“Thank you, brother.” Although she did not understand why, since they were able to enter, then it felt absolutely brilliant.

Zhu Yao instantly called Sesame to return, and had him kept back in a Spirit Beast Pouch her master had given her. Then, she brought the two others and entered the city.

Only when Zi Dan explained to her, did she know that the so-called beast practitioners were heretic practitioners who refined the corpses of spiritual beasts into corpses that could be manipulated and used to attack. However, this Art, lacked a little morals, because, a corpse of a regular demonic beast could not be used to refine, spiritual beasts that had been subdued by people must be used. However, by nature, beast practitioners and demonic beasts were never fated. As beast practitioners often refine corpses of beasts, they carry a smell which demonic beasts especially hate, and would cause the demonic beasts to go crazy, let alone subduing them. Hence, beast practitioners could only steal spiritual beasts from others, then, kill them before turning them into puppets. Usually, puppets which were refined successfully

would be a rank higher than when the spiritual beasts were still alive.

Killing others' spiritual beasts while it was still very much alive and well, and even go around openly after refining them into puppets, beast practitioners were definitely heretic practitioners who gained the most hate.

Earlier, when Sesame suddenly appeared, and it was even a ninth-ranked, that guard must have definitely thought that they had stolen an eighth-ranked spiritual beast from some Deity Sect, and had even turned it into a puppet, hence, they were being chased by that Deity Sect.

She really had to thank the hole in the big brother guard's brain, it really opened at the right time.

The moment they entered the city, the three of them went to indirectly gathered some information. However, heretic practitioners were after all not regular people, and had very strong wariness, so, they would not continuing talking with others without reserve. In an entire day, the amount of information they gathered were only a handful, and, not many of them were reliable.

Chen Zi was also a beast practitioner. As people who cultivate into deities, no matter were they heretic practitioners or practitioners who come from the Deity Sect, which would not like to bring up one or two spiritual beasts? Even her master was bringing up that bunch of stupid divine cranes. One could imagine, how much contempt people would feel about a beast practitioner,

who specialize in stealing spiritual beasts from others, such that, when these beast practitioners try to speak up, they would always usher a few rolling eyes and glares.

In a day, they completely did not make any progress.

The three of them discussed, and decided to stay a night. Chen Zi brought that many demonic beasts to attack Ancient Hill Sect, and it could be seen that they were all his puppets. With that huge number, the number of people who had lost their spiritual beasts were naturally relatively the same as well. As long they inquired about it for a few more times, it would be impossible for them to not find any useful piece of information.

When the sky turned dark, the three of them found an inn. After cutting off fatty Zi Dan's request to stay in the same room with a firm attitude, she returned to her own lodging.

There were a few things she needed to confirm about.

After setting up a barrier to prevent inspection, she called out the Wood Spirit from her divine sense.

“Wood Spirit, do you know where's the Water Spirit?” There was a certain connection between the five Spirits, so it should be able to sense the Water Spirit's existence.

“Chick~” When the Wood Spirit woke up, it had already returned to its little bonsai-look. Hearing her question, it tilted its head, and

then, waved its branches about for a moment. “Chick, chick, chick, chick, chick~”

She... did not understand a single word.

“Alright, alright, stop chicking.” It seemed like communication was a big problem. “I shall ask, and you shall answer. If it’s right, nod, and if it’s wrong, shake your head. Today, at the great hall, did you sense the Water Spirit on someone else’s body?”

Currently, Xiao Yi was not injured, so naturally, Feng Yi would treat his wounds with the Water Spirit, so, the Water Spirit should still be on Feng Yi.

Although she was forced into this rescue mission, she might have a chance at obtaining the Water Spirit.

“Chick~” The Wood Spirit tilted its little head, and then, began to crazily shake. It even dropped a table full of leaves from its shaking.

“No? It’s really not on anyone among that group of people?”

“Chick!” It continued to shake its leaves.

Then, where was the Water Spirit? Zhu Yao was completely stunned as well.

Wait a minute!

“Then, did you sense the Water Spirit today?”

“Chick!” It nodded.

It sensed the Water Spirit, yet, it was not from anyone in the great hall. Could it be...

When the sky had just lit up on the second day, the little rescue squad had already begun their overtime work. This time, the three of them headed to the city’s most bustling marketplace. This was the first time Zhu Yao had come to a practitioner market in the cultivation world, yet, she completely did not have the heart to stop and stroll around. She raised a hundred and twenty percent of her spirits, and went to look for Sovereign Feng Yi’s whereabouts.

So as to integrate into the masses better, the moment they entered the city, they had already hidden their Nascent Soul-stage cultivation level. After all, if three Nascent Soul-stage practitioners were to walk together, and even inquire about certain things in all directions, it would easily raise one’s suspicion. It would be different, however, if they were three Azoth-stage practitioners.

After gathering a round of intel did they find out that, Chen Zi had basically never appeared in Yucang City. Or, it should be said that he did not dare to appear here. It was rumored that two hundred years ago, Chen Zi courted his own death by stealing the City Lord’s sixth-grade spiritual beast which the lord had bitterly managed to subdue, and he had even turned it into his own

puppet. Ever since then, he had been listed as wanted in the entire city, and he no longer dared to step into a single step into Yucang City.

Zhu Yao was a little disheartened. Yucang City was Chen Zi's only shelter. If he did not even dare to come here, then where else would he dare to hide at?

No, wait. He dared to cause such a huge incident at Ancient Hill Sect, and it was even when the promotion ceremony was being held, in the situation where various Sects and Clans were present, and kidnapped Feng Yi away. Then, he must definitely have a place to hide that he felt completely safe in. And the most dangerous place, usually, was the safest place.

In other words, there's an extremely high possibility that he's hiding in Yucang City by hiding his identity.

Thinking up to this point, Zhu Yao instantly felt spirited again. Telling her thoughts to the other two, she switched her target. Giving up on Chen Zi, rather, she began to inquire about Sovereign Feng Yi's information. Although the amount of information they got was not many, yet, it was sufficient to determine that, Feng Yi had indeed come into Yucang City. According to one person, he saw her traveling alongside a man, and had headed in the northwestern direction.

The three of them were excited, and just when they planned on heading to the northwestern direction, suddenly, a commotion occurred on the streets, as the crowd suddenly began to congest.

“Ah!”

A scream suddenly sounded at the front, and the crowd squeezed towards where they were one after another.

The three of them still had no idea what had just happened, then, another few screams sounded again at the front. A few wisps of black fog could be faintly seen rising up as well.

“Let’s leave here quickly.” Zi Dan immediately decided to leave.

Zhu Yao and Xiao Yi nodded. After all, they smuggled themselves inside the city in the first place, it would be bad if they were discovered.

Just when the three of them turned, the heretic practitioner who was trafficking spiritual beast eggs, who they had just inquired their information from earlier, his two eyes suddenly largely widened up, and he let out a miserable scream.

Dense fog, which was as black as black ink, endlessly emitted out of his eyes, ears, mouth and nose. His body was even disintegrating at a speed that could be seen with the naked eye, and instantly, he had already turned into ash, even his bones could not be found.

Such a terrifying killing method, forget about Zhu Yao, even Reverend Zi Dan had never seen it before.

Before, this was still not the end. Immediately after, the same screams once again sounded constantly from all directions. In an instant, five to six strong and healthy male practitioners, with the same method, died on the streets, in everyone's eyes.

Several fearful voices instantly sounded from the crowd. Heretic practitioners treasured their lives the most, and the street which was still crowded with people earlier, those who flew with mystic tools summoned their mystic tools, and those who rode on spiritual beasts summoned their spiritual beasts, and they began to flee for their lives one after another.

Zhu Yao made eye contact with the other two, and planned on leaving as well.

“What's everyone getting worked up for!”

Suddenly, a Demigod-stage pressure came from the sky, and the crowd who were still chaotically fleeing in all directions earlier, instantly quietened down.

Many of the people who had already flown up in the sky, lost their balance, and instantly fell. A few of those Foundation-stage heretic practitioners who did not have high cultivation level, had even began to bleed everywhere under the mighty and strong pressure.

An extremely beautiful woman, suddenly descended from the sky. She wore a layer of very revealing light, translucent veil. Her feet were bare, and the two round lumps on chest were bulging

even more. Her facial appearance was even more perfect, compared to Sovereign Feng Yi.

Zhu Yao could not help but sigh. This was definitely an outstanding creature, whom men would not be able to shift their line of sight away from after glancing an eye at her.

The strangest thing was, none of the heretic practitioners present dared to raise their heads. Their expressions, rather than respectful, they could be said to be fearful. Not even the cry of a crow could be heard in the entire place.

“What’s with you lot crying out like ghosts in the early morning? Disturbing my sleep.” The woman batted an eye at the crowd on the streets.

Hearing her question, a tall heretic practitioner at the side hurriedly replied. “To answer city lord, earlier, a strange thing happened in the city, a lot of people...”

The woman cast a cold glare at him, and with a wave of her hand, that heretic practitioner who replied suddenly flew out, and heavily smashed onto the ground a few meters away, spitting out a good few mouthful of blood.

The woman once again waved his hand, and that person flew back here, kneeling right in front of her. With the woman’s slender jade foot, she heavily stepped on the back of the man. Then, with one of her hands, she raised the man’s chin, her eyes narrowed, and she said with a smile. “Why don’t you know the

rules? What city lord? Call me queen!”

Zhu Yao gave a face. So this city lord, was a queen regnant.

The man who replied was evidently heavily injured, yet, he still clenched his teeth and replied. “Yes, your majesty, the queen. This little one did not know the rules, I hope your majesty will forgive me.”

Zhu Yao gave another face. This ‘your majesty, the queen’, crossed over from a movie, right?

“Mn.” Only then did the woman release his chin. However, she turned, and sat on the man’s back, casually pointing out to another person at the side. “You, tell me. What big deal happened here?”

“City... To reply to my queen, earlier, on this street, there were many people who suddenly turned into piles of ashes, with their corpses and bones nowhere to be found. Before they disappeared, their bodies were emitting out black fog as well.”

“Black fog?” The expression of the woman sank, suddenly, she lifted a hint of a cold smile. “So it’s that traitor, Chen Zi. I didn’t look for him, but he actually still dared to return. Everyone in the city, listen up!” The queen regnant stood up, and once again released her pressure, and said with a cold smile. “Find me that beast practitioner named Chen Zi. Whoever is able to catch him, this queen will heavily reward you!”

Everyone present began to go into an uproar again. All of their faces were a little excited, and they looked extremely eager. There were even some who could not wait and began to move.

Chapter 71: Could Not Be Described

Zhu Yao nudged Zi Dan, signalling to him to take the opportunity while it was chaotic to leave.

“To inform my queen, earlier, these three people were looking for a beast practitioner named Chen Zi as well.”

A mystic tool trafficker pointed straight at them.

The hell bro, do you have some sort of grudge against me?

As expected, in the next moment, the Demigod-stage pressure came pressing down straight at the three of them.

Zhu Yao who did not get a good footing, was instantly pressed onto the ground. The other two were not in any better shapes, as they half-kneeled on the ground, cold sweat flooding out.

They were only weaker by a large realm, she did not expect that the difference would be so big. Forget about resisting, they could not even try to stand up.

“Who are you people? Why are you looking for Chen Zi?” In a flash, the woman had already stood in front of them. Eyes which were like daggers swept across them, and then, she suddenly laughed. “Hahaha, so you people are actually deity practitioners. I did not expect that practitioners from the Deity Sect, would court death and send themselves up to my doorstep.”

In front of a Demigod, the three's disguise were basically futile, and instantly, they reverted back to their original figures.

“Men, bring them back.” When the woman gave the order, a light fog floated over, and instantly turned into three men. Taking one each, their little rescue squad was exterminated.

Zhu Yao instantly felt like crying. That guy called Chen Zi, he must have destroyed Earth in his previous life. How did he offend people everywhere he went?

In her entire lifetime, this was the first time Zhu Yao had entered a prison. Her prisonmates were a fatty, and someone who carried a buff that kills his party mates. Outside, there was even a perverse queen regnant who could sentence them to death at any time, and anywhere.

“Little brother, do you have a way to escape from this place?” The fat prisonmate squeezed over, and looked at her with a constipated expression.

Initially, she had one, if she could have brought her master alongside her. However, the higher-ups of Ancient Hill Sect did not give her this opportunity.

“No.” Zhu Yao sighed, and pointed to the prison door. “You have seen it yourself earlier. Earlier, that female heretic practitioner had set up a restriction seal on the door, and it will explode when touched. Even if we were to forcefully break out of here, it will

startle that heretic practitioner.”

“What about using your ninth-ranked demonic beast to swallow that door?” This way, even if it exploded, it would not produce any sounds.

Zhu Yao continued to shake her head. “The size of my demonic beast is too big, a prison cage as small as this basically isn’t able to contain it.” Actually, she had another consideration to take note of. Xiao Yi had seen Sesame before on that door in the Tasyoluk Secret Realm. Although back then, it was sealed on the door, and currently, its appearance was slightly different, she could not be hundred percent sure that he would not recognize it after seeing it a couple of times.

“Since that’s the case, we can only wait and see then.” Zi Dan had initially thought that even if the three of them Nascent Soul-stage practitioners were unable to find Sovereign Feng Yi, they would still be strong enough to deal with the heretic practitioners in the city. However, he did not expect that the city lord had actually broke through into a Demigod.

“Senior brother Zi Dan, looking at your expression, you seem to know that heretic practitioner earlier.” Xiao Yi suddenly asked.

Zi Dan sighed, nodded, and began to talk about her origin.

Zhu Yao, curious, began to hear as well. The more she heard, the more she felt that this was a huge dramatic show.

That city lord was called Rui Yu, and she and Chen Zi were actually martial sister and brother. They were actually disciples of the Hundred Harmony Sect, a Deity Sect, in the past, and their Sect specialized in practitioner-pair arts. However, for some unknown reasons, the Sect was destroyed, and they were only the two left. Hence, due to various drama of mutual dependence, Chen Zi admitted into a Devil Sect, and turned into a heretic practitioner.

Chen Zi became a beast practitioner, while Rui Yu still stayed with her roots and upheld the name of a deity practitioner. Due to her relationship with the piggish teammate, Chen Zi, she was sought by various people who were looking for revenge against him. Later on, she even began to like someone who did not even like her, and after being rejected by him, due to a fit of anger, she strayed to the wrong path.

And the strayed path she took was really unique. She did not turn into any type of heretic practitioner, rather, she mended the practitioner-pair arts that came from her Sect, turning them into a set of heretic arts which specialized in absorbing the essence of men, and by using their essences, she raised her cultivation.

Your guess is correct. Specifically, the core of this method, was to have intimate bonding on the bed. With two or more men as the basic point, a form of harmonious exercise with certain parts which could not be described under the neck.

From then on, Rui Yu was labelled as a heretic practitioner, and after that, she caught up, and even surpassed Chen Zi in cultivation. Two people with similar fates, once again got closer to

each other. However, Chen Zi had his eyes set on Sovereign Feng Yi of a Deity Sect, and so as to see Feng Yi, he had even thought of various ways to enter the Deity Sect several times to court his death. Hence, the two martial brother and sister were completely torn apart from then on.

Speaking of which, Zhu Yao had suddenly recalled that strange phenomenon that happened earlier on the streets. Those black fog, were exactly the same as the ones they saw on Ancient Hill Sect. It could be seen that those few dead heretic practitioners, were precisely Chen Zi's doings.

While that Rui Yu did not even think about it, and immediately gave the order to capture Chen Zi, was because she was very familiar with his arts.

But clearly, he was already in hiding, so why did he still have to risk coming out to kill people? Was he not afraid of exposing himself?

A bunch of suspicions filled Zhu Yao's mind, but what she could confirm was, Chen Zi was indeed within Yucang City.

"Hurry up, come out." While she was pondering, the guard walked over, and opened the prison door.

The mystical powers of the three people were sealed, and after making countless turns and bends, they were brought to a half-opened door. They were forcefully pushed inside, and then, the door was closed.

Zhu Yao barely managed to stabilize herself, and did not roll onto the gourd like the other two.

This was a very big, yet extremely spacious room. White and red light veils hung everywhere, and a stench filled the air, causing them to feel utterly disgusted. Just why did those guards bring them here?

“There seems to be people over there.” Xiao Yi pointed to the front.

After hesitating for a moment, as the guards could not have pushed them in here without a reason, the three of them cautiously walked forward, and went deeper into the room.

The room was exaggeratingly large. Only after they had walked for several dozens of meters, did they finally see there were faint shadows of people moving behind the light veil in front of them.

The stench was, however, getting even heavier, and the sounds of happy and painful groans instantly entered the ears of the three people.

When they realized what those sounds were, the expression of the three of them instantly darkened.

The guards really had hardcore tastes. What’s the meaning for inviting them here to view a live porno? Could she get a refund?

Zhu Yao turned and wanted to leave, suddenly, she was pulled by an extremely huge absorbing force, and she flew towards the opposite direction. At that moment, her blood turned and surged, and the three people who could not cast their arts to resist, all puke out a mouthful of blood. They then stopped at the front of an extremely, extremely large and luxurious bed, and knelt down with their two knees.

And a woman who was currently moving the part of her body which could not be described forcefully on the bed, and was doing something which could not be described with a man in a position which could not be described, and was currently could not be described. Sounds that could not be described, were drilling into the ears of the three people. (==)

Without saying, the bold and unrestrained woman was precisely Rui Yu. After casting her art to fix them at the front of the bed, she did not care about them anymore, and focused on could not be described with the man on the bed. After a careful look, Zhu Yao realized that there was actually not just a single man on the bed, but four. Every one of their faces looked obsessed as they looked at Rui Yu. The four of them played out their respective roles perfectly, and every one of them was in-charge of each part of Rui Yu's body which could not be described.

This scene was so extraordinary, even Zhu Yao who had seen movies with R18 ratings in the modern era, was dumbfounded. It was no wonder she wanted people to call her Queen. If she were to be holding onto a leather whip and a candle, she would be an actual Queen.

The people on the bed were really focused in their acting, while the audience below were really focused in puking out blood as well.

Momma's egg, even if they did not buy tickets, there was no need for her to release her pressure to restrain them, right!? And it was even loosened and then tightened occasionally, creating manual 3D effects.

After two hours, a certain episode, sounds, 3D effects, and the show of R18 queen finally came to an end. As for the four men who were initially healthy, strong, and handsome, were getting thinner at a speed that could be seen with the naked eye, and they seemed to only have left with a single breath.

Rui Yu kicked away the man at the side who was still holding onto her round lump, picked up a light veil at the bedside and stood up, effortlessly sliding out her part which could not be described from the man's part which could not be described.

"The three of you, with just the cultivation at the Nascent Soul-stage, you dare to enter my Yucang City. Are all of the people of the Deity Sect as stupid as you three?" Rui Yu's voice held a hint of laziness. Wearing her light veil, she walked over bare-footedly. Stopping in front of Zhu Yao, she bent her body over, raised Zhu Yao's chin, and said with a smile. "You look pretty decent?"

The hell, earlier, she had watched the show for too long, and had forgotten that she herself was currently a man as well, she seemed to be in a moral crisis.

Rui Yu smiled, and then in an instant, her eyes turned cold, and she slapped strongly onto her face. “This queen hates good-looking men the most.”

This pervert! Not only was she in a moral crisis, her life was in danger as well.

This slap which clearly carried spiritual energy, directly screwed up Zhu Yao’s face. Her jaw instantly dislocated, and it hurted so much, her tears even began to fall.

If you did not like good-looking men, then say so earlier. Why the hell did she have to vent her anger on her face? Were you bullying her for not being born a woman!?

After Rui Yu vented off her anger, she walked over to Xiao Yi beside Zhu Yao. Similarly, she raised his chin, and her smile was even colder. “You’re not bad as well!”

Raising her hand, and it looked as though her slap was about to land on his face.

“Have you always used ruthlessness to disguise yourself?”

“What did you say?” Rui Yu’s palm unexpectedly stopped beside Xiao Yi’s ear.

Xiao Yi sighed, and then, actually used a pair of pitiful eyes to look at her. “Aren’t you? Hating men, that’s only an intentional disguise.”

“Disguise? You call this a disguise?” Rui Yu laughed coldly, turned, and with a wave of her hand, the four expressionless men who were as thin as firewood, instantly turned into ashes. Her expression became even more dark and cold, as she ruthlessly stared at Xiao Yi. “Good-looking men, should all die!”

Xiao Yi, however, actually let out an even deeper sigh, and looked at her even more pitifully. “You have simply... been hurt too deeply! Slaughter isn’t your true nature.”

“.....” Rui Yu was speechless, as though she was shocked by his words. For a moment, she did not know how to react, and the actions of her loosening and tightening her fists, repeated for several times, and only then did she finally let out a cold laugh. Rui Yu turned to sit back on her bed, and stared straightly at Xiao Yi. “Hmph, you seem to be a little interesting.”

The situation changed too quickly, Zhu Yao was a little unable to keep up with the pace.

As though she could faintly hear this entering her ear: ‘Successfully conquered Rui Yu. Xiao Yi obtained a girl.’

The hell, something like this works too!? His stud halo is blinding the world!

“I really want to hear, what’s really my true nature! Men!”

The guards outside opened the door and entered.

“Bring those two back into the prison!”

The guards did not say a single word, and picked up the two light bulbs, Zhu Yao and Zi Dan. Zi Dan thought that the queen would do something unfavourable to Xiao Yi, and wanted to resist, however, Zhu Yao passed him a ‘it’s alright’ expression, and the two of them were thrown back into prison by the guards.

Feng Yi Little Rescue Squad had obtained victory in their first battle. The squad had accumulated a loss of a jaw, and squad member Xiao Yi had been rewarded with a girl.

Chapter 72: Three Heads, Four Heads, Are Better Than One

Zhu Yao had never felt so grateful for Xiao Yi's protagonist cheat. Thinking back to the queen's earlier reaction, there should be completely no danger at all in regards to his life, and he might even be able to help his squad mates.

To actually even mesmerize a Demigod-stage female practitioner, Xiao Yi, as expected, was using his entire life to flirt, huh.

A specialized piggish teammate could actually be of use as well, the world was changing too quickly, and she wished to calm down while nibbling on a packet of spicy gluten, if her jaw was fine.

In the next two days, Zhu Yao and Zi Dan spent their time especially calmly, and there were no longer any guards bringing them out to view a live version of an R18 movie. Although it hurt a lot, she still successfully connected back her jaw.

Just when they thought that they were about to be forgotten by the queen, the queen loftily appeared. This time, she no longer wore those types of see-through light veils, rather, she was wearing regular clothes. Although she still looked flirtatious, at the very least, she was wearing shoes.

The queen coldly looked at the two people in the prison cell, and lazily spoke. "Initially, I had wanted to kill you two to prevent getting eyesores, but he said that you two were his senior martial brothers. Although I hate the relationship of martial brothers and

sisters the most, since I promised him to let you two go, then I will give you two a chance to live.”

With a wave of Rui Yu’s hands, the restriction placed on the door disappeared. “Why aren’t you two hurrying out?”

Seeing the two of them walking out, Rui Yu cast an art, and their sealed mystic powers instantly began to flow again. The first thing Zhu Yao did, was to cast a recovery mystic art on her jaw, soothing the pain she felt for two days because of the forced connection of her jaw.

Rui Yu threw a pair of scornful eyes at Zhu Yao for her actions. A big man was actually afraid of such a little pain.

Zhu Yao curled her lips without minding about it. She had experienced things that were even more painful, but she was unable to bear the pain for two days, after all.

“Let’s go. He wishes to see you two.” Rui Yu once again stared at her, before turning and walking outside.

Out of the three, only Zi Dan’s face was still at a loss. Zhu Yao, however, knew that the person she was going to meet was definitely Xiao Yi.

They arrived at a flower garden, and Xiao Yi was standing by the pond, neatly dressed, while on the other hand, the two of them were covered in blood, and looked fatigued.

“Senior martial brothers.” Xiao Yi walked over. Rui Yu, however, moved towards him, instantly held onto Xiao Yi’s hands, and provokingly looked at two people in front of her.

“Little brother Xiao Yi, what is this you’re...” Zi Dan frowned, and looked at the two of them back and forth. His expression was full of disagreement. Could it be that Xiao Yi wanted to associate with a heretic practitioner?

A hint of discomfort flashed passed Xiao Yi’s face. He explained to them the things that happened back then, and the contents were actually all about how Rui Yu’s life was so pitiful. She basically had no other choice but to turn into a heretic practitioner, and after his persuasion, she already had the heart to repent. He hoped that the two of them could put down their prejudice, and forgive her for what she had been forced to do.

Zhu Yao was shocked, so back then, he was not acting. The words Xiao Yi had said back that in the room, were all his true feelings, and were not something he thought on a whim. In other words, he had really struck onto the pitiful heart of this heretic practitioner who specialized in absorbing the essence of men.

Zi Dan was completely dumbfounded from what he heard as well, and after hearing the entire thing, his face had turned as black as the depth of a pot.

Although Zi Dan was a happy-go-lucky fatty, who usually did not have any temperament issues and was someone anyone could

strike a chord with, he was still a Lord of a Mountain, one of the backbones of Ancient Hill Sect. Living and growing under the red flag, his roots were in the Deity Sect, and was a genuine hard-line deity practitioner. The way Xiao Yi put it, he basically wanted Zi Dan to betray his Deity Sect.

The color of Zi Dan's face turned from black to purple, and on his fat and plump hands, even his veins were about to explode out. Just when he was about to rush up towards him and have a standoff, Zhu Yao hurriedly stopped him.

“Senior martial brother, don't forget the reason why we're here.”

Zi Dan looked at her in the eye, and only then was he able to suppress the storm in his eyes. He turned around and no longer looked at Xiao Yi.

Seeing that the two people did not resist, Rui Yu snorted coldly. “Hmph, at least you two are tactful.”

The veins on Zi Dan's hands once again rose up.

Zhu Yao, however, had already gotten used to it. When Xiao Yi was ten, she had already known of the problem with the kid's three views. However, when he said such flowery words, Zhu Yao was indeed still a little shocked. No matter how pitiful Rui Yu's life was, no matter how forced she was to make that decision, it was still the truth that she had cultivated using the essence of men. Now that she had raised herself to a Demigod, behind her, just how many bones had been accumulated? With just a single ‘she was

forced to do so', how could her past be cancelled out?

Her life was pitiful, however, the number of people in the world that were as pitiful were like the number of strands of hair on a cow. If every one of them was like her, then what would the world have become? As the saying goes, life was given by the heavens, however, the path one takes is set by oneself. People that live in the heavens, can walk the life of a devil, while people that live hell, can live in the extravagance of the heavens as well. One's decision has always been in one's hands, the so-called 'forced to do so', is just an excuse to fall into despair.

"We can discuss this matter another time." Zhu Yao said. "Have you found a way to save your master?" She did not care about him flirting with girls, as long as he still remembered his own master, then that would be fine.

Xiao Yi was startled, and only then did he realize that he had actually placed Rui Yu's matter at the top of his mind, and had forgotten about his own master. His face surfaced several traces of guilt. Then, he replied. "The territory of Yucang City is too vast, this matter about locating her, I'm afraid there's a need to look at it from a long-term perspective."

"There's no need to look at it from a long-term perspective." Zhu Yao waved her hand. "We don't have that much time, though, I have a plan that we can try."

There were too many people in Yucang City, and if they were to investigate them one by one, their investigation would take forever. And since Chen Zi dared to come in, then he must have a

way to prevent being discovered, otherwise, he would not have fearlessly killed people in the city.

Zhu Yao's method was very simple. Since there were too many people, then, would it not be fine if they were to just let them out? Of course, not all of them would exit the city, rather, all of the heretic practitioners who possess the Wood Spirit Vein. Feng Yi was a Wood Heavenly Spirit Vein holder, so her body would definitely be entirely filled with wood spiritual energy. Under the situation where there are no Wood Spirit Veins in the entire city, she would have the Wood Spirit sense which area where the wood spiritual energy was the most concentrated at, and Feng Yi would be there.

Of course, the fact that she possessed the Wood Spirit was something she could not tell them, hence, the person who could sense such a thing, would be her, who similarly possessed the Wood Heavenly Spirit Vein as well.

This was also the best plan she could think of in these two days.

When Zhu Yao finished describing her plan, Xiao Yi and Zi Dan felt that this method could work as well.

Although Rui Yu was a little unwilling, she still issued down the order as the city lord on Xiao Yi's behalf, and had all of the people in the city with the Wood Spirit Veins to leave the city, preventing them from entering within the next three days.

In just a single afternoon, there were not even a single heretic

practitioner with the Wood Spirit Vein left in the city.

Zhu Yao sat in the lotus position, and gave a look as though she was sensing the wood spiritual energy, but actually, she was entering her divine sense.

“Wood Spirit, try sensing it again. How many places in the city are there that possess wood spiritual energy?”

“Chick~” The Wood Spirit tilted its head, pondered for a moment, and then, obediently stretched a vine. “Chick!”

This was the method of communication they decided upon earlier. A single vine meant one.

“Very good. Now, tell me, which direction is it?”

“Chick~” The vine speedily turned into an arrow, and pointed to the left, which was the western direction.

“Good job!”

Zhu Yao praised it, and only then did she open her eyes, and tell her squad mates in front of her who were waiting for the news.

“It’s in the western direction.”

Xiao Yi and Zi Dan looked at each other in the eye, and then, one summoning out a mystic tool, while the other summoned a spiritual beast, the two of them headed outside the door. Naturally, Zhu Yao followed after them as well, and they flew towards the western part of the city.

As Zhu Yao communicated with the Wood Spirit, she leaded the way, and a moment later, they arrived at an especially worn-down house.

This had to be the secluded area within the city. There was not even a single person in the vicinity, and inside the house with two rooms, they were actually as empty.

“This is the place you sensed.” Unknown to when it happened, Rui Yu had followed after them, and she coldly smiled at Zhu Yao.

Xiao Yi frowned. “Why did you follow us?”

Rui Yu looked at him in the eye, and said with a flighty tone. “Obviously, I’m worried about you.”

Xiao Yi did not reply. Looking at his expression, he seemed to enjoy it a little.

Zhu Yao silently rolled her eyes, pulled onto Zi Dan at the side who was about to explode, took a step back, and had a small chat with him. After all, Xiao Yi did save them, and no matter how he disagreed with the entire thing, it was not their place to speak up.

“I have indeed sensed a dense amount of wood spiritual energy in this direction.” Little Wood Spirit basically did not develop the ability to lie. The direction it pointed to naturally could not be wrong.

Zi Dan rubbed his head, and said a little anxiously. “Little brother. We can see everything here with just a glance, let alone inside this house. Even in a radius of several kilometers from here, there’s no human presence at all either.”

Zhu Yao once again entered the house to take a look, and then, right after, went to the next room to take a look.

“Don’t you people feel that...” Zhu Yao pointed to this house. “There’s a little problem with the structures of the two rooms?”

Two rooms, and the space each of them had was not even fifteen square meters, however, the entire house took up nearly forty square meters of land. An estimate of at least five square meters of spare had disappeared.

“You’re saying...” Zi Dan’s eyes sparkled, and after making eye contact with Xiao Yi, they reacted at the same time.

Flying to the top of the roof together, they removed a large pile of roof tiles at the center, and then, joy was expressed on their faces at the same time. “There’s another room in the middle!”

Rui Yu retracted her ridiculing expression as well, and with a wave of her hand, she summoned a huge gust of wind, instantly removing the entire roof. With the two on the roof, they leapt into the room in the middle that did not have a door.

Zhu Yao flew and followed after them as well.

“Little brother, you’re really good. You actually managed to even discover something like this.” Zi Dan patted on her shoulder and praised.

Zhu Yao jolted from the patting of his big fat talon, and immediately stood further away. Could she say that it’s experience from looking at modern-day houses?

In the modern age, it was extremely difficult to buy a house, and there were even black-hearted pioneers who often cut down on the sizes of rooms. All of these were something she had trained from her experience.

“So what if he discovered a hidden room?” Rui Yu continued to activate her ridicule skill. “In the end, it’s still as empty, with not a single thing lying around.”

Zhu Yao inspected the surroundings, and indeed, it was still an empty room. Compared to those worn-down rooms outside, other than being filled with dust, there was not even a trace of wear in the room, as though no one had ever entered this place before.

She walked along the corners of the room, and did not discover anything, however, she could faintly feel there was something knocking under her feet. Dusting away the floor, she found out the floor was actually a stone floor, and there was even something engraved on it.

“There’s something on the ground.”

When Rui Yu heard this, she immediately did hand-seals with her two hands, casting out a large-range wind mystic art. Instantly, a huge wind blew in the vicinity, and the walls were instantly blown away as well. When the wind stopped, the initial small house with three rooms, was only left with the floor.

Did you have a grudge with the house or something? Have you ever considered the feelings of people who can never earn enough to buy a house in their lifetime?

“What’s engraved here?” Xiao Yi asked.

When the dusts were blown away, the thing engraved on the floor was revealed. There were nine engraved pieces, and they were neatly arranged. The pictures were different from each other, and they were not any form of symbols, nor was it a formation, and, they had never seen them before.

Rui Yu, Zi Dan and Xiao Yi stared at them for a long while, yet, none of them was able to see what in the world was engraved on the ground.

Chapter 73: Hehe, Ancient Secret Technique

“Little brother, have you seen these diagrams before?” Zi Dan asked.

Zhu Yao shook her head. These engravings were everywhere, it would be strange if she did.

“There seems to be one lacking over here.” Xiao Yi walked over to the right of the nine plates of pictures, and as he had said, there was a concave spot, as though it had been dug by someone. Xiao Yi reached out his hand to touch it, suddenly, that empty slot actually emitted out a silver light. “It’s actually able to light up here!”

The three of them were stunned.

Zhu Yao looked at that glowing squarish empty slot, and she then strongly turned her head back to look at those other nine plates at the side. There seemed to be something broken up in her mind, and then suddenly, with a ‘ting!’, the two broken ends instantly connected.

The hell, this was actually a picture puzzle. It was no wonder she felt the diagrams were everywhere, they were actually messed up.

“Move aside!” Zhu Yao pushed away Xiao Yi who activated the empty slot. “This should be a ga..... a mechanism.”

Zhu Yao had almost said it was a game. Squatting down, she

pressed on the plate next to the empty slot, and pulled it. Without even using any strength, that diagram plate automatically moved to the empty slot, and the slot which the picture plate was initially at, began to glow a silver-white light as well.

Zhu Yao looked at the other eight stone plates, and began to concentrate on solving the picture puzzle.

Less than ten minutes later, a complete picture had been formed. Zhu Yao moved the final picture plate to its intended position, and the empty slot finally no longer lighted up.

The ground suddenly began to shake, the complete picture suddenly emitted out a red glow, just like that of a formation's, and there were even unrecognizable words floating above it.

“It’s done!” Zi Dan, with an excited expression, looked towards Zhu Yao. “Little brother, I did not expect that you were actually proficient in the mechanisms and formations of the Ancient Era as well.”

A low IQ game like this, ancient?

Zhu Yao replied him with a smile. “Hehe, just a little, just a little!”

Could she tell him that she began playing this sort of thing when she was three years old?

“This is a teleportation formation!” Shocked, Xiao Yi took a step forward. “Master must definitely be at the other side of the formation.”

After saying that, he was the first one to enter it. Rui Yu curled her lips, a hint of dissatisfaction appeared on her face, yet, she still followed after him.

Zi Dan nodded towards Zhu Yao, and they walked towards the center of the formation.

The red glow suddenly brightened up greatly, and the scenery in front of her was covered entirely by the red light. However, a moment later, it slowly dimmed down.

Looking around her vicinity, they had already arrived at an unfamiliar place. The surroundings were dark and grey, broken rocks and shattered walls could be faintly seen at the front. The surroundings were lonely and not a single sound could be heard. It was so quiet, it was a little strange.

Zhu Yao cast out an ember, and the surroundings instantly became clearer.

There was actually a city in front of them, however, it was actually a barren and dead city. Looking at the style of those houses, they should be very ancient and old. And there were even some strange inscriptions engraved on the walls, which seemed to look a little like those words that could be found on the walls of Yucang City.

“Could this be the underground city?” Rui Yu muttered. “So there really is an underground city under Yucang City.”

When they heard of this, the other three were all stunned. The underground city was actually a legend. It's been rumored that Yucang City was the residence of a huge Deity Sect in the Ancient Era. Disciples in that Sect were proficient in Ancient Secret Techniques, especially research regarding formations. And then, the Sect fell. Right at the final moments before the Sect's fall, the disciples who were fortunate to survive, pooled in their strength to sink a part of the Sect underground, so as to hide from their enemies' pursuit.

However, after so many years had passed, many people had dug several meters into the grounds of Yucang City, yet, not a single person have discovered this city. After such a long time, everyone began to think that the legend was just a lie.

Zi Dan had spoke of this legend to Zhu Yao when they were still in the cell as well. It was understandable, though. How could a city which had been hidden by a Deity Sect that was famed for its secret techniques and formations, be found just by casual digging?

However, the entrance to such an underground city, was actually a picture puzzle. Was it not too easy!?

Zhu Yao gave a face.

“Little brother, are you able to sense the direction of the wood

spiritual energy?” Zi Dan asked.

Zhu Yao closed her eyes. A moment later, she opened them, and shook her head. Little Wood Spirit had waited for too long, and actually went to sleep. It was really too unreliable.

“There’s that black fog here as well.” Xiao Yi’s expression suddenly turned cold, and pointed to the wisps of black fog not far from here.

“Seems like that villainous thief is indeed hiding here.” Zi Dan shook the fats on his body. “Let’s look for them by heading towards the source of that black fog.”

Zhu Yao increased her pace, following after the rest, they went deeper into the fog at high speeds, and the black fog became denser as well. She could even faintly smell an unbearable stench, as though something was decomposing.

The few of them went deeper and deeper, gradually leaving the underground city, and arriving at a pathway.

The road became narrower as they went deeper as well, and a few minutes later, the black fog in front of them was so dense, they could no longer clearly see the direction they were heading.

Yet, that stench became dense to the point where it could pierce their noses. The senses of practitioners were strong in the first place. Zhu Yao could not help but feel nauseous, and hurriedly

sealed a part of her sense of smell, before she could feel a little better.

“Little brother, be careful!” As Zhu Yao was numbly heading forward, suddenly, Zi Dan pulled her, and she retreated two steps back.

After a closer look, in front of them was actually a gigantic and deep crater. The size of the crater was basically more than four to five football fields, and within the depths of the crater, black fog was currently being emitted out endlessly. While at the bottom of the dense fog, was a pool of black water. Like a volcano, the pool was emitting out air bubbles, and there was even big and small flesh of blood floating on the surface of the water. On a closer look, they were actually all decomposed, or half-decomposed corpses of demonic beasts.

Zhu Yao was so shocked, she took a couple more steps back. Fortunately, Zi Dan had pulled her earlier.

Patting on her chest, she calmed down her shock, yet, she incidentally received Rui Yu’s cold smile.

The depths of Zhu Yao’s heart turned cold for a moment. Incidentally, the one who were walking ahead of her earlier was Rui Yu, yet, Zi Dan was the one who pulled her in the end. She clearly knew there was a crater there, yet, she did not remind her. She was doing it on purpose!

This queen did not harbor any good intentions at all!

This must be a place to refine demonic beast puppets.” Zi Dan analyzed, turned, and brought everyone into a small passage. “Chen Zi is not here, so it seems like we can only split up and find him.”

After the four had discussed, they decided to split into two groups, and find their target separately. Xiao Yi and Rui Yu would return to the underground city to take a look, while Zhu Yao and Zi Dan would continue to enter deep into the cave.

Zhu Yao could only follow along this narrow passage and walked over. The passage was still densely filled with black fog, so Zhu Yao could only release her divine sense, and carefully inspected the passage. The strange thing was, this passage was unexpectedly long, even with her Nascent Soul-stage divine sense, she was unable to inspect its depth, and the further they went, the darker it became.

Zhu Yao held up a ball of flames, and after walking in the passage for two hours, yet they were still unable to see the end, she finally realized something was wrong, as she pulled the person in front of her.

“Senior martial brother, don’t you think... we have been walking in circles?”

Zi Dan was startled. “But earlier, in the places we walked past earlier, I intentionally left behind a few strands of spiritual energy. However, I did not sense any similar ripples of spiritual energy.”

Although Zi Dan was fat, he had never been muddle-headed when it came to actual work.

However, Zhu Yao was confused. It had already been the third time she stepped on a slippery stone, and had almost slipped because of it. And every single time, the slipping sensation felt exactly the same. Using her morals as guarantee, she was definite that it was exactly the same stone.

“Senior martial brother, try releasing a little spiritual power again.”

It would not do them any good even if they were to keep on walking. Zi Dan nodded, and released a strand of spiritual energy as per requested. The two of them did not continue to move, and simply stood at the same spot.

A few minutes later, Zi Dan’s eyes were suddenly opened wide, revealing an expression of disbelief. “The spiritual energy disappeared?”

That strand of spiritual energy actually dissipated without a trace. A spiritual energy marker released by an actual Nascent Soul-stage practitioner, actually disappeared so strangely.

As she thought, they had indeed been walking in circles.

Zhu Yao enlarged the ball of flames in her hand, and lighted up

the surroundings even more. The first thing she did, was to kick away the stone under her feet. Then, she carefully inspected this strange passage.

“There’s inscriptions engraved here!” Zi Dan pointed to the stone walls at the right of the passage. Zhu Yao took a closer look, and they were those strange words that could be found on the city walls again. She completely could not understand them at all.

Zhu Yao reached out her hand as thought of rubbing off a bit of the dust, to get a clearer look. The inscriptions suddenly released a ray of light, and she suddenly felt numbness in her hand, as though she was electrocuted, while the ball of flames on her other hand which was used to light up the surroundings, instantly extinguished as well.

“This wall can absorb spiritual energy!” Zhu Yao immediately retracted her hand.

Zi Dan cast a Clearwind Art, and sent it passing through the entire passage. The gusts of wind which had filled up the entire passage just earlier, were instantly absorbed completely. On the stone walls on both sides, they were actually densely engraved with the same type of inscriptions.

“It seems like, as long as a Mystic Art is cast, and makes contact with the inscriptions, its spiritual power will be absorbed.” Zi Dan pointed to the front. “Let’s go for another walk around, and search for any peculiarities.”

Zhu Yao nodded, it would not be good for them to stay trapped here anyway. They had to find an exit.

As expected, after walking for a while, they discovered a peculiarity. The passageway was made of pieces of rectangular yellow stone materials which were exactly the same. However, on the wall in front of them, was a piece which was shaped in a square, and was even blue-colored. It was especially eye-catching.

Was this not clearly telling people, that this was the exit? Zhu Yao suddenly felt a little worried of the IQ of the person who made this passage in that person's place. That person could not have been color-blind, right?

Zi Dan pressed on that blue stone plate, and circulated his spiritual energy. As expected, it did not get absorbed. The blue stone plate suddenly shook for a few moments, and the surrounding yellow stones suddenly began to move, as though they were given life. They formed a picture of a formation on the entire wall, and emitted out a red light.

“So there's another passage here.” Zi Dan looked at Zhu Yao. “Little brother, you're more familiar with formations. Why don't you take the lead?”

Zhu Yao gave a face. How did he determine that she was familiar with them? But, it was fine if she walked ahead as well, after all, with such a huge blob walking in front of her, he was really blocking her line of sight.

Hence, without rejecting it, she directly entered the formation on the wall.

Behind the formation, was another passage, and it was even the same shape and type as the earlier passage. Zhu Yao instantly felt a little tired in her heart. Why did she have a feeling as though they had entered a dungeon?

Casting out a ball of flames to light up the area, Zhu Yao released her divine sense completely, as she resigned herself to her fate and continued to explore. She was especially attentive in inspecting the differences in the surrounding walls.

However, there were no such square-shaped stone plates anymore. The only change was that the passage became narrower the further they went in. And at the end, even she needed to walk with her head lowered, let alone Zi Dan, whose body shape was developing in the horizontal direction. He was quickly about to squeeze himself into a ball.

After an hour, they finally arrived at the end. There was a wall, and three diagrams were engraved on it. One, was phoenix-shaped, the other was dragon-shaped, while the last was turtle-shaped. The positions of the three diagrams were really scattered, as though they had been casually engraved on the wall.

“Little brother, what mechanism is this?” Zi Dan curiously asked.

“I don’t know either.” It was just three diagrams, so how would she know what game it was?

“Eh, there’s a stone chest here!”

Zhu Yao turned to look, and as expected, there was a rectangular stone chest. Sweeping it through her divine sense, she did not discover any trace of formations.

Opening it to take a look, there were many similar small tiles with engravings on them, and the sizes were exactly the same as the ones on the stone wall. Yet, there was an additional tiger-shaped plate.

The two broken ends in Zhu Yao’s mind, once again connected with a ‘Ting!’ sound.

I challenge you to a game of Gomoku, do you dare to accept?

Chapter 74 – I Accidentally Fooled You

The person who designed this mechanism formation must be a primary school student, right!? Haah!

I dare you to have a game of picture matching next, hey!

“Little brother, do you have a clue?”

Zhu Yao nodded while she felt like crying. She did not want to play a low IQ game like this in the least, you know?

Heaving a long sigh, she resigned to her fate and stuck the plates on the wall.

Actually, calling it Gomoku was not right either, because, it was an even more low IQ single-person game than Gomoku, it was a picture-sticking game. The rules were simple. Nine boxes, four types of pictures. The puzzle would be completed as long as there's no repetition of picture plates horizontally, vertically, or diagonally.

As for the intellect requirement... primary school level!

Zhu Yao spent a mere ten seconds to complete it, and with a tired heart, she looked at the wall which once again shone with a red light.

This time, it was not a teleportation formation. The entire wall separated into small little cube blocks, and then, parted to the two sides, directly revealing the passage behind.

“Let’s hurry up and head over!” Zhu Yao took the lead and entered. After walking for two steps, she realized there was no movements behind her. When she turned her head to take a look, a gigantic meatball, was currently stuck between the walls, and was currently trying his best to squeeze his fats, like toothpaste, towards the side where she was.

Zhu Yao: “.....”

“Hehe, little brother, I’m stuck again.” Zi Dan looked at her apologetically, and struggled to squeeze into the passage.

Such a hard-working fatty. Zhu Yao approached forward and wanted to pull him out, only to realize that he basically could not move at all.

“Why don’t you use the Instant Movement Art to enter?” Zhu Yao suggested.

Zi Dan nodded, and cast an Art single-handedly, a moment later, he shook his head. “Can’t do. This wall can absorb spiritual energy. Since I’m currently stuck in-between, before the Art takes shape, the spiritual power has already dissipated.”

The hell, a passage like this actually has a characteristic that

discriminates races as well. A fatty is human too, alright!?

“Little brother, head in first. I think that the end of this passage should be right in front.” Zi Dan said. “You head in by yourself, and see if the Sovereign is there. If she isn’t, it’s still not too late for you to come back and help me then.”

Zhu Yao hesitated for a moment, and accepted his suggestion. Although he was trapped here without any power to resist, this passage could absorb spiritual power, which would prevent Mystic Arts with high offensive power to be activated. Zi Dan was an Nascent Soul Paragon practitioner, so regular attacks would not be able to harm him either.

By herself, Zhu Yao continued to walk towards the end. What Zi Dan said was correct, as the end of the passage was just right in front. Her divine sense had already inspected that there was no other passages in front of her.

In less than the time needed to completely burn an incense stick, she had already arrived at the end of the passage.

This was another spacious room. It was so clean, forget about the furnishings, there was not even a single speck of dust anywhere. Zhu Yao was a little disappointed. After getting tossed around for half a day, there was not even a single thing here. She suddenly had a feeling as though she had been fooled.

Heaving a long sigh, just when she was about to turn back and save the fatty who was stuck in-between the walls, the ground

began to make crackling sounds, tearing open a hole that was a few meters long.

Zhu Yao reflexively hurriedly flew up using her sword, before she could even heave a sigh of relief, suddenly, a huge suction force caught her, and in the end, she was still sucked into the hole.

The hell, it should not have been like this.

Zhu Yao fell. A moment later, with a ‘pachi’ sound, she sprawled on her back. My waist, ow!

“You don’t have to bother, this Sovereign will definitely not accept you.” A clear and cool lotus-like voice sounded in her ears.

“Feng Yi!” Oh my mother, I finally found this mountain-top flower.

The woman who was currently meditating, opened her eyes, a hint of astonishment flashed past her cool face. “You?”

“It took me forever to find you.” Zhu Yao rubbed her painful waist. “I’m Soi Sauz, the Sect Master told me to inform you to head home for dinner! Ah, pui. He told me to save you.” She was used to saying it.

“You’re the new Elder of Beast-Taming Mountain?” Feng Yi asked.

Zhu Yao nodded. Hurry and give your thanks.

“You’re here to only waste your efforts.” Feng Yi clearly was not on track, forget about giving her thanks, she did not even cast her gaze at Zhu Yao. She really hated this master and disciple duo, what to do?

“Since I was able to find you, how could my efforts be wasted?” Speak clearly, hey. If I had known you did not want people to save you, I definitely wouldn’t have come.

“I say, umm, you... Sovereign, let us pack our stuffs, and leave as fast as possible!” The fatty was still stuck over there, you know.

Feng Yi frowned, as though she was a little unhappy with Zhu Yao’s casual tone. “Do you think that it’s that easy to leave and enter this place casually?” She cast a cold glare at Zhu Yao. “This place is filled with mechanism formations. If you’re not good at them, it’s hard to maneuver in this place.”

Mechanism formations? Is she talking about those picture-matching and picture puzzle games? You should not underestimate my IQ, after all, I did graduate from university.

“Not to mention those inscriptions all around which could absorb spiritual power. You’re basically unable to attack. Also...” Feng Yi pridefully swept her eyes at Zhu Yao, and then looked at the position behind her. “Even that ancient formation on that door is intricate and complicated, it’s impossible to bypass it.”

Zhu Yao turned and looked at that so-called ancient formation, the corner of her lips began to twitch.

Feng Yi once again closed her eyes, as though she was ridiculing Zhu Yao's overconfidence. "Every single time Chen Yi comes over, that formation will always change. I have used the Five Ways Disable Art, yet, up til now, I still have yet to see through the essence of this formation. Unless you know of the Secret Arts of the Ancients, there's basically no way of getting out."

Zhu Yao heaved a sigh. "I do know of it, though!"

"What?" Feng Yi opened her eyes forcefully.

Zhu Yao gave a face as she stared at that door, she suddenly had the impulse to scratch the door.

Who couldn't solve magic squares? A formation centered around additions and subtractions of the numbers inside the grid? I will spit soda water on your face, I tell you!

"Are you serious? You're able to solve this ancient formation?" The mountain-top flower was finally willing to look straight in her eye, however, her expression still carried a little suspicion.

Zhu Yao did not ever bother about her. She walked to the elementary-grade magic square, and began to derive the answer.

The magic square could be considered as a comparatively easy Mathematics game. Inside the 3 by 3 grid, one could put up the numbers 1 to 9. As long as, horizontally, vertically, and diagonally, the three numbers add up to 15, it's considered completed. Usually, the puzzle would have about three numbers in the grids beforehand to serve as hints. As a game designer, she would often design such mini-games inside the games she program, so as to serve as barriers.

So, a mere magic square in front of her, was completely no pressure at all. Seemingly, with just a glance, she was able to know the answer.

Zhu Yao circulated her spiritual energy, and wrote the missing numbers on the grid.

Feng Yi walked over as well. Seeing his serious look, there was really a part of her which believed that Zhu Yao indeed know how to open this door.

Zhu Yao wrote the final number, yet, the door did not have any reaction at

Hence, she could only try pushing the door, yet, the door did not have the slightest hint of budging.

Ah, she embarrassed herself.

“That's strange, the answer isn't wrong, though?” Zhu Yao was

unsure as well now.

Feng Yi sighed, and shook her head. Her expression began to become even more indifferent, clearly, she was feeling regretful for actually believing in him. Turning her body, she decided to meditate again.

Zhu Yao stared attentively at the words again, and finally discovered what was wrong.

“Why are these numbers written so strangely?” Zhu Yao touched the number, and murmured. The numbers she wrote were in a completely different style compared to the three numbers that were initially there. Could it be that the magic square could even recognize a person’s handwriting? It was that high-tech?

“That’s runes.” Feng Yu coldly said. “In every construction of talismans and formations, all of them require the usage of mystic power-imbued runes.” He did not even know about runes, and actually dared to say he knew how to break this ancient formation?

Zhu Yao’s eyes flashed. In other words, it did not recognize handwriting, rather, it’s the font. Say that earlier! Then I will change the font...

Wait a minute, she seemed to have never learnt how to construct talismans.

“Uh... Sovereign, I wonder if I can request you to change all the

numbers I wrote into runes?”

Feng Yi frowned. She really wished to ignore this pretentious junior. If not for the fact that he came here to save her, and that there was no way out of here, she would have already thrown this irrational person out of here.

Feng Yi waved out her hand, a cool wind swept past. The Chinese numbers that Zhu Yao wrote earlier slowly twisted and changed in shape. Although they were still the initial numbers, they had an additional bit of elegance.

Almost at the same time the final number changed in shape, the entire door creaked. The four sides of the door emitted out a white light, and then, the door rumbled as it parted to the two sides.

Zhu Yao was speechless in her heart. As expected, it was a magic square that she could do even with her eyes closed!

“.....” Feng Yi strangely looked at that youth who was in a daze.

Zhu Yao was already used to this sort of shock. Actually, it was not that these mechanisms were hard, nor was it that they did not know how to solve these mechanisms, rather, they were simply used to thinking of the aspect of how the formations and techniques work, and over-complicated the simplest of things.

“Let’s go!” Zhu Yao waved to the back. “It’s best that we hurry and leave, otherwise, we will be in trouble if we’re discovered.”

Feng Yi gently rose, and she looked at him with a complicated expression, yet, she still followed after Zhu Yao. Probably, he was just lucky for a moment. There were too many ancient formations in this underground city, how could a single person solve all of them?

However, in the next few moments, this youth in front of her whom Feng Yi had underestimated, had actually overturned her understanding. As each mechanism opened up one after another, the road which was initially filled with heavily complicated and hard mechanisms, were actually unable to stop them from moving past. Her thoughts had also begun to change from her initial contempt, to shock, and even more shock.

“You... how did you know of these removal methods?” Could it be that he was the descendant of that Ancient Sect which disappeared?

“You want to learn as well?” Zhu Yao turned to look at her, and casually replied. “Don’t worry, I can teach you!”

“.....” She was a dignified Demigod-stage practitioner, why would she covet...

“Don’t worry. This is actually really simple.” A childish game like magic squares, she could solve them even with her eyes closed. “But that will have to wait till we get out of here. We have to first return to save that fatty.” Zhu Yao added.

“.....” So he really wanted to teach her! Feng Yi’s expression instantly changed again, and that mountain-top flower earlier could no longer be found.

Zhu Yao solved four to five magic squares along the way. Even she had begun to suspect, if there were other otherworlders who had crossed over. Otherwise, why would such familiar barriers be designed?

They finally returned to that spacious room earlier. Probably because of solving the mechanism earlier, the ground which was initially teared open, returned to its former look. Not even a trace of the former huge hole could be seen.

So as to prevent the tragedy earlier from happening again, Zhu Yao leaned against the surrounding walls this time, like a crab, she side-stepped towards the passage at the other side. Feng Yi who was following behind her, was unclear of the situation, she thought that this was another sort of mechanism, and silently began to follow her exact side-stepping movements.

Zhu Yao who accidentally fooled this goddess: “.....”

Chapter 75: Optic Fiber-Like Cultivation

To tell the truth, when Zhu Yao saw this mountain-top flower leaning against the wall in a crab posture, this scene... was unexpectedly refreshing.

“Ahem... The fatty is right in front.” Zhu Yao faked a few coughs, struggling to hold in the wild laughter that was about to be exposed. Acting as though she was anxiously sprinting towards the fatty, when she saw that Zi Dan who was still stuck between the walls, she finally could not restrain her wild laughter any longer.

“Hahahahaha...” It seemed like, for the rest of her life, as long as she were to encounter Feng Yi, she would think of her as the crab goddess.

Feng Yi, who was behind, was startled. Looking at Zi Dan in front who could not even budge, as though she had found the reason why he had lost his composure, on her cool-looking face, the corner of her lips could not help but curve up as well.

“Little brother, stop laughing at me already.” Zi Dan who was still stuck between the walls, had similarly thought that he was the main cast as well, a few hints of embarrassment surfaced on his face. “I have already been stuck here for nearly two hours, hurry and push your big brother out of here.”

This was really a beautiful misunderstanding.

“Wait... Wait a moment! Hahahahaha...” What to do? She simply

could not stop laughing.

Feng Yi shook her head, directly raising her hand which was filled with spiritual energy, she pushed her palm out, instantly pushing the unbudging Zi Dan, who was stuck between the walls, out. He did two consecutive rolls, before he finally stopped.

Fatty Zi Dan crawled up unharmed, patted off the dirt on his body, and then, clasped his hands and bowed. “Thank you, senior-martial aunt.”

“Mn.” Feng Yi nodded as a response.

Zhu Yao finally had laughed enough as well. “Let us go then.” She wondered how Xiao Yi was doing on his side. Zhu Yao’s team did not encounter Chen Yi, however, it did not mean that they had the same luck as well.

“Wait a minute!” Feng Yi, however, suddenly frowned, a hateful intention flashed past her face. “Someone’s currently coming over, it’s Chen Yi.”

“It’s good that he’s coming!” Zi Dan snorted coldly, and he was afraid he was unable to find Chen Yi. He sure picked the right time to come.

“Senior-martial brother!” Zhu Yao pulled him. “This is still his territory, it’s best that we don’t have a direct confrontation with him. Quite a huge amount of your spiritual energy had been

absorbed by that stone wall earlier, currently, it's not definite that you're his match either. Also, the Sovereign is injured as well."

Zi Dan turned to look at Feng Yi, and nodded. Their mission was to save Sovereign Feng Yi, and this place was not suitable to heal Feng Yi either.

"There's another passage nearby." Feng Yi spoke out, a little hesitantly. "However the ancient formations over there, are even more complicated and difficult to solve..."

"Sovereign, be at ease. Little brother Soi is proficient in these sorts of mechanism formations, there's absolutely no problems at all." Before Zhu Yao could even speak up, Zi Dan had already patted on his own chest, causing his fats to tremble.

Hey, hey, hey. Don't promise people so easily. If the ancient formations aren't magic squares, I'm going to fight it out with you, I tell you.

Feng Yi nodded. She turned to look at the wall which fatty was stuck in earlier. Pressing onto the tile which had a different color from the rest, a teleportation formation instantly appeared on the wall. So the teleportation formation was actually hiding there, it was no wonder she did not see it. As expected of a Demigod, Feng Yi's divine sense was formidable, she could even sense a passage hiding behind a formation.

Not long after the three people enter the teleportation formation, they could hear an abnormal rumble, then, it was the sounds of

large amount of demonic beasts running, the movements were very large.

It seemed like Chen Yi had discovered that Feng Yi had escaped, hence, he released demonic beast puppets to chase and search for her.

After the three people had discussed, they decided to first meet up with Xiao Yi, and leave the underground city before making any other decisions.

Feng Yi was right. This passage did indeed have more mechanisms than the earlier passages, basically, after every half the time it takes to burn a joss-stick, they would encounter one, and, they were no longer the low-grade picture-puzzles and Gomoku. Rather, they were picture-matching and puzzle bobble, ah pui! No, there were even more three by three grids, and even five by five, and seven by seven grids had appeared. The difficulty level had increased by a little, and they were no longer the simplest magic squares.

However, to Zhu Yao who was a Science graduate, it was only the difference of spending two to three minutes more, she completely did not have to waste too much effort. If the magic squares were not a type of Mathematics game that originated from the Ancient Era, she would have really suspected that someone from her hometown had crossed over as well.

However, Zi Dan and Feng Yi was actually even more shocked, when they stared tightly at her face, it seemed as though all they could see was a blur. Forget about Feng Yi, even she did not know

when Zi Dan had ever learnt how to talk so much, as various exaggerated praises smashed freely onto her body.

Zhu Yao suppressed the corner of her lips which had constantly wanted to rise up. Mn... Praise her once more, and she would definitely feel embarrassed, just one more...

Wait a minute, what's there to be happy about solving primary school mathematical questions!

Zhu Yao instantly felt conflicted.

“In front of us should be where the center of the underground city lies.” Feng Yi pointed to the last five by five grid, her tone, compared to before, was much warmer, and the eyes she looked at Zhu Yao with contained an additional hint of admiration, however, her pride still remained.

Zhu Yao spent three minutes to solve the last five by five magic square, the sealed wall opened to the two sides, and as expected, it was the buried city they saw when they first entered the place. As long as they were able to find that picture puzzle formation, they would be able to return to Yucang City.

Just when the three of them planned on leaving the passage, they suddenly heard a familiar voice. “After I find my master, and settle everything here, I will bring you out of this Yucang City, and head to an otherworldly realm.”

“You’re really willing to bring me out of here?” A bewitching voice asked.

At the exit of the passage, two figures, one white, and one red, appeared.

In Zhu Yao’s mind, the background music ‘dun, dun, dun’ sounded, and she suddenly felt as though a huge drama was about to be broadcasted again.

Zhu Yao silently glanced towards Feng Yi beside her, and as expected, currently, her face had paled a little.

“Ahem... junior-martial brother Xiao!” Zhu Yao took the initiative to greet him. In an enemy camp, it’s best to prevent internal conflicts, she, after all, had a life of a cannon fodder.

Unfortunately, the target did not even give her any face, and completely ignored her, rather, he took the initiative to hug the red-clothed woman in front of him, and continued to express his affectionate thoughts. “Of course I’m willing. In this life, how could I ever let you go?”

When she heard this, Rui Yu’s face reddened, and she shyly lowered her head.

“Hey, hey, hey, Xiao Yi! Xiao Yi.” Zhu Yao waved her hands. Please, even if he wished to act out the drama, he had to look at the situation first as well. Feng Yi was present, you know!

However, Xiao Yi still did not have any reaction, as he hugged Rui Yu even more tightly, and the scene... began to move in that direction.

☐~

“He can’t hear you!” Zi Dan angrily shook his fat cheeks, and pointed to the passage’s exit at the very front. “There’s still another formation here that has yet to be dispelled. It probably has a presence-concealment function, hence, although we’re able to see them, they’re unable to see us.”

Zhu Yao took a closer look. As he had said, a few nearly transparent numbers were floating in the air, it was another magic square. Just when she was about to solve it, she took another closer look...

Momma’s egg, this magic square is a little too big, don’t you think? The grids even go up to the walls up above. Zhu Yao rubbed off her cold sweat. She would have to take at least half an hour to solve this.

Zhu Yao silently lighted up a candle for Xiao Yi.

And the huge show outside was still in progress, and it was even a porno.

In the beginning, Xiao Yi simply hugged Rui Yu. The more he

hugged, the lower they went. And slowly, he headed to the part of the body which could no longer be described.

The entire scene instantly became extremely hot and erotic.

Panting sounds, one after another, freely spread over to them as well.

The faces of the two other people in the cave, instantly turned as dark as the bottom of a pot.

“Hmph! Shameless!” Zi Dan could no longer bear it, and scolded out.

Feng Yi did not retort, she simply shifted her line of sight away as well, her expression was unclear.

“Umm...” Seeing that Feng Yi’s face was a little ugly, Zhu Yao could not help but try to persuade her. “Actually, Xiao Yi is rather worried about you as well. Initially, Sect Master arranged for senior-martial brother Zi Dan and I to save you, he was the one who strongly requested to participate, and thus, he came together with us as well.” Since they were both women, the only thing she could do was do her best to comfort her.

As expected of a mountain-top flower, Feng Yi was actually able to control her explosive emotions, and simply frowned even deeper.

“Xiao-lang, aren't we going to find your master?” Rui Yu used her legs to wrap about Xiao Yi's waist, and moaned as she asked.

Xiao Yi was currently excited, and casually replied. “No rush.”

Feng Yi's face once again darkened.

“Uh...” He should not tear apart her words like this. Zhu Yao gave a face. “Hoho, actually, he's very concerned for your safety.”

“Xiao-lang, your master and I, who is more important to you?” Rui Yu once again asked.

“Naturally, it's you!”

“.....” Alright, she tried her best. “Ahem, it doesn't matter. In any case, your life is yours. No matter if someone else cares or not, in actual fact, it doesn't really matter too much to you, right?”

Zhu Yao gave a few more words of persuasion, and no longer stepped in, as she began to seriously solve the magic square.

As she tried to solve it, she could hear the constant sounds of ecstasy, and was drunk in them as well.

In the entire process, Feng Yi did not say single word. She tried her best to maintain her image as a mountain-top flower, however, the hands next to her body which became even tighter, had

exposed her inner thoughts. Zhu Yao had long known that the relationship between these two master and disciple was not normal. Although it had yet to reach the surface, there was definitely quite a bit of love. In this sort of scene whereby she was currently personally witnessing a man's betrayal, not being able to stay relaxed about it was normal.

Feng Yi calmed down the fury in her chest. Although she had known that her own disciple always liked to play around with girls, most men were like this. However, that woman's body was filled demonic aura, she was actually a heretic practitioner. Why would her disciple entangle himself with her?

In the past, she had never minded about his private affairs, however, she did not expect that he would be this unabashed to this extent. In an instant, layers of surging fury filled her heart. In the beginning, her heart which was usually calm began to stir. Only when that person beside her who was proficient in mechanism formations, called out to persuade her, she finally managed to calm down.

Lowering her head, she looked at the person who was currently squatting down, writing and drawing to dispel the formation. What he said was correct. Her life was her own, why did she have to be concerned if others cared or worried about her? Closing her eyes, the waves that rose in her heart earlier finally subsided, and her heart had even become calmer than before.

Zhu Yao who was focused on attacking the magic square, with just her casual words, she was actually able to extinguish the wishful thoughts towards Xiao Yi that Feng Yi had hardly managed

to give birth to, and had even given rise to a barrier. Such wishful thoughts would no longer appear once again.

The magic square was about to be solved, and the free show outside had already finished as well. The two people had already worn their matching robes neatly, and was currently sitting on the ground.

Zhu Yao wondered if it was just her imagination. She kept feeling that the spiritual energy between them was a little rich, especially Xiao Yi's face, which had become even more radiant.

No, wait! When did Xiao Yi's cultivation reach the third level of Nascent Soul?

Two days ago, he was at the first level, like her. In just two short days, he actually consecutively rose two levels. His cultivation must have been transferred using optic fibers, right?

Chapter 76: Crowd Of Completely Unaware Onlookers

Zhu Yao suddenly recalled the former Mystic Arts Rui Yu used, could it be that he had used the Practitioner-Pair Arts? Rui Yu was a Demigod, and was at an entire Realm higher than Xiao Yi, it was not impossible for the Practitioner-Pair Arts to cause Xiao Yi to rise in two levels consecutively.

It was no wonder why he wanted to seize every opportunity to have *** with Rui Yu, to the point where he could even throw aside the mission to find his master. It seemed like he was not simply being controlled by his own bestial tendencies. Then, were his feelings for Rui Yu real, or fake?

Zhu Yao could not derive an answer, and she momentarily felt a slight headache. She was really not good with things like reading one's heart and motives, rather than thinking about these, she would rather solve magic squares.

Just as she had Zi Dan change the final digit to a rune, a loud sound suddenly came from outside, a sixth-ranked demonic beast popped out of nowhere and pounced towards Xiao Yi and Rui Yu.

A mere sixth-ranked beast was naturally unable to harm them, in a flash, the two of them had retreated three feet away. Rui Yu unleashed a wind blade, and that demonic beast was sliced into two.

“Chen Zi, you're finally willing to show yourself!” Rui Yu

laughed coldly, as she looked towards the mass of black miasma up in the air.

A skinny, bony-figured man appeared from the black miasma, on his dried-up facial skin, there were multiple faint black scars as well. He was actually Chen Zi.

Zhu Yao recalled the moment at Ancient Hill Sect when he was conducting his abduction. Clearly, back then, he was not like this. In a span of just a few days, just how did he become like this?

“What about Feng Yi? Where’s Feng Yi? Where did you people hide her?” Chen Zi’s pair of eyes popped out, his face was crazed, as he kept interrogating them.

Rui Yu looked at his current state, a ruthless intent flashed in her eyes. “I had long told you before. That’s an incomplete set of Mystic Arts from the Ancient Devil Race, which corrodes the user’s body. How is a human practitioner able to practice it? Yet, so as to obtain that woman, you forced yourself to continue practicing it, and even acted against me! You deserve your current looks, which can neither be described to be that of a human’s or a devil’s.”

“Shut up! Shut up!” Chen Zi became even more crazed, black miasma once again gathered in his hands, and instantly, another four demonic beasts were formed, as they attacked towards them.

With Rui Yu and Xiao Yi taking two each, they once again dealt with the attacks easily.

“Since you don’t like to hear these words, I shall continue saying them!” Rui Yu laughed coldly, ridiculing him without restraints. “Look at what you have currently become? Forget about Feng Yi, a mighty Sovereign of the cultivation world, even regular people will feel disgusted when they look at you.”

“No, that won’t happen. Feng Yi will love me, she will!” Chen Zi had already turned completely insane. Grabbing onto his loose facial skin, suddenly, as though he had thought of something, he pulled out something from the side of his body, and muttered to himself. “I have this. It will definitely heal me, as long as I gather enough people, I will be able to create a body that will never ever corrode.”

“Water Spirit!” Xiao Yi’s eyes brightened, he could not help but let out an exclamation, and a hint of ecstasy flashed past his face.

Zhu Yao was able to discern it as well, because the moment he pulled out the Water Spirit, the Wood Spirit in her divine sense, woke up with a “Chick~”.

“Hurry and tell me where she is. If neither of you tell me her location, I will kill both of you!” Chen Zi’s expression changed, circulating the black miasma around his body, it attacked towards them. Xiao Yi and Rui Yu dodged in the nick of time, when the ground made contact with the black miasma, in an instant, a large crater was corroded out, engulfing half of the underground city, black bubbles were even being emitted out from the crater.

Zhu Yao was shocked as well. Earlier, she basically did not see him circulating any spiritual energy. Just what was that?

Xiao Yi and Rui Yu had no choice but to fly up, and Chen Zi once again attacked them. Although he was merely a Nascent Soul Paragon, and his cultivation was far from being able to compare to that of Rui Yu's, unknown if it was due to the overly strange Mystic Arts he was practicing in, Rui Yu was unable to hold a good advantage over him, especially that dense black miasma, which neither of them dared to approach.

However, a Realm's suppression was absolute. As time passed, Chen Zi revealed a state of fatigue, his breath had begun to turn ragged as well. Waving his hand, he once again formed out dozens of demonic beasts to restrain the two's advances. Retreating a short distance, he took out the Water Spirit, and circulated his spiritual energy, as he planned to recover the spiritual power he lost.

Rui Yu saw through his intentions, with a cold expression, suddenly, she summoned countless of icicles, and sent them over. A large portion of them were blocked by the demonic beasts, yet, there was an extremely small ice blade which had bypassed them, which had coincidentally struck onto the Water Spirit in Chen Zi's hands, and instantly, it froze the Water Spirit.

A hint of a smile spilled from Rui Yu's lips, retracting her hand, the Water Spirit instantly flew over towards her.

"Return me my Water Spirit!" Chen Zi was in explosive rage, summoning his black miasma, he struck it directly towards the Water Spirit. The ice instantly melted, yet, the black miasma did not disperse from there, as it flew directly towards Rui Yu, and she

had no choice but to retreat to dodge it.

The Water Spirit fell from midair.

Coincidentally, Zhu Yao had just solved the final magic square. The passage was too narrow, she was really worried that a mass of Chen Zi's black miasma would have been thrown towards them, their group would have been exterminated. The most important thing is, little Water Spirit, here I come.

Just when she was planning to head out, a figure suddenly flashed past from her side, and the Water Spirit which fell down, was caught by Feng Yi.

Zhu Yao: "....."

"Master!" Xiao Yi joyfully took a few steps closer.

"Feng Yi... Feng Yi, you're back." Chen Zi was even more exhilarated, to the point where his drooping facial skin began to shake, as he infatuatedly looked at Feng Yi who was in the air.

Feng Yi frowned tightly, she did not care about Xiao Yi, and simply looked coldly at the other person below who could no longer be reasoned with. In the next moment, the might of a Demigod was boundlessly released.

Zhu Yao had just only left the passage, and then, she was pressed down the ground with a 'pachi' sound.

The hell! Even if you're exacting your revenge, don't attack indiscriminately!

Even Chen Zi was forced to kneel on the ground due to the mighty pressure, yet, as though he did not feel anything at all, he still looked at Feng Yi infatuatedly with his head raised. As he chanted out her name, he struggled to stand up, wanting to approach her.

The killing intent on Feng Yi's face became even stronger, as she said, with emphasis on every single word. "You. Deserve. To. Die!"

"Feng Yi..." Yet, Chen Zi still looked at her, as though he had not heard her words, and he even revealed an extremely estranged smile.

Feng Yi instantly summoned her willed sword, a crimson sword of light, with a swing of her hand, it ruthlessly flew straight towards Chen Zi.

Chen Zi, however, did not retaliate, and he did not even dodge, simply allowing the sword to penetrate his chest. His estranged smile still hung on his face, and smile even began deeper. "This is fine as well. We can finally be together now, hahaha..."

Flames strangely emitted out from his body, yet they were black flames, and his estranged laughter resounded everywhere in the air.

At that instant, Zhu Yao had a bad premonition.

The instant when Chen Zi was burnt to ashes from the black flames, the Water Spirit in Feng Yi's hands, suddenly flashed with a black light. A gigantic black hole appeared behind her, and at the moment when everyone was unable to react to the sudden event, she was sucked into it.

“Master!” Xiao Yi was greatly shocked, the hand he stretched out, however, caught empty air.

The hell, my Water Spirit!

“No!” Zhu Yao flew up, and with a pounce, she coincidentally grabbed onto Feng Yi's hand... where the Water Spirit was.

And then. They fell into it together!

Feng Yi's eyes were greatly widened, as she looked at him, unable to believe what she just saw.

Just when she was about to say something, a big bulk of fats suddenly smashed her back, causing her to almost puke out blood.

The hell, fatty, what are you doing?

The moment they entered the black hole, a colossal might

suddenly pressed towards them, and the three of them lost consciousness.

In the recent few days, Yu Yan's mood was a little bad. That stupid disciple of his, so as to find the Water Spirit, had decided to hide her identity to seek an opportunity. Although he could not relax, at the very least, she was still in his own Sect, so he was still able to look after her, hence, he allowed her to do what she wanted.

However, in the starting few days, every day, his disciple had always found opportunities to report her situation to him, yet, suddenly, no reports had come in the recent days. For four consecutive days, he did not even see the shadow of his stupid disciple's figure. This master was really angry, and the consequences were going to be very severe.

After a careful consideration, he decided that to still have a celestial crane call for her. In the end, after the celestial crane quacked and circled around the Ancient Hill Sect, it flew back, and his disciple still did not appear.

Yu Yan's brows furrowed deeper, and finally could not help but release his divine sense. At that moment, Ancient Hill Sect's entire scene entered his eyes, yet, he was still unable to discover his disciple's presence.

She was not in her house, not in Beast-Taming Mountain, nor was she in Ancient Hill Sect.

Yu Yan felt his heart skip a beat. It seemed like... he had once again lost his disciple.

As for Zhu Yao who had just woken up, she saw a complete grey view in front of her, and could not help but pound her chest and stamp her feet.

She knew. She just knew that nothing good would ever happen when she followed that Xiao Yi. With his passive “All Partymates Will Die” buff, the life she was living was definitely that of a cannon fodder’s.

So, was this time for Zhu Yao 4.0 to appear?

“You’re awake?” A gentle female voice sounded from beside her, and her tone carried a hint of hesitation.

Zhu Yao turned to look, and it was actually Feng Yi. It can’t be, party resurrection?

No wait, Zhu Yao looked at her surroundings, and incidentally saw a big lump of meatball pressing strongly on her leg.

Fatty!

In that case, she did not die? In hindsight, Zhu Yao thought of this possibility. She was actually still alive, and both sorrow and joy intersected in that instant. She did not even know how she should react, it was too overly touching.

“You... Why did you follow after me and jump into this place?” Feng Yi suddenly asked this question strangely as she looked straightly at Zhu Yao, as though the answer to this question of hers was very important to her.

“Ah?” Zhu Yao turned her head back to face her.

Feng Yi’s expression changed, as she continued to ask. “Both of us are not even related to each other, nor do we even have any form of friendship. Just why did you...”

“If I don’t save you, could it be that I have to watch you die instead?” Zhu Yao rolled her eyes at her. Was there a need to ask a question like this? Obviously, her main goal was still the Water Spirit, saving her was just something she would do in passing.

Feng Yi was speechless from his words. Her expression changed, and just when she was about to continue with her questions, Zi Dan suddenly woke up, the big-sized layers of fats momentarily shook a few times, and a head rose.

“Little brother?” Zi Dan was startled. “Are you alright?”

The corner of Zhu Yao’s lips twitched. “If you were to move away from my leg, I will be fine.”

Her leg was about to be crushed, you know!

Only then did Zi Dan realize that he had incidentally fell on her small leg. Smiling embarrassingly, he crawled up.

“Little brother, do you know where we are?” Zi Dan was a little dumbfounded as he looked at the grey surroundings in front of him.

Zhu Yao rubbed her numbed leg, shaking her head. “That Chen Zi must have done something to the Water Spirit, thus, we were transported here. No matter how much I think about it, this place isn’t anywhere good at all.”

This place was completely barren, between the heaven and earth, it was completely grey. There was not even a single presence of life, that was why she misunderstood and thought that she had died another time, and had returned to the moment with the resurrection loading bar.

“There’s no spiritual energy in this place.” Feng Yi spoke up.

“What!?” Zi Dan was startled, his eyes were suddenly widened up. “How is that possible? How is it possible for a place without spiritual energy to exist in this world? There are only differences in the strength of spiritual energy, unless we have... Could it be!?”

Zi Dan’s eyes were widened even more, his face showed utter disbelief.

Feng Yi, however, nodded. His face instantly turned ashen.

“Can you guys explain? Just what is this place?” There’s still a crowd of onlookers here who are completely unaware, hey.

Chapter 77: Don't Worry, Leave It To Me

“Little brother... Haah!” Zi Dan sighed heavily. “This place is the Desolate Ground.”

Desolate? What?

“The Desolate Ground was the battlefield of the Ancient Gods and Devils.” Zi Dan explained. “Ever since the Ancient Era, this place had been sealed. This place is devoid of spiritual energy and it's barren, a dead land. According to legends, no man or beast is able to survive here. In the Ancient times, Yucang City was initially connected to this place, however, after this world was sealed, no one had ever discovered the entrance.”

“In other words, we can't get out?” Zhu Yao was dumbfounded. Then, she might as well die right there and then.

“Mn.” Zi Dan nodded confidently.

Zhu Yao suddenly had a little yearning for version 4.0.

Ever since the Desolate Ground was brought up, Feng Yi no longer spoke, rather, she began to meditate at the side, recovering her former mountain-top flower look.

Zhu Yao sighed lightly. That Chen Zi had long become crazy, as he had been wishing for Feng Yi all this while. Just when he finally managed to obtain her after putting his everything into it, in the

end, not even a few days later, she ran away again. It was no wonder that, even when he had to die, he still wanted to give her another blow, and thus sent Feng Yi to this place which had no exits. He must have been holding onto the thought of dying together with her, however, he never would have expected that two cannon fodders would be added into the mix.

Cannon Fodder No. 1 nudged Cannon Fodder No. 2. “Senior brother, since that Chen Zi can send us in here, then there must definitely be a way to get out, right?” She remembered she was sucked in here by a black hole, and the shape of the black hole, looked a little like a formation.

“Originally, there’s one.” Zi Dan sighed. “Sovereign Feng Yi is a Demigod practitioner, if she were to use all her strength, she can tear through space, and return to the cultivation world. However, currently, senior-martial aunt Feng is heavily injured and has not fully recovered, there’s no spiritual energy in this world either, so it’s impossible to heal senior-martial aunt’s injuries.”

“In other words, as long as we’re able to heal her injuries, we can return?” Zhu Yao asked.

“Little brother, could it be that you have a plan?” Zi Dan was excited.

“Seems like you have forgotten, I’m a Wood Spirit Vein holder as well. If there’s no spiritual energy, I can transfer her my spiritual energy.” Was this not one of the reasons she was sent for this mission?

“You definitely can’t!” Zi Dan said. “With your Nascent Soul cultivation, it’s basically impossible for you to fully heal senior-martial aunt’s injuries. Also, this world is devoid of spiritual energy, you will be in danger as well.”

That serious? Zhu Yao gave a face. She seemed to have emptied her spiritual energy for quite a number of times, however, nothing had ever happened to her.

“Haah, if we had known, we could have healed senior-martial aunt’s injuries at the passage before coming out.” Zi Dan sighed. Unfortunately, who would have known? “That Chen Zi is really vicious though, even in his death, he wanted to pull senior-martial aunt to follow him in his grave as well.”

Zhu Yao glanced at Feng Yi who was currently acting as though she was meditating. Suddenly, a bright idea flashed in her mind.

“Senior-martial brother, can we use the Water Spirit to heal her injuries?” Zhu Yao suggested.

Zi Dan slapped his head. “Oh right, how can I forget about that?”

Water spiritual energy was the most serene, it’s the most suitable for healing. With the Water Spirit’s support, this little brother of his might be able to heal senior-martial aunt without using all of his spiritual energy.

“Let’s not tardy, we will begin now.”

“Little brother, be careful. Just try your best, do not force yourself.”

Zhu Yao nodded, walked over to Feng Yi’s side, and sat cross-legged. “Sovereign, I wonder if I can borrow the Water Spirit to use it for a moment. I shall first help heal your injuries, after that’s done, I will return it to you.”

Feng Yi opened her eyes. She had naturally heard the conversation earlier as well, so, she did not hesitate, and passed the Water Spirit over. Then, she closed her eyes again.

Zhu Yao unreservedly took the Water Spirit from her hands and kept it into her divine sense.

The moment the Water Spirit entered, the Wood Spirit excitedly began to circle around it, making ‘chick chick chick’ sounds as it turned about. However, the Water Spirit did not have any reaction, it was quiet like a blue gem.

She finally managed to pacify the Wood Spirit, after telling it to change her body’s spiritual energy to wood spiritual energy, she then turned it into the water-attribute healing spiritual energy via the Water Spirit. Stretching out her hand, she wanted to pass it into Feng Yi’s body.

However, it was blocked by the mystic robe she was wearing...

Zhu Yao frowned. She subconsciously leaned forward, and with a “huaa” sound, she pulled apart the clothes in front of her chest.

Feng Yi instantly opened her eyes, and completely without any hesitation, a big slap was thrown to her face.

“The hell!” Zhu Yao could not but curse out, and she gave her a slap in retaliation.

“You...” Feng Yi looked at her with a face of disbelief, it was unknown if it was due to the shock from him pulling apart his clothes, or the fact that he had just slapped the number one beauty in this cultivation world in the face. “You actually dare... Do you want to die?”

“You’re wearing so many goddamn clothes, how am I going to heal you? Even though you want to be healed, you’re not even willing.” This lady was not willing to serve her any longer. The fact that she was initially forced to save Feng Yi had caused her to feel displeased enough, and ever since meeting her, she had been giving the ‘It’s your blessings to have you guys save me, why aren’t you kneeling before me yet?’ attitude. No matter who she met, she would offend them. She’s basically asking for a slap in the face.

“Senior-martial aunt, don’t misunderstand.” The moment Zi Dan saw that the situation had turned for the worse, he immediately came out to pacify the crowd. “Your mystic robe is able to block off healing mystical arts, there’s nothing little brother can do about it either.”

Only then did Feng Yi's expression softened. Still holding onto a little anger and a sense of injustice, she glanced at the man in front of her. As though she was suppressing the anger in the depths of her heart with all her might, , only then did she remove a corner of her outer garment, revealing a piece of palm-sized inner garment, as she turned her head away resentfully.

Zhu Yao silently rolled her eyes. It's not like she was Chen Zi, did she think that she bothered looking at her? Whatever you have, I once had them as well, twice!

Mn... Other than the breasts!

Taking a deep breath, she then once again gathered a little water and wood spiritual energy, once again casting out the healing mystic arts. Reaching out her palm, she planted it below Feng Yi's shoulder, and she diligently mended the meridians that were damaged in her body.

Zi Dan had long already turned his body around to avoid arousing suspicion, casting out protection arts at the side.

Only after Zhu Yao had transferred spiritual energy to Feng Yi's body did she find out how deep Chen Zi's obsession for Feng Yi was. His actions were absolutely ruthless, the several important meridians around her body had been completely damaged, her spiritual energy were in a chaotic mess, and it was fortunate that she was able to walk along with them throughout the underground city while enduring this level of injuries.

It was no wonder she was a practitioner that was capable of cultivating to the Demigod-stage, she sure had a very good endurance.

The reason why she forcefully summoned her sword intent to kill Chen Zi while her body was in that state, was probably her pride as a Demigod-stage practitioner as well. Most probably, this captivity was considered to be a huge humiliation to her.

Zhu Yao silently retracted the scornful eyes she had earlier. For that point, Zhu Yao respected her as a man!

She began to diligently mend her meridians.

After spending a total of six hours, only then did Zhu Yao mend a large portion of her meridians. Only the last long meridian had yet to be connected. This meridian was extremely important, the moment one began to mend it, it must not be interrupted, otherwise, the efforts would be wasted.

However, when Zhu Yao had only mended half of it, loud bangs gradually came from afar. In the beginning, they were only faintly hearing mixed noises, at the end, they became louder like booming thunder, as though a huge army was pressing forward and tens of thousands of horses were galloping.

Zi Dan suddenly stood up. "This is... a beast tide! A demonic beast tide!"

The hell, what happened to the promised Desolate Ground, and the fact about humans and beasts not being able to live here?

You're screwing with me!

“Little brother, don't be anxious. It's just a mere crowd of beasts, leave it to me.” Zi Dan patted his chest, giving a ‘you can always rely on me for everything’ expression. “Concentrate on healing Sovereign, I will definitely not allow those demonic beasts approach a single step.”

After saying that, he summoned his sword, and hurriedly moved a few dozens of meters.

Before Zhu Yao could even feel touched, a few seconds later, Zi Dan came running back, shouting as he ran. “Little brother, hurry and flee!”

The hell, what happened to the promised ‘I can always rely on you for everything’?

Zhu Yao was dumbfounded!

“Tenth-ranked, tenth-ranked demonic beasts...” Zi Dan ran as he turned his head back, shouting. “A large crowd of tenth-ranked beasts!”

Tenth-ranked! And it was even a crowd of them.

Zhu Yao made a prompt decision. Grabbing onto Feng Yi beside her, as she constantly transferred spiritual energy, she summoned her flying sword, and fled while riding on her sword.

Zi Dan who was still madly sprinting, slapped his own head. “I forgot I can fly as well!” And began to ride on his sword as well.

However, the crowd of demonic beasts behind, seemed to have locked onto them, roaring as they chased after the three of them. The strength of their momentum, had even brought about a storm of sand and dirt in the sky, as though the entire world was shaking.

Zhu Yao basically did not dare to turn back. Initially, it was already very difficult to ride a flying sword in this world devoid of spiritual energy, however, she just had to bring along another person, and even worse, she was still constantly transferring spiritual energy, slowly, her power was being drained.

The crowd of demonic beasts however, did not give up in their chase. After flying for an entire hour, they still did not shake the demonic beasts away.

“There’s a glen in front.” Zi Dan pointed to the barren cliff in front. “Let’s hide in there.”

“Alright!” Zhu Yao followed after him, however, right before entering, she quietly released Sesame. A mere glen was most

probably unable to block a crowd of tenth-ranked demonic beasts. She simply hoped that Sesame, with the identity as an eleventh-ranked, could scare them.

Zi Dan leaded the way to the very depths of the glen, and hurriedly set a formation that could hide their presences.

The moment Zhu Yao landed, Feng Yi who she had been holding onto, suddenly spat out a mouthful of blood.

This was bad. Zhu Yao hurriedly sat down again, wildly circulating the spiritual energy in her body to wrap about the broken meridian. Zhu Yao was already dog-tired in the first place, currently, undoubtedly, she was losing more of her spiritual energy, her head had long been drenched with sweat.

Feng Yi opened her eyes, unknowingly glanced at him, before closing her eyes again.

Fortunately, she had made it in time, and the spiritual energy did not go rampant, lose control and attack the rest of the mended meridians. Zhu Yao quietly heaved a sigh of relief. Calming her heart down, she began to complete her final job.

After an hour, the glen suddenly quietened down, to the point where those terrifying beast roars could no longer be heard.

“It seems like the crowd of beasts have already left.” Zi Dan heaved a sigh of relief.

Zhu Yao finally completed the healing too. The spiritual energy in her body had been consumed by a large amount as well, and the moment she tilted her body, she laid motionless on the ground and was no longer able to get up.

“Little brother!” Zi Dan hurriedly held him up.

Feng Yi opened her eyes, glanced at Zhu Yao, and then, cast a mystic art for relief. Biting her lower lips, after a while, she then said. “Many thanks.”

“Mn.” Zhu Yao was already tired to the extent that she no longer had the energy to speak.

“Senior-martial aunt, please, hurry and cast the mystic arts used to return to the cultivation world.” Zi Dan anxiously said. “This place is devoid of spiritual energy, I’m afraid little brother isn’t able to hold up for long.”

Feng Yi clenched her fists tightly, turning, she did a set of hand seals. The spiritual energy in her body began to circulate, and a gust of wind began to blow. With a swing of her hand, she forcefully sliced towards the air, only to see a black hole floating five inches away from them.

Feng Yi who had used up all of her spiritual energy was a little unable to withstand it either, as she took two steps back. After that, she walked over to the black hole.

“Let’s go.” Once again she turned her head to glance at Zhu Yao, before entering the black hole.

Naturally, Zi Dan held onto her as they walked over. At the very moment before they entered the black hole, Zhu Yao paused for a moment. Only after seeing a white light flying into the spiritual beast pouch that was by her side, did she then follow after Zi Dan and enter the black hole.

Chapter 78: Hu Hansan Has Returned

The black hole this time, however, did not possess that irresistible pressure like last time. Seemingly, in a blink of an eye, they were standing on a beach, in front of them was a boundless ocean.

The air was filled with spiritual energy, immediately, it allowed Zhu Yao to feel alive again.

She, [Hu Hansan](#), had returned.

Feng Yi who had came out before them, was already meditating on the ground, recovering her spiritual energy.

Zhu Yao, copying her, sat down to recover as well. Zi Dan was casting protection mystic arts at the side.

Fifteen minutes later, the color on everyone's face recovered a little.

Feng Yi stood up, and looked at Zhu Yao. Clenching the fists at the side of her body, it seemed as though she was hesitating about something. Finally, she still walked over, retracting that prideful aura of hers. "Thank you very much... for saving me."

Seeing Feng Yi thanking her so seriously, Zhu Yao became a little embarrassed. "You're welcome, I was on the orders by the Sect Master anyway."

“I still want to thank you.” Feng Yi looked at her straight in the eye. “If... If there’s something I can do for you, I will give it my all as well.”

“Really?” Zhu Yao suddenly thought of something.

Feng Yi nodded.

“Then, give me the Water Spirit.” Although the Water Spirit was still in her divine sense, it was after all, still Feng Yi’s.

Unexpectedly, Feng Yi did not even have the slightest of hesitation, rather, she replied with a slight smile. “If you want it, naturally, I won’t reject your request.”

“Thank you!” Zhu Yao thanked her sincerely. She did not think that taking the Water Spirit this time would be so successful. She had even expected that she had to face a hard battle.

After pondering deeply for a moment, she once again took the Water Spirit from the divine sense. Walking to the ocean in front, she placed the Water Spirit directly into the water.

“Water Spirit, hurry and go. Return to the ocean.”

The moment her words fell, the Water Spirit which was still obediently lying on her hand like a blue gem earlier, suddenly

emitted out a blue light, turning into an actual water droplet, and instantly leapt up. Floating in the air, it seemed as though it was blinking its eyes, looking at her with a puzzled look.

“Chick?” It let out a sound similar to the Wood Spirit.

Zhu Yao laughed. She just knew that it was the same as the Wood Spirit, something that was capable of understanding a person’s words. It was just that this Water Spirit was quieter, and was not as lively as the Wood Spirit.

“Return to the waters. No matter what, do not appear in front of people ever again.”

Human greed could not be changed. Just like the Xiao Yi in her dreams, even though he was just a Metal and Wood Dual-Spirit Veins holder, normally speaking, he would only require two types. Yet, he actually wanted to have all five Spirits in his hands, and even when he ascended, he did not bear to let them go.

Most probably, it would be the same for anyone else, it’s just that, the rest of the people did not have Xiao Yi’s fortunate encounter, hence, Xiao Yi was a BUG. Then, as long as the five Spirits exist, this world would have a BUG that could never be fixed. Only when people could never find the five Spirits, could the root of the problem be resolved.

“Chick~” The Water Spirit was stunned for a moment. Suddenly, as though it had understood something, it bounced twice on the ground. It suddenly flew right towards her, “pachi”, kissed her, and

then, sank into the ocean. Its figure could no longer be seen.

“You... Why?” Feng Yi looked at her with a face of disbelief. She did not expect that the reason why he wanted the Water Spirit from her, was just to release it.

“Little brother, why did you release the Water Spirit?” Zi Dan was dumbfounded as well.

“Hoho, I’m not a Water Spirit Vein Holder, even if I have it, I have no need for it. I might as well release it.” Zhu Yao said without a mind.

“Even if you’re not, that’s still a treasure that’s hard to come by. Not only did you release it, you even told it not to appear before people. You...”

“To prevent others from using it for bad things.” Zhu Yao explained. “How do you think Chen Zi managed to practice such terrifyingly evil mystic arts? And how did he break the Ancient Hill Sect’s Great Mountain Barrier formation from the ocean? Most of all these were due to the Water Spirit.”

“This... That’s true.”

Feng Yi moved her lips, as though she wanted to say something. In the end, she still simply sighed. “You... you’re really an idiot.” After saying that, the smile formed from the corner of her lips deepened.

Zhu Yao suddenly trembled uncomfortably. Shaking her head, she shook off that strange feeling.

“Hahahaha, little brother, you’re really broad-minded!” Zi Dan gave a word of praise, slapping her back out of habit.

She suddenly felt a stir in her chest, and with a splat, she spat out blood on his entire face.

“What happened to you?” Feng Yi was the very first to react, hurriedly grabbing onto her, who was wobbling. Her face was no longer calm, and even the hand she was using to inspect Zhu Yao was trembling a little. “Why aren’t you restoring your spiritual energy?” After an inspection, his body still did not even possess a single strand of spiritual energy. Adding that they were chased by the crowd of demonic beasts earlier, and he had even mended her meridians, he had already suffered a very huge mystic power rebound.

“Heheh, it seems like I’m unable to restore my spiritual energy.”

Feng Yi and Zi Dan was stunned, and they did not know how to help her either. They had never heard of people being unable to restore their spiritual energy after suffering from a mystic power rebound.

For a moment, the two of them were at a loss.

Feng Yi was a little flustered, as she kept transferring her own wood spiritual energy over, yet, they dispersed the moment the spiritual energy entered her body. “What to do? We must hurry and restore your spiritual energy!”

Zhu Yao’s hand was turning purple from being grabbed by her so tightly.

She was a Lightning Spirit Vein Holder, wood spiritual energy was completely useless to her!

It was not that she did not want to restore them, it was just that she did not dare to casually take in spiritual energy into her body. If she was careless, she might bring about another spiritual energy turbulence.

Hence, she could only wait for her spiritual energy to restore by itself. Back then she was just at Foundation-stage, it was still alright, as the amount of spiritual energy in her body then was not huge, and could be recovered after good night sleep. After that, when she was at the Azoth-stage, she had to spend ten days. Now...

It seemed like without a few months, it’s impossible to be restored.

She really missed her master... who had the purple lightning bolts!

As though he had heard her summons, after Zhu Yao spat out her

third mouthful of blood, a familiar figure descended from the sky. He was dressed entirely in white, with a face that was as cold as ice, his two eyes stared right at that person who was currently puking out blood.

“Senior-martial uncle Yu Yan.” Feng Yi was stunned, before she could even react, with a wave of his hand, the youth in her embrace had already flew into his hands. And then, without even saying a single word, he turned and flew off.

Leaving the two people on the ground who was still completely unable to understand the situation.

“Why did ancestral-grand master...” Zi Dan froze, and then, a glint appeared in his eyes, as he made a guess. “Could it be that he has a way to save little brother?”

A hint of joy flashed past Feng Yi’s face as well. If it was that person, then there’s definitely a way.

“Many thanks to ancestral-grand master for lending a hand!” Zi Dan happily charged towards the direction of where the person disappeared to, and shouted.

And currently, a certain master was currently fuming with anger. Looking at his stupid disciple who was still puking out blood while in his embrace, he could not wait to immediately teach a ruthless lesson. The moment he let his eyes off of her, she actually wrecked her own body to such an unbearable state. Was there ever a disciple like this?

“Masteeer...” Zhu Yao felt like she was about to cry. Earlier, no matter how hard or tiring it was, she did not really feel anything, but, the moment she saw him, she suddenly felt very troubled. Hugging his neck, she buried her head in his embrace. “Master... It hurts a lot.”

A certain master turned his head, casting a glance at her, he coldly said. “Bear with it!”

“.....”

Could she still happily fool around?

Recently, Zi Mo was a little troubled. As someone who took up the job of the Ancient Hill Sect’s Sect Master, Zi Mo expressed that it was hard being a parent. He had to intervene in no matter how big or small the miscellaneous stuffs were, when nothing was happening, he had to even mediate between the various Sects, and there were also problems such as member allocation. Let’s just talk about the new elder who had just joined not long ago, if not for his sharp, glowing eyes, which discovered his abnormal relationship, a relationship which could not be known to the world, with his ancestral-grand master, he might have really taken him as just another random elder.

However, this person was not just anyone. Since ancestral-grand master had left this person to him, it meant that ancestral-grand master believed in his abilities. He definitely could not fail his ancestral-grand master’s expectations. Hence, he arranged him to

the Beast-Taming Mountain, which he was specialized in. So that he could gain a larger reputation, he even assigned him the glorious mission of saving the Sovereign.

As expected, they successfully rescued the Sovereign, and the Sovereign had great praises for him as well. Although he suffered a few small injuries, all these could be overlooked. The most important thing was, from this incident, his reputation in the Sect rose greatly, and he had swiftly, and smoothly, integrated into this big group. Praises for him could be heard from everywhere he went. Zi Mo felt that his plan had worked, ancestral-grand master would definitely realize his diligence, and then, appreciate him much more than before. If he was fortunate, ancestral-grand master might even throw him one or two treasures, and just by the thought of this, he could not help but be a little excited!

Zi Mo thought merrily, and just when he was planning to rest, a white figure, appeared soundlessly in front of his bed just like that. An ice-cold face was currently staring coldly at him. Zi Mo shivered, and he almost rolled down his bed.

“An-An- An-An- An... Ancestral-grand master!” His expression was not of Zi Mo’s expectations.

Yu Yan had a little bad temper recently as well, he carelessly took in a disciple who was a bundle of worry, worrying him to death. Not only did he have to take precautions to prevent her from courting death every day, he had to even take precautions to prevent others from sending her to court death.

His disciple loved to head outside in the past, and he could forget

about that, however, this time, he simply placed her in the Sect. It was right by his home, yet, she's actually able to return in a half-dead state as well. He basically could not take any absolute precautions at all, and the culprit was actually Sect Master Zi Mo who had always been very prudent.

Yu Yan felt that this was something he could not tolerate. Zi Mo had a bunch of disciples he could trouble, so why did he have to bring trouble to his one and only disciple? Hence, after treating his disciple's injuries, Yu Yan immediately crashed into Zi Mo's house to condemn him. However, after arriving at his destination, he recalled that this time, his disciple was hiding her identity. Zi Mo was basically not in the know at all, and he had simply treated her as a regular elder. For a moment, he had no reason to condemn him for, yet, his heart was filled with irritation.

Hence, without speaking a single word, while releasing a huge amount of killing intent, he could only stare at him... stare at him... at him... him!

Zi Mo who was having merry thoughts earlier, was drenched in cold sweat by the stare, yet, he still could not understand what he did wrong. As the one who managed an entire Sect, Zi Mo could be considered as someone who was used to a large crowd. However, after being stared at by someone who was pouring out killing intent for an entire hour, he would still be frightened to a certain extent, his legs even began to turn jelly.

Just when he planned to risk his life to ask what his ancestral-grand master was up to, just like how he had appeared, Yu Yan once again disappeared in an instant.

Zi Mo: “...”

Although he did not understand why ancestral-grand master was here for, Zi Mo heaved a deep sigh of relief, and he had a feeling as though his life was saved. Unfortunately, he celebrated too early, because on the second day, Yu Yan once again appeared in his room.

Like before, without saying a single word, he stared at Zi Mo for an hour, and then, left without making a sound.

And so, again, came the third day. Zi Mo was about to go crazy.

Ancestral-grand master, just what did I do wrong? Just say it. I can change, alright?

‘I, Hu Hansan, has returned.’ is a quote that came from a Chinese TV Drama.

Chapter 79: The Sect Master's Thoughts

After his careful analysis, and diligent investigation on his ancestral-grand master's actions, Zi Mo finally came up with a conclusion. Could it be that he felt that it was still not enough? Elder Soi Sauz's current reputation had yet to reach the standard he was expecting? Of course, with ancestral-grand master's title as the number one in the cultivation world, the achievements Elder Soi Sauz had currently made, were indeed not enough to grab his attention.

The more Zi Mo thought about it, the more he felt it was plausible. He silently decided to grab every opportunity, and even if there was no opportunity available, he would create opportunities to raise Elder Soi Sauz's influence in the future.

Hence, when Zhu Yao, whose injuries were healed only recently and had been ruthlessly taught a lesson by her own master, returned to her own cave residence, her head began to spin in all directions by the bunch of documents regarding the sect's affairs, which were brought there by Wang Xuzhi.

The hell, what happened to the promised leisurely Elder life?

The number of deaths of spiritual plants and the amount of medicinal ingredients used in the Medicine Mountain, the number of talisman papers wasted by the Talisman Mountain, and even the number of spiritual beasts birthed in the Beast-Taming Mountain? Why was there a need for her to manage situations like these? It's not like she knew how to deliver a child!

“Big Sis Zhu Yao?” Wang Xuzhi looked a little worriedly at Zhu Yao, who was already at the brink of collapse. “Are you alright?”

“Hoho, do I look fine to you?” Zhu Yao replied him with a bitter smile. This could not do. She had to discuss this with Zi Mo, after all, she still had the heavy responsibility of saving the world.

“I heard that you suffered injuries two days ago.” Wang Xuzhi looked at her a little hesitantly, and a little guiltily. “I’m sorry. I only knew that you went to such a dangerous place today.”

Zhu Yao turned her head, and rolled her eyes at him. “Even if you find out about it earlier, what can you do about it?” The rescue operation was something decided by the Nascent Soul higher ups, he, an Azoth-stage practitioner, naturally would not know about it.

“If I knew about it, naturally, I wouldn’t have allowed Zhu Yao to take the risk.” Wang Xuzhi was a little agitated. Yucang City was the city of heretic practitioners, so how would he be at ease and allow her to go?

“Little wimp.” Zhu Yao pressed on his head, and began to rub it vigorously. “This is a matter between adults. You just have to do well in your cultivation, what’s there for you to worried about?”

“Big Sis Zhu Yao!” Wang Xuzhi exploded, angrily pulling her hand down. He then said with a stern expression. “I’m no longer a child, stop treating me like one.”

“Yes, yes, yes, you’re an adult now.” Zhu Yao casually replied. Staring at the various documents in front of her, she suddenly had an idea. Piling all of them up, she pushed them into his hands. “Here, I shall give you a chance to prove that you’re an adult.”

“...” Wang Xuzhi was startled for a moment, and then, he sighed deeply. “Big Sis Zhu Yao. You can’t have planned on pushing all these to me since the beginning, right?”

“How can you call it ‘pushing to you?’ This is to train you.” In any case, she was dead-set on not admitting to it. Patting on his chest, she said. “A big man must take on responsibilities. Go! The time to prove yourself has come! You can do it!”

“You...” Wang Xuzhi’s face revealed a complicated expression. Only after a moment did he finally let out a sigh, submitted to his fate, took over the small mountain of documents, and kept them within his storage pouch. “As always, you will only acknowledge my abilities when you’re bullying me.”

How could that be? No matter how many times she bullied him, she had never felt he had any sort of abilities. He’s still a child! – Rubs his head! –

This time, however, Wang Xuzhi did not resist, and allowed her claws to ravage his own head. Glancing at that familiar, yet unfamiliar face of hers, he tightened the grip of his hands, as though he had decided on something. “Big Sis Zhu Yao. The words you told me on that day, I have considered it.”

“Ah?” What did I say?

He pulled down Zhu Yao’s trouble-making hand, yet he did not release it, instead, he tightly held it by the palm. The temperature of his palm was a little blazing hot, Zhu Yao awkwardly tried to struggle out, yet, she was unsuccessful.

“An unfaithful person will never be welcomed. So, I decided to fulfill my promise.”

“Ah?” Just what is he trying to say?

“I have decided.” Wang Xuzhi’s hand suddenly tightened, to the point where Zhu Yao felt it began to hurt. “No matter what you turn into, I will still take you as my bride, and take care of you for this entire lifetime.”

Zhu Yao suddenly lost balance, and had almost fell off her chair. “What?”

The hell, back then, she was just joking with him. He couldn’t have treated it seriously, and pondered deeply about it, could he?

“I know, with your current form, other people will definitely have many misunderstandings about us.” Wang Xuzhi still explained with a serious look. “However, no matter what others say, I will simply ignore them.”

“...” Zhu Yao’s face darkened from hearing it. He even actually

placed these secular opinions into his considerations. Just what the hell had this little wimp been thinking about during the few days she had not seen him?

She could not help but stretch out her hand and placed it on his forehead. "It's not burning up though?" Then why was he talking such nonsense?

"Big Sis Zhu Yao, I'm serious!" Wang Xuzhi became anxious, as he stared deeply into her eyes. That expression was as serious as you wanted it to be.

Zhu Yao felt her head aching. With a little wimp who always take things seriously by her side, it really was terrifying.

With lightning speed, she raised a finger and strongly flicked it at his white and clean forehead. So as to achieve a better effect, she even added spiritual energy into it. Little wimp Wang instantly broke away, releasing her hand, his hands moved to hold his own forehead. It hurt so much, even tears were about to flow out.

Zhu Yao glanced at him in contempt. "I was only joking with you back then. I was only kidding with you, why did you treat it so seriously? If you make fun of this old woman again, I'm going to spank your buttocks."

"Big Sis Zhu Yao!" Wang Xuzhi held onto his forehead, and looked at her with teary eyes. "Could it be you think that my words earlier, are simply a child's banter?"

“What else can it be?” Zhu Yao shrugged.

Wang Xuzhi’s face instantly turned red. His widened eyes stared ruthlessly at her for a few moments, as though he was suppressing his anger with all his might. After a few moments, he suddenly stood straight up, snorted heavily at her, and then, walked away furiously without even saying his goodbyes.

Yo, is he rebelling now?

This time, after Wang Xuzhi had left, he had not come over to see her for about a week. This little wimp’s temper really big, huh. Zhu Yao pondered for a moment, and felt that he had already entered the rebellious phase. It was exactly the period when a child especially liked to go against his parents. After silently considering the factors, she wondered if she change her method of education?

As she thought of this, the cry of a mythic bird sounded. Sovereign Feng Yi suddenly descended from the top of the mountain, riding on that mythic bird of hers, she stopped at her courtyard.

Why was this mountain-top flower at her place? She could not be here to settle scores, right? Zhu Yao faintly felt a bad premonition.

“Greetings, Sovereign Feng Yi.” Zhu Yao stepped forward and bowed.

“No need for the courtesies.” Feng Yi nodded. After inspecting

him from head to toe, she hesitantly spoke up. “Your injuries...”

Zhu Yao laughed. “They’re completely healed.” Her master, who could take on multiple enemies at once, stepped in, after all.

“That’s good.” Feng Yi seemed to heave a sigh of relief, and her expression soothed by a bit as well. As though she had never conversed with others like this before, she seemed a little constrained.

“Sovereign, if you do not mind, why don’t you come into my courtyard and have a seat?” Zhu Yao suggested.

Feng Yi nodded. Following him into the courtyard, she sat down on a stone chair, and only then did she hesitantly speak up. “Do you mind if I inspect your injuries?” After all, he was injured because of her. If she did not personally inspect it, she would be unable to be at ease.

Zhu Yao unreservedly stretched out her paw. Look all you want then. After all, every single person that came to visit her all wanted to grab her hand. The Sect Master was like this, Zi Dan was like this, and even little wimp was like this as well. It caused her to feel like stretching out her paw whenever she were to see people. All’s that left was to reply with a ‘woof’.

Feng Yi looked at it for a moment, and only then did her expression soothe a little. However, when she retracted her hand, she turned around and pulled out a large bunch of items, and then placed them in front of her.

There were medicinal pellets, spiritual grass, and there were even a few unknown mystical tools. They filled up the entire table, and every single one of them faintly carried traces of spiritual energy. With just a glance, one could tell every single of them were valuable treasures.

What was she trying to do? Show off her wealth?

“The reason I’m here today is to especially thank you.” Feng Yi looked at him, as though this was the first time she had ever done such a thing, her expression was a little uncomfortable. “These gifts are my thanks to you.”

Zhu Yao was startled for a moment. She had never expected that this Feng Yi could actually be this humane. Looking at the gold and sparkling treasures that filled the table, she really felt like keeping all of them into her waist pouch. However, she was unable to discern when she would die, so if these items were to be given to her, they would be completely wasted.

“It’s fine, there’s no need.” Zhu Yao pressed on her twitching paws. “I didn’t save you because of these anyway. It’s best that you take them back.”

Feng Yi was dumbfounded, and was a little anxious. “If these aren’t up to your standards, just tell me what you need. I will definitely find them for you.”

“There’s really no need.” When she put it that way, Zhu Yao

became a little embarrassed. “Didn’t you give me the Water Spirit? What else is more valuable than that?”

Feng Yi pondered for a moment, and realized that was true! She no longer insisted, and kept everything back. She let out a sigh, however, the next moment, a smile rose. “You. You’re really strange.”

“Aren’t you as strange as me?” Seeing that her expression had warmed up quite a bit, Zhu Yao’s guts suddenly fattened. “To tell you the truth, in the past, I hated you quite a bit.”

Feng Yi looked at him with widened eyes, her expression looked somewhat depressed.

Zhu Yao continued. “In the past, you would always show that prideful look, preventing anyone from coming close to you, as though everyone should exalt you. After I finally managed to crash into that secret hideout to save you, I didn’t expect to still be given the cold shoulder.” When she recalled what happened at the passage, she could not help but retort. Seeing her lowering her head in guilt, she then continued. “But after interacting with you for a long time, I found out that you’re actually not that bad. Deep in your heart, you’re still rather kind.” At the very least, she knew how to show her gratitude, otherwise, she would not have given her the Water Spirit, right?

Only then did Feng Yi’s expression looked better than before. The hands she put on her thighs, began to tug on her skirt, as though she became a little nervous. After hesitating for a moment, she spoke up. “Then... What do you think... of the current me?”

“Not bad.” Zhu Yao replied with a huge smile. “If you continue like this, we might even become...” Good girl friends.

Before she could finish her words, a Sword Mountain disciple suddenly descended. Hugging his fist, he bowed before the two people, and said.

“Grand-martial aunt, Elder Soi, the Sect Master had this disciple to inform the both of you of a meeting in the great hall.”

“Meeting?” The corner of Zhu Yao’s lips twitched for a moment. That old man couldn’t be pushing a bunch of documents to her again, right? “What’s the issue?”

The disciple replied. “Senior-martial uncle Xiao Yi has returned. Currently, he’s at the great hall.”

Zhu Yao glanced at Feng Yi, and then nodded. Right after, they went towards the direction of the great hall in the Main Mountain together.

It had been ten days since they returned to the Ancient Hill Sect. Back then, when Feng Yi tore through space, the exit was incidentally at the Lin Seas, which was very close to the sect. Hence, the three of them returned to the sect much earlier than Xiao Yi. However, although Yucang City was far from Ancient Hill Sect, if one rode his sword, at the very most, one could reach in seven days. He, however, spent a total of ten days to return.

Chapter 80: Big Sis, Don't Scare Me

Her doubt was cleared when she saw Xiao Yi standing alone with the rest of the Mountain Lords in the great hall. Rui Yu was not by his side, so he must have spent the extra three days to appease her.

“Master!” Seeing them entering the hall, Xiao Yi welcomed them with an excited expression. To be precise, he was welcoming Feng Yi. “It’s great that you’re fine and well.”

“Mn.” Feng Yi responded blandly, and then, brushed past him, walking over to the higher seats. At that moment, Xiao Yi’s expression turned a little ugly. A gap had opened up between them.

Zhu Yao stroked her nose, and found herself a seat as well. Having some bad thoughts in her mind, she found this scene to be really amusing.

She carefully looked at Xiao Yi’s cultivation, and as expected, it had rose by quite a bit again. Earlier, he was at the second level of Nascent Soul, but now, he’s at the peak of the second level, and it faintly looked as though he was about to break through into the third level as well. It seemed like in these ten days, he did not forget to do the thing he had to with Rui Yu.

His own master’s life and death was uncertain when she was trapped in the Desolate Ground, yet, he submerged himself in a couple’s bliss. Thinking it this way, he really deserved losing Feng Yi’s trust.

Wait a minute, why was she able to see his face clearly now? It seemed as though the word BUG on his face had lightened a little.

Zhu Yao was startled for a moment, and then, she raised her head. The hell! The exclamation mark on his head had disappeared as well!

Could it be because she released the Water Spirit, it resulted to a part of the BUG being fixed? The more Zhu Yao thought about it, the more she felt this was plausible. In her dreams, Xiao Yi obtained the three Spirits, and then, with his senses for the Five Spirits, he summoned the remaining Earth Spirit and Fire Spirit.

Currently, he only had the Metal Spirit in his hands. In other words, the Earth Spirit and Fire Spirit would never be in his hands. If she were to take the Metal Spirit off his hands as well, without his only golden finger, naturally, he would no longer be a bug. When she thought of this, Zhu Yao momentarily got excited.

“Senior-martial brother, he hooked himself with a heretic practitioner. Ever since the ancient times, good and evil has never been able to co-exist, this issue cannot be prolonged. Sect Master senior-martial brother, please handle this matter impartially.” Zi Dan spoke up with a furious expression.

Xiao Yi frowned deeply. “Senior-martial brother Zi Dan, please do not slander me. You say that I hooked myself up with a heretic practitioner, do you have evidence?”

“Evidence?” Zi Dan snorted coldly, it seemed like the anger in his

heart was not light. Walking towards Zhu Yao, he said in agitation. “You want evidence? Little brother, tell them. Back then in Yucang City, was he together with that devil woman?”

“Uh...” Zhu Yao could only nod her head.

So it was because of this matter. It was no wonder she and Feng Yi was called here so hastily. Heretic practitioners and Deity practitioners had fought for so many years, and they had long been divided like water and fire. It was thus no wonder Zi Dan would be this furious till now. This time, Xiao Yi had landed himself in deep trouble.

Xiao Yi’s expression became even uglier, yet, he still rebutted with a just attitude. “Both of you are biased against Rui Yu, your words cannot be easily taken for truth. And, even if I’m together with her, it doesn’t prove that I have hooked up with a heretic practitioner, does it? Rather, you two...” He coldly looked at the two people in the eyes, his expression revealed a hint of disdain. “Don’t forget that the reason why you two are still alive was because she released you two back then in Yucang City. Not only do you two not know how to show your gratitude, you still wish to frame me?”

“You... You’re really unreasonable.” In an instant, Zi Dan was furious to the point where fumes were about to rise from his head.

Zhu Yao was even more dumbfounded by this twisted concept of his. Show Rui Yu gratitude? Did she hear him right? The one who caught them was her as well, and instead, she had to thank her? What kind of joke was that?

“Alright. Since little brother Soi’s and my words are not trustworthy, then your master’s words should be trustworthy, right!?” Zi Dan took in a deep breath. Looking towards Feng Yi who was seating at the higher seats, he said with a bow. “Senior-martial aunt, you saw that scene for yourself as well. In the underground city, wasn’t he hooking up together with that heretic practitioner?”

Zhu Yao sighed. Not only did she see it, she was even given a free ticket to watch a “There’s Only Me in Your Heart, and You’re the Only One in My Heart” movie.

Feng Yi recalled that live pornographic scene as well, and her expression instantly darkened quite a bit. Her delicate brows furrowed deeply, and only after a moment did she helplessly nod.

“Master!” Xiao Yi widened his eyes, and looked at Feng Yi with disbelieving eyes. His expression instantly sank to rock bottom, and his entire face was filled with the “how can you not understand me?” look.

Feng Yi did not bother looking at him, and instantly turned her head away.

Xiao Yi’s face was instantly ashen.

Although he saw that Xiao Yi had suffered a setback, Zhu Yao still felt rather refreshed. However, in the end, he would not be sentenced to death. If he was really judged as someone who had

hooked up with an heretic practitioner, most likely, he would no longer have a footing in the deity cultivation world. Although he was quite a playboy, and would always open his legs whenever he see beautiful women, generally, he could not be said to be too nasty of a person. Adding that in Yucang City, he had once saved her before, so to speak.

“Xiao Yi, did you really hook yourself up with that heretic practitioner?” Zi Mo’s expression sank as well. This matter was too grave, although he was the disciple of a Sovereign, for the sake of the Ancient Hill Sect, he could not afford to be soft.

“Umm... I think there’s some sort of a misunderstanding.” Zhu Yao stood up, stopped Zi Mo, and cleared her throat. “Actually, when we were at Yucang City, the three of us were captured by that heretic practitioner. And she was a Demigod-stage practitioner.”

The moment these words fell, the great hall was momentarily in an uproar. Heretic practitioners had never been easy to deal with, and all of them had their own methods at their disposal. However, the reason why the deity sects had been able to suppress them for so many years, was exactly because of the Demigod-stage practitioners in the deity sects. And although heretic practitioners, through relying on their heretic practices, could cultivate faster than the disciples of deity sects, none of them were able to reach the peak. However, currently, a Demigod-stage practitioner appeared, which everyone could not help but exclaim about. To the deity sects, this was definitely a big threat.

“Back then, the three of us were unable to defeat her, and we

almost disco-uh... I mean, we almost died in her hands.” Zhu Yao continued. “In the end, Xiao Yi, with his quick wits, bewitched that female practitioner, and thus, was able to save all of us.”

“But he clearly, with that woman...” Zi Dan was still furious, and wanted to speak up.

Zhu Yao tugged him. “Senior-martial brother, back then, heretic practitioners were everywhere. I believe junior-martial brother Xiao had no other options as well, so he had to put an act that entire time. If he had really betrayed the sect, why would he return, and walk himself into a trap?”

Zi Dan frowned and thought for a moment, and then, he no longer argued.

“Hence, junior-martial brother Xiao was only putting up an act, to fool that heretic practitioner.” Zhu Yao looked towards Xiao Yi who was in the center. “Isn’t that right?”

“Yes!” Xiao Yi gritted his teeth, before blurting out an answer a moment later.

Zi Mo frowned deeply. He kind of felt that this incident was not as simple as this. After pondering for a moment, he said. “Junior-martial brother Xiao, since you have already returned, it means that you have completely broke off from that female practitioner. You should not have continued discussing about the matter of that heretic practitioner, which even caused junior-martial brother Zi Dan to misunderstand.”

Xiao Yi simply lowered his head, and did not reply, as though he was silently agreeing to his words.

“Since the truth is clear, then there’s no need for us to investigate it any further.” Zi Mo continued. “However, to prevent all circumstances, even more so to prevent that heretic practitioner from taking the opportunity to seek revenge, junior-martial brother Xiao will not be allowed to head down the mountain for two hundred years.”

This was the best way to deal with the situation. First, he had given face to Sovereign Feng Yi, and second, he could prevent any implications of him being with the heretic practitioner.

“Do you have any objections?”

Xiao Yi was silent for a moment, before he hugged his fist and replied. “I shall comply with the Sect Master’s orders!” Raising his head, his eyes, however, moved to Zhu Yao who was behind him. At that moment, his gaze turned cold, a hint of hatred flashed past his eyes.

Zhu Yao’s heart shook! The hell, what’s the meaning of this expression of his? She saved his life, you know? Hey? Why did her hatred parameter rise every single time she saves him?

With Zi Mo’s order, he announced that the meeting was adjourned.

In this happy and satisfactory ending, Zhu Yao was the only one who felt terrible.

Feng Yi was the first one to leave. When she passed by Zhu Yao, she cast a grateful glance at her, and only then did Zhu Yao found some comfort.

As expected, there were still understanding people in this world.

Probably because Zhu Yao had saved Xiao Yi, Feng Yi, the mountain-top flower of Ancient Hill Sect, had recently warmed up to her. Since they were both at the Beast-Taming Mountain, they were quite near each other. Feng Yi would occasionally come down to converse with her. Coincidentally, little wimp had entered the rebellious phase, and it was unknown what the old man Zi Mo was thinking, every bunch of documents pertaining to the Ancient Hill Sect were pushed to her. She was extremely busy, and when Feng Yi came, she could finally find an excuse, to pat her own buttocks and disregard them.

When Feng Yi came to look for her, she was currently giving a lesson to the new little turnips who had just entered. Zi Mo's explanation was, these were the future of the sect, as an elder, she had the responsibility to supervise them.

Momma's egg, it's not like she was taking in any disciples, the hell she needed to supervise them for?

Looking at these bunch of naive little turnips circling around her, and because she had to maintain her reputation, she could not hit them and could not scold them, it was very terrifying, alright?

“Elder, elder, what’s your name?” Number one turnip asked.

“Elder, elder, you can fly, so is your name flyman?” Number two turnip asked.

“But, my father said that those that can fly, are called birds though?” Number three turnip asked.

“Then, is your name birdman?” Number four turnip asked.

“.....”

Zhu Yao squatted down, pulled the bunch of curious little turnips, and sighed. With a heavy tone, she explained. “Little buddies, this elder’s name, is not flyman, and not birdman either. I’m called Superman!”

That’s right, I’m the Superman tasked to save the world.

“Oh!” The little turnips had a sudden realization, and the place was filled sighs of admiration.

Pfft~

A light laughter came from afar, the mountain-top flower had come here to converse with her again. Zhu Yao finally had an excuse to dodge this affair. After casually picking out a disciple, she handed the bunch of little turnips over, and then, pulling along Feng Yi, she ran away.

Little kids or whatever, were too terrifying.

“How can you trick those little children?” Feng Yi sat down on the stone chair in the courtyard.

“How can you say that I tricked them?” Zhu Yao poured herself a cup of tea, and explained with a serious expression. “I’m giving them a very important lesson, ‘loose lips will sink ships’... Really!”

Feng Yi shook her head, however, she did not continue to argue. After taking the cup of tea from him, she expressed her thanks.

Zhu Yao: “...” It wasn’t for you, though.

Alright, she felt embarrassed taking it back, hence, she could only pour herself another cup.

Feng Yi seemed to have something to say. While glancing at him for a couple of times, she kept biting her lips. “Soi Sauz...”

“Ah?”

“What... What do you think of me?” Feng Yi suddenly asked.

“What?” Zhu Yao gave an air-headed answer.

Feng Yi, however, lowered her head. Lightly glancing at him from the corner of her eyes, as though she had something that she could not bring herself to say, her face began to redden bit by bit.

Zhu Yao suddenly felt a little uncomfortable. “What’s wrong with you? Why are you so strange today?”

After conversing with her for so many days, Zhu Yao had already treated her as a good girl friend. This was still the first time she had seen her with such an expression.

“Are you willing... to form a practitioner-pair with me?”

Pfft~~~~~

Chapter 81: I Actually Like Men

As Zhu Yao's tea had yet to flow down her throat, she spat them all out. With her mouth opened up wide, she looked at the shy Feng Yi, and in an instant, she felt entirely uncomfortable.

Big sis, don't scare me!

"You're not willing?" Feng Yi's expression instantly turned pale, and the luster of tears seemed to have surfaced at the corner of her eyes, as she took a step forward. "Why? Is there anything bad about me?"

Zhu Yao was frightened to the point she suddenly leapt up, and she immediately fell off the stone chair. Only after a long while, did she finally crawl back up. "No, no, no. I... Haah! I think you must have misunderstood. I... What's there that's good about me? Why did you fall in love with me?"

Please, although he had the shell of a male, she was still a genuine woman, and a straight one at that.

Feng Yi circled around, looking as though she wanted to step forward to hold her up, yet she firmly replied. "Everything."

"I will change, alright?" Zhu Yao took a big step back, and she felt like crying. Big sis, don't make such a world-class joke, hey.

"You really hate me that much?" Feng Yi instantly showed a face

of despair, the tears at the corner of her eyes began to fall down in streams.

“Don’t cry!” Zhu Yao was suddenly filled with a heavy amount of guilt, and at that instant, she felt as though she was no longer human. “I don’t mean it that way. Haah. We... We won’t be blissful if we’re together.”

“Why?” Feng Yi’s face was filled with accusations for Zhu Yao, and she completely looked like a little girl who had submerged herself in her own feelings. Not even the slightest bit of her noble and icy demeanor was left. “Since you hate me so much, then why did you risk your life so many times to save me, and even think of me always?”

“When did I ever think of you?” She admitted to saving her, but thinking of her always? Where did that come from?

“You helped me save my disciple, and whenever I look for you, you had never rejected or evaded me as well.”

That’s because, she wanted to loaf on the job.

“And... Sometimes, I look for you deep in the night, yet, you would still listen to me patiently.”

Please. That’s the basic code of conduct of a good girl friend. In the modern era, whenever her girl friend broke up, she would always like to call her late in the night as well, and she had never

felt like strangling her either.

“If I’m not in your heart, then why did you treat me so well till now?”

“Stop!” Zhu Yao took a deep breath, and stopped her brain from functioning. “Sovereign. I really do not have any unnatural thoughts towards you. Really!”

You must believe me!

“I don’t believe it!” Feng Yi instantly shattered her expectations, as she looked at her with a hurt expression. “If you don’t, then, since we’re in the same sect, why have you never called me senior-martial aunt.”

“Uhh...” Because she was her junior-martial sister, could she tell her this?

“Why do you have to deny it? If you think that it’s not the right time yet, I can wait.” Feng Yi looked at her with an unregretful expression. “However... please do not push me away. If you don’t give me a reason today, I will never believe it.”

Reason. Reason. The hell, where was she going to find a reason? She’s currently a man. Even if she were to take off her shirt for Feng Yi to look at it, she wouldn’t believe it either, would she?

“Actually...” Zhu Yao took a deep breath, and with great effort,

she squeezed out a very serious expression. “I already have someone I like.”

Feng Yi trembled, and took two consecutive steps back, as she looked at him with an ashen face.

When his disciple came rushing in, Yu Yan was meditating. After sensing his stupid disciple’s presence from afar, in the next moment, she had already come charging in like a bull. “Wuwuwuwu.” Lying in his embrace, she began to cry out crocodile tears.

Yu Yan stiffened for a moment, hesitating how he should throw his disciple out, so that she would become less stupid when she falls.

“Master... I don’t want to live anymore.” Zhu Yao rubbed her head messily, attempting to rub off her tears and snot on her master’s white clothes. She could not be the only one frustrated about this, right? “Wuwuwu... I hurt a girl’s pure and innocent heart earlier. But I was really shocked. She actually wanted me to marry her, no, she wanted to wed to me!”

Just when Yu Yan wanted to push her hand away, anger began to well up inside his heart.

“Who was it?” Which daredevil was trying to steal his disciple away again?

“That’s not important.” Zhu Yao was getting over her head. “See here, I only saved her once, and treated her a little better, how did that cause her to fancy me? I don’t want to steal someone else’s harem, you know.” Even if Xiao Yi’s harem was huge, and would not mind losing one or two.

Yu Yan frowned, as he made guesses on who the person his disciple was referring to. He was considering if he should remind that person, not to have any ideas of getting his disciple.

“Master, I really want to turn back, my current identity is too ridiculous! I only realized this now, and my future looks bleak.” Zhu Yao said with teary eyes and snot coming out of her nose. “See here, if I’m together with her, then it will be yuri. If I were to go with a man, then it will be yaoi. It seems like, no matter which route I take, I can’t get out from being gay!”

Yu Yan frowned. What yuri yaoi?

“Master, tell me honestly!” Zhu Yao wiped her face bitterly. “Do you also think that my current form is exceptionally abnormal, and exceptionally perverse?”

Yu Yan looked at her from top to bottom. Her chicken’s nest-like hair, eyes that were swollen like blisters, and that red nose which was constantly sniffing. No matter how he looked at it, she looked really terrible, however, he still calmly said. “You’re decent.”

“Master...” As expected, he was a great master. She was touched.

Yu Yan however, suddenly raised his head, looked outside, and said with a frown. “The person you were referring to, is it her?”

Zhu Yao was startled. She turned to look, only to see Feng Yi, who had followed her without her noticing. Currently, she was standing outside, looking disbelievingly at the two people who were hugging each other.

“The person you like, could it really be...”

A light bulb flashed in Zhu Yao’s mind. She suddenly had an idea that could eliminate all troubles, as she strongly nodded. “That’s right!”

So as to give a stronger effect, she even hugged onto her master’s head, and with a “pachi”, she kissed on it.

The person below her instantly stiffened into a stone statue.

Feng Yi looked as though she had been dealt by a serious blow, as her body wobbled. She then once again took another glance at the two people. As glistening tears flowed down her cheeks, she flew away.

Done. Zhu Yao silently gave herself a ‘Yes!’ in her heart. Although she felt a little sorry for Feng Yi, rather than suffering for a long time, it’s best to settle the issue as fast as possible. Instead of allowing her to cling onto hope, it’s best that Zhu Yao could wake her up sooner than later.

As Feng Yi was such a prideful person, if Zhu Yao were to look for a regular person, a girl especially, she would definitely not believe it. As the only Demigod-stage female practitioner in the cultivation world, naturally, there's no other female practitioner that could compete with her. However, it would be different if it was a man, especially a man like her master who was much stronger than her.

Of course, she had to thank her master for his good performance. Turning around, she gave Yu Yan a huge hug. "Thank you, master! The matter has been dealt with. I'm taking my leave first. I love you!"

Only then did Zhu Yao return to Beast-Taming Mountain.

While a certain person, was still maintaining that stiff posture, not a single muscle was moved for a short while. Subconsciously touching his lips, that numb feeling, momentarily caused him to be at a loss. Even his heart was in a state of confusion as well. Just what was going on? Could it be that his disciple had cast a strange mystic art on him? However, his disciple was stupid to such an extent, how was that possible?

If that really was the case, then what sort of mystic art, could allow someone to feel something this strange? And that earlier scene even continued to flash repeatedly in his mind, like a demon's illusion.

However... He did not hate it.

Once again, he touched his own lips. Faintly, in his heart, a strange heat was surging up as well. Yu Yan recalled everything he had seen and heard in the past ten thousand years, yet, he still was unable to find a reasonable answer.

As expected, he had no choice but to ask his disciple.

Ever since Feng Yi ran out of Jade Forest Mountain in tears that day, Zhu Yao no longer saw her. Zhu Yao reflected on herself, yet, she was still unable to think of how she gave Feng Yi the hint that she had some interests towards her.

Although her current form was a male, she had always thought that, other than not having scruples during the times she interacted with Wang Xuzhi and her master, she didn't treat the rest of the people any different than she usually did.

After pondering for a moment, Zhu Yao determined that it must be the time in the Desolate Ground. So as to heal her injuries, Zhu Yao seemed to have pulled her clothes off. In her precognitive dream, Feng Yi seemed to have half-heartedly submitted to Xiao Yi after their naked bodies were facing each other when she was healing Xiao Yi. It's just that this time, Zhu Yao was swapped in to fill the role.

The more Zhu Yao thought about it, the more she felt this was plausible. It was no wonder she gave her the Water Spirit that easily, without the slightest bit of hesitation back then. So it was actually because of this.

“Big sis Zhu Yao, big sis Zhu Yao!” Wang Xuzhi stretched out his hand and waved it in front of Zhu Yao.

“Ah?”

“What’s wrong with you? Did you hear what I said?” This was already the third time she had lost focus, did something happen to her?

“What did you say?”

Wang Xuzhi sighed, and then, repeated his words. “I said, Sect Master’s wife is pregnant.”

“What? Who did it?”

“.....”

Wang Xuzhi’s face was completely dark.

“Uh... I’m sorry, it was conditioned reflex.” Zhu Yao scratched her head embarrassingly. “Is it true? I never expected that your master, at his age, would still be so... gallant.”

Can the word ‘gallant’ be used this way? Wang Xuzhi shook his head, showing a helpless face. “Master told me personally. Most probably, not long later, I will have a little junior-martial brother, or little junior-martial sister.”

Wang Xuzhi was really happy. Among the inner chamber disciples under the Sect Master, he was the youngest. This time round, he could finally be a senior-martial brother. And, the higher the cultivation a practitioner was, the harder it was for that practitioner to bear children. The chance for a Nascent Soul practitioner like this old man Zi Mo to have descendants, was basically smaller than striking a lottery.

“When is it due? I want to join the crowd as well.”

“It’s still early!” Wang Xuzhi said. “It hasn’t even been three months for master-aunt, so we have to wait till next year.”

“Ah? The pregnancy period is only a year?” Zhu Yao asked.

Wang Xuzhi looked at her strangely. “A pregnancy period is usually ten months. It’s common sense.”

“Uh...” Sorry, she was taking Nezha as reference. Since a practitioner’s lifespan was long, she was thinking that the pregnancy periods would be as long as well.

“Xuzhi, you can’t have ran over here to find me today, just to tell me this piece of news, right?”

A few days ago, he even threw a fit. Why did he look as though nothing had happened today?

Wang Xuzhi's expression changed, a moment later, he silently pulled out a stack of files and passed it to her. "The documents you wanted me to arrange, I have already settled them. So... I came here to pass them to you."

Zhu Yao glanced at him. So the reason why he did not visit her in the recent few days was because he was busy with these? And here she thought he had lost his temper!

Chapter 82: Disciple, Come, Let's Do An Experiment

“Good boy!” Zhu Yao happily took them off his hands. Little wimp’s really cute when he’s not throwing a tantrum.

“Big sis Zhu Yao...” Wang Xuzhi’s words paused, but in the end, he decided to speak up. “I feel that, it’s best that you don’t get too close with Sovereign Feng Yi. She’s after all Xiao Yi’s master, and Xiao Yi is...”

“Don’t worry!” Zhu Yao stroked his head. “Even if you were to tie me up and send me to her now, I won’t even dare to approach too close to her.”

That master and disciple duo were really frightening, and she would prefer not to know them in her lifetime.

However, the Metal Spirit was still in Xiao Yi’s hands, hence, she did not have any other choice.

Oh right, speaking of the Metal Spirit, she just remembered, that she had to quickly release the Wood Spirit as well.

When she released the Water Spirit, the BUG on Xiao Yi’s face lightened by so much, yet, when she obtained the Wood Spirit, that did not happen at all. This meant that her mission would not be completed just by robbing the Five Spirits off him. Rather, she had to make sure that the rest of the people would not be able to

make use of the Five Spirits either.

The Wood Spirit could be said to have followed her for quite a long time, and it was really obedient, she really could not bear to let it go. Adding that the Wood Spirit could not be compared to the Water Spirit, which had the entire ocean as its cover, since it was just a little sapling, the moment it took root, most probably, it would not be able to move. Hence, it's best that she find a place that's safe and far from human eyes.

Was there any place that people would not be able to find, and was suitable for the Wood Spirit to stay in?

Got it! An idea flashed in her mind. She instantly thought of a good place, and it was a place that people would definitely not go.

“Little wimp, I have some emergency matters to take care of. I will be heading out, I can't talk to you any longer!” Zhu Yao informed him, turned around, and began to walk out. After thinking for a moment, she turned her head around again and told him. “Oh right, the new little twerps who just joined the sect are at the front hall. I will leave them to you, so help me inform your master. I won't be going there today.”

“Big sis Zhu Yao...” Before Wang Xuzhi could even stop her, he could no longer see her figure. He had no choice but to accept his fate. Sighing, he turned and headed for the front hall in the Main Mountain.

The place Zhu Yao wanted to go was Jade Forest Mountain. She

was unable to head to the place where she could settle the Wood Spirit down by herself, so she had to seek her master for help.

Passing through the teleportation formation, the moment she arrived at the peak of Jade Forest Mountain, she saw that familiar figure from afar, as he opened the door and walked out, as though he was preparing to leave as well.

“Master!” Zhu Yao waved her hands. “I want to seek your hel-”

Before she could finish, Yu Yan had already begun to walk over with a stern expression. Each step of his was exceptionally firm, and he stopped just one step away from her, as he stared unblinkingly at her face.

Zhu Yao then swallowed her words back down. What was going on with her master?

“Hoho, Master, why are you...”

Before she could finish, Yu Yan suddenly grabbed onto her arm. Lowering his head to her lips, his lips pressed onto hers.

“.....”

Zhu Yao suddenly felt as though she could hear an explosion, and random numbers crazily scrolled through her mind. Widening her eyes, she looked disbelievingly at the person in front of her.

This person is definitely not my master!

Yu Yan raised his head, his brows furrowed, as he muttered out. “Wrong!” Why wasn’t there that feeling he felt back then?

Mn, again.

Hence, he once again lowered his head, aligned to his disciple’s lips, and then, he kissed again.

It’s still wrong!

Again...

And hence, kiss, kiss, and then another kiss.

“Stop!” Zhu Yao who finally managed to recover her senses, pushed away the person in front of her. It was fine if it was just kissing, but why was each subsequent kiss heavier than the previous one? Her teeth were close to being knocked out, you know?

“Master, what are you doing? This disciple sells her body, not her skill-ah pui! What’s wrong with you?”

Zhu Yao held on her injured lips, and this was the first time her face reddened in her entire lifetime, as she stared at the man in

front of her who kissed her endlessly.

What's wrong with her master? Was his body taken over? Was he kidnapped by aliens? Or was he infected with an illness that turned him into a kissing maniac? The hell, how could such an illness exist?

Looking at his disciple who suddenly ran a few meters away, Yu Yan was a little unhappy, yet, he still answered with a serious expression. "I wanted to test it out?"

"Test?" Zhu Yao's mind turned blank for a moment. "Test what?" Test how durable her lips were?

"There wasn't that feeling."

"What feeling?"

Yu Yan's face still looked confused, yet, he seriously explained. "Yesterday, when you were in the house, that feeling when you pressed your lips against mine."

"Ah?" Yesterday? That time when they acted for Feng Yi?

Zhu Yao suddenly felt her heart shake for a moment. Her master couldn't be... having a crush on her, right?

Heheheh... heheh... heh...

Zhu Yao felt her face was strangely getting hotter, and it was even beginning to spread at extreme speed. Why was she feeling so embarrassed?

This master who could do everything, actually had a crush on her. And he himself did not seem to know about it.

What to do? She suddenly felt that they could develop these feelings?

No, no, no. She had to remain calm. She still had to return home, return to her own world! She could not be in love so casually.

However, even if she were to return to the modern era, she would only be an old-aged unmarried youth. Then why should she even return?

But, after all...

Zhu Yao's heart was currently beginning to tackle the problem of whether she should return, and an intense debate was formed.

Eh, wait a minute. Wasn't she considering about the matter of her master having a crush on her?

Seeing the disciple whose face was already red like an apple in front of him, a certain master's heart stirred for a moment, as he

walked towards her, step by step.

Zhu Yao simply felt as though her heart had jumped all the way to her throat, as it kept beating incessantly.

Badump. Badump.

Yu Yan finally stopped before her, slowly lowering his head, he reached out his hand...

And touched her forehead. His disciple wasn't sick, right?

"Mn, it's a little hot, but it's nothing serious."

"Pi~~~~~" The pink fumes that filled Zhu Yao's heart, was cleanly put out.

Hoho... She just knew that she was a moron for having expectations of this dense master of hers.

"Is there something you need?" After confirming that the incident back then was just an occasional occurrence, a certain master had begun to turn back to normal.

Zhu Yao silently rolled her eyes, before she could vent off the resentment that filled her heart, she recalled the important matter she had to attend to, and thus, had no choice but to hold it in for now.

“Master, have you ever visited the Desolate Ground?”

“Mn.” Yu Yan nodded. That was the place where he captured that few purple lightning bolts. That place was very mysterious, although the five types of spiritual powers were not present in the air, there was the presence of Purple Heavenly Lightning, which contained huge amount of powerful lightning spiritual energy.

“I want to plant the Wood Spirit in the Desolate Ground.”

Yu Yan looked at her a little strangely, as though he did not understand why she wanted to do something like that. Zhu Yao thus explained the change that occurred to Xiao Yi, and only then did he nod his head. “Your thinking is correct. The Desolate Ground is indeed the best place to hide the Wood Spirit. However...”

Zhu Yao turned her head over. Could it be that there’s something she did not factor in?

“Have you ever thought that, while the Desolate Ground is a dead land, what the Wood Spirit signifies is a lease of life.” Yu Yan said. “If my guess is correct, once you plant the Wood Spirit in the Desolate Ground, with just a span of ten thousand years, the Desolate Ground will no longer be desolate, rather, it will be an oasis.”

“Then won’t that be great?” Zhu Yao smiled. Only after actually entering that place did Zhu Yao felt how terrifying the place was.

Neither was there spiritual energy, nor was there life, only one piece of desolate land after the next.

“But in that case, ten thousand years later, the Desolate Ground might become the next Tasyoluk. People will no longer be afraid of that world, and the Wood Spirit will still be discovered by people.”

“Then have the next world savior save it!” Zhu Yao said with a smile. That’s all she could do to help. “When that time comes, the Wood Spirit can be said to have saved that world. I hope that those demonic beasts in those desolate pieces of land, will know how to show their gratitude, and protect the Wood Spirit from being taken away by outsiders.”

Yu Yan glanced at her, his expression sank. She clearly knew that there was another way, and that was, to completely destroy the Wood Spirit. It itself was formed by spiritual energy in the first place, so, even if it were to die, it would simply return to being a mass of spiritual energy. Given time, it would still be able to form into a Spirit once again.

However, his disciple had rather go through a big trouble, than be willing to use that method. She probably could not bear to do so.

Yu Yan let out a huge sigh. As people who strived to cultivate to deities, those who live for a long time, would long be used to disregard life. Yet only this stupid disciple of his, still kept her former heart. She treated the Wood Spirit this way, and she treated likewise to other people as well.

She said that the reason why she had arrived in this world was because Xiao Yi would disrupt the balance of the world. Yet, she clearly had thousands and hundreds of opportunities to kill Xiao Yi, and if she had done so, the danger would have naturally been removed. Just like right now, if she were to speak up and seek his help, he would, without even lifting an eyebrow, help her remove that person. However, she would not do it, and she had never thought of using this method.

Life, was probably her bottom line.

Zhu Yao released the Wood Spirit, though, it did not seem to be very willing to leave her, as it stretched its soft little vines to entangle her leg, and did not let go. It had lived in her divine sense for a long time, and it had faintly taken root there, so naturally, it was not too willing to move from there. Although Zhu Yao was a little unwilling as well, the longer she kept it, the more she would not be able to let it go. Solidifying her heart, after promising it that she would often come to visit, she left.

The Desolate Ground could only be entered by Demigod-stage practitioners. Even if regular people were to enter it by mistake, the group of tenth-ranked demonic beasts was not something that one could easily mess with. However, in that case, she could only wait till she was a Demigod before she could see the little Wood Spirit.

When she returned, it was already late in the night. She fled here, as currently, she was basically unable to look straight at her master's face at all. Recalling what happened in the day, she

suddenly felt as though she had been taken advantage of, yet, the one that did it was still as clueless as before. She could feel her body itching all over from the irritation.

“Big sis Zhu Yao.” The moment she arrived at the door, Wang Xuzhi had walked over.

“Little wimp!” Zhu Yao was shocked. “Why are you still here?”

“You left before you could finish what you wanted to say, I was worried...” Wang Xuzhi frowned. “Did something happen?”

Zhu Yao’s face reddened, as she firmly shook her head. Even if she were to be beaten to death, she would not tell anyone else that she was forcefully kissed. “I’m alright. Ahem. Go and take your rest for now.”

“Ou.” Only then did Wang Xuzhi turned and headed for the door. However, he still turned his head around to look at Zhu Yao’s terrible expression. Was she really alright?

Obviously, Zhu Yao was not alright. Her entire body felt uncomfortable, alright? Clearly, even though she was the one being crushed on, why was she so frustrated about it? Not good, she must find a chance to get back her pace.

After silently making this decision, only then did Zhu Yao finally turn around, head inside her house and closed the door. However, no one realized that a figure was currently withdrawing the

invisibility formation nearby. After standing around for a moment, that person then turned and flew away at high speed.

Chapter 83: Male BUG, Female BUG

After releasing the Wood Spirit, Zhu Yao lived a calm and stable life for a couple of months. Zhu Yao was still unsure if Xiao Yi's 'BUG' characteristic had weakened, because he had gone for closed-door training, and he swore that before reaching the intermediate stages of Nascent Soul, he definitely would not come out of closed-door training. The Sect Master had simply wanted him to not leave Ancient Hill Sect for two hundred years, yet, he went for closed-door training on his own accord. He had just formed his Nascent Soul not too long ago, so to reach the intermediate stages of Nascent Soul, at least, he would only be able to leave his closed-door training after five hundred years. Both the master and disciple were keeping themselves in their own homes at the mountain peak.

It seemed like flirting was not the only thing Xiao Yi knew. He still had a functioning brain, and knew that he had to lay low and keep to a low profile. At the very least, from the surface, he seemed to have broken off completely from Rui Yu. This would also give him a good reputation inside the Sect. However, not contacting Rui Yu, did not mean that he had no connections with the rest of the girls. Everyday, Zhu Yao could see waves after waves of girls casting their arts to send various spiritual grass and medicinal pellets to the mountain peak.

Zhu Yao shook her head. She really could not figure how what these girls, who kept coming one after another, were thinking in their hearts. Even idol fans would not be this crazy, alright? She really did not know what their motives were. Sighing deeply, she turned her head to glance at the mountain peak, and suddenly, an evil idea popped up.

Heheheh, when the time comes, it will definitely be very lively.

Zhu Yao made a firm decision in her heart. However, she lacked of a helper, hence, leaving a trail of dust clouds behind her, she ran to look for Zi Dan. He was definitely the best helper she could find.

Zhu Yao told him her thoughts, and as expected, Zi Dan's eyes brightened up as well. "That's a really good idea. Why don't we find senior-martial brother Sect Master now?"

Just when the two was planning to leave, Sect Master Zi Mo had already came to look for them. Recently, the Sect Master's mood was pretty good, probably, he's in high spirits because of the happy event. It had been more than a few thousand years since he cultivated into a Nascent Soul, yet suddenly, he found out he had a successor, as his wife was pregnant. Naturally, Zi Mo was exhilarated by this piece of news, and when one's too happy, it would be easy to go crazy. Hence, he no longer involved himself in the sect's matters, and the things he was managing had reduced. Every day, when he had nothing to do, he would stroll around the various mountains, and when he saw people, he would ask these questions.

"Are you a practitioner-pair? Do you have a companion? Do you have a child? Hehe, I do!" Zi Mo smiled like a daisy.

Zhu Yao's face darkened. Are all people who are becoming fathers this crazy?

“Senior-martial brother!” Zi Dan sighed. “This is already the third time you’re asking me these questions.”

“Oh? Did I ask them before?” Zi Mo stroked his own white beard. “Haah, junior-martial brother, don’t take offense to it. You know, I’m about to become a father, and I have too many things on my plate. Thus, I will always forget one or two matters.”

If you have too many things on your plate, then why do you still have the time to take a stroll, hey? Zhu Yao silently retorted. Suddenly, she recalled the bunch of miscellaneous matters he pushed to her. He couldn’t have pushed all of the matters to her, right?

“Congratulations to you! Congratulations for becoming a father!” Zhu Yao said a few words as a small retaliation.

However, Zi Mo completely did not understand the meaning behind these words, and even chuckled and gave an apology. “Much thanks, junior-martial brother. Don’t worry, you will have your chance as we-Uh, seems like you won’t ever get your chance.”

Zhu Yao: “...”

What do you mean by that, hey?

“Oh right, look at your impatient faces, where are you guys heading off to?” Zi Mo asked.

Only then did Zi Dan recall the important matter, and thus, told Zi Mo their thoughts as well.

Zi Dan nodded his head after hearing it. “This idea can indeed solve the issue once and for all. However, are you two sure that this is true?”

“Senior-martial brother can be at ease about this.” Zi Dan patted on his farts to guarantee it. “In these so many years, I have always paid attention to matters regarding the Beast-Taming Mountain.”

“Mn.” Only then did Zi Mo give his nod of approval. “Then this matter is decided. Tomorrow, I will bring this up to senior-martial aunt, but, I will have to trouble junior-martial brother to personally make the trip.”

Naturally, Zi Dan did not reject his request. On the morning of the second day, he had already made his preparations to head up to the peak of Beast-Taming Mountain.

Although Zi Mo was a little worthless these few days, he was still dependable with the things he did. When Zhu Yao arrived, the Mountain lords and elders had all been seated in the hall. As for old man Zi Mo, he was currently carrying his daisy-like face, persistently telling the people present about his parenting role.

Just when everyone was getting tired of hearing it, Zi Dan returned while carrying a strange expression.

“How did it go?” Zi Mo stepped forward and asked. Zhu Yao was a little anxious as well. He couldn’t have been rejected, right?

“Senior-martial aunt Feng Yi agreed to it.” Zi Dan said.

Zhu Yao heaved a sigh of relief. Since she agreed to it, why did you frown for?

“Since that’s the case, this matter has been decided then.” Zi Mo turned and looked towards Hongchou behind him. “Junior-martial sister Hongchou, when do you think we should do this?”

“This can be considered to be a happy occasion. When I return, I shall inform Ling Long to make her preparations.” Hongchou smiled.

“Good, good, good.” Zi Mo stroked his beard, his face was filled with creases from his smile. Lowering his head, he made some calculations. “Incidentally, there’s a very auspicious date five months later. Why don’t we hold junior-martial Xiao’s practitioner-pair ceremony then?”

Hongchou nodded. “I will heed to senior-martial brother Sect Master’s plans.”

That’s right, the idea that Zhu Yao came up with, was to have Xiao Yi marry Ling Long. All he thought of everyday was flirt, although she knew he was a harem master, it’s not good to not bear the responsibilities for his actions. Ling Long could be said to

have followed him since young, the woman he knew the earliest. However, in the dream, Ling Long was infatuated with him, but other than sending Ling Long to the Medicine Mountain in the beginning, he did not bring her along during his ascension later on. Even her appearances with him were very little, as though he had forgotten her existence. Simply because she was a Tri-Spiritual Veins holder, and could not keep up with his pace which was guided by a golden finger.

Zhu Yao had also only decided on her after a long consideration. Even with so many girls by his side, he still wished to leave after eating and wiping his buttocks clean? How could it be that simple? Once your debt hits a certain limit, eventually, you will have to return it.

A practitioner-pair companion was not just an ordinary wedding. In the cultivation world, there could only be one practitioner-pair companion, unless one of them were to die or was unable to ascend. And practitioner-pair arts were able to bring benefits to cultivation, and it could be said that they could raise their cultivation at the same pace. If, a man were to have an affair with another woman after having a companion, then he will be shamed by everyone in the world, and if he was not careful, he might be mistaken as a heretic practitioner who practiced absorbing someone else's cultivation.

What she was unable to predict however, was how the rest of the girls would react after knowing that Xiao Yi would be forming a practitioner-pair. She kind of felt that a war of an extremely large scale might happen, especially when there's that Demigod-stage Rui Yu. Just by thinking about it, she could not help but feel a little excited!

And Xiao Yi was unable to reject it, because his master had agreed to this matter. Also, currently, he still harbored feelings for Ling Long, so he basically could not find an excuse to reject it.

“Little brother, do you have some sort of relationship with senior-martial aunt Feng Yi?” Zi Dan suddenly asked.

“Ah?” Zhu Yao was startled for a moment.

Zi Dan continued. “When I went to propose this marriage, senior-martial aunt was initially really happy. However, the moment I said it was for Xiao Yi, her expression sank. And she even asked why it wasn’t you who’s proposing this marriage?”

“Cough cough... cough, cough...” Zhu Yao choked on her tea, and she coughed so much her face had reddened, and her throat had turned coarse.

“Little brother?”

“Umm, about that, most probably, the sovereign has some misunderstanding about me. Hoho.” Holy. Feng Yi couldn’t have been that happy because she thought Zhu Yao was asking for her hand in marriage, right? Not good, in the future, it’s best to hide a little further away, and prevent Feng Yi from finding her. It would be terrible to have Feng Yi hate her for life due to love, before watching Xiao Yi’s great show.

The news of Xiao Yi marrying Ling Long, a disciple of Medicine Mountain, was quickly spread within Ancient Hill Sect. As Zhu Yao had expected, Xiao Yi did not express any objections, but, he did not really warm up to the idea either. There were still five months to the wedding, and with closed-door training as his reason, most of the matters were arranged by the Medicine Mountain.

However, in the end, Zhu Yao was unable to attend their wedding, because Sect Master's wife was about to give birth.

In the early morning, she was dragged to Sword Mountain by Wang Xuzhi, and as they walked, he was excitedly telling her this piece of news.

Although Zhu Yao really resented Zi Mo for pushing a bunch of matters to her, however, she was still rather happy for him for having a child. Zi Mo was the Sect Master, and adding that his relationship with people was great, seemingly at the moment they heard of the news that his wife was about to give birth, all of the Nascent Soul practitioners in the sect had made a beeline for the Main Mountain.

When Zhu Yao arrived at the little house at the side hall, she was shocked by the huge crowd of people inside.

They were either sitting or standing, and only old man Zi Mo, was walking back and forth in the house. He was especially eye-catching, and after a while, he once again casually pulled someone over to ask.

“My wife will be alright, right? Didn’t you say she will be pregnant for ten months? Why was it brought forward by a month?”

“Just how long do we have to wait? Can I see her now?”

“Why can’t I hear anymore sounds? I could still hear them just earlier, though?”

“Do you think it will be a boy, or a girl?”

“Will there be danger? Can I help? Will something happen?”

The face of the person whose hand was grabbed darkened. “Senior-martial brother, sister-in-law, at the very least, is a Nascent Soul practitioner as well, nothing will happen to her. Also... If you were to grab onto me any tighter than this, something will definitely happen to my hand!”

Only then did Zi Mo release his hand, and continued to walk about in the house. After walking back and forth a couple of times, he once again asked the same few questions.

So the old man had the potential to be a chatter-box as well. Zhu Yao was silently speechless, as she hurriedly found a place to sit, to prevent Zi Mo who was overly anxious from grabbing her.

Zhu Yao had always felt that women giving birth to children was something very sacred, yet, a little brutal as well. After all, those

who were mothers had to experience that degree of pain. But, what's mysterious was that there was not even a single sound coming from the room.

But after thinking for a moment, she understood. After all, she was a Nascent Soul practitioner as well, if she were to feel excruciating pain like a mortal, then that would be too embarrassing. Most probably, she had a special way to allow the child to be given birth safely, after all, she had never heard of any children dying due to a hard labor among those practitioners with children.

After sitting in the house for less than an hour, the cry of a baby could finally be heard from the room, among the crowd that was quietly waiting with expectations, the sound was especially resounding. Smiles surfaced on everyone's faces, and everyone congratulated Zi Mo one after another.

Old man Zi Mo was laughing so much, his mouth was unable to close.

A moment later, the door was opened, and the person who came out was exactly the Sect Master's wife, and in her embrace was a little baby. Everyone gave her their congratulations as well, and Zhu Yao curiously looked at the baby.

The baby is finally born. I wonder if it's a male bug, or a female bug.

Zhu Yao who had clearly seen the baby's face: "..."

The hell, why is she a BUG!?

Zhu Yao looked at the three grey letters that were printed on the little face, and at that moment, she even felt like killing herself. The smile that she had brought up earlier had stiffened on her face.

Zhu Yao was so furious she wanted to flip tables, and in her heart, she had already cursed and swore all the various vocabulary she had.

Isn't there supposed to be a single bug, and that's Xiao Yi? Why is a child who has just been born a bug as well? Can someone explain it to me?

Could it be that he was not the only one who could bring about an apocalypse, and this child could as well? Just how weak was this world, to the point where apocalypses could be brought about so easily and casually?

Chapter 84: Xiao Yi's Godly Logic

“Junior-martial brother Soi, junior-martial brother Soi!” Zhu Yao was suddenly nudged by the person next to her, and only then did she regain her senses.

“Ah?”

“What ‘Ah?’ It’s your turn, hurry and take it out.”

Zhu Yao was startled, and asked in reflex. “Take out what?”

Zi Dan laughed out loud, slapped on her shoulder, and quipped. “You can’t have rushed over here too quickly, and have forgotten to bring a greeting gift for your little niece, right?”

Only then did Zhu Yao realize, that everyone present, had took out either mystic tool or spiritual pellet related items, and handed them to the child’s mother. These were considered as greeting gifts, and even Wang Xuzhi had passed her a spiritual sword.

Except her!

Zhu Yao gave a face. She really did not know she had to prepare a gift. Turning her to glance, she glanced at the little baby girl who was still in someone’s embrace, and the three letters on her face were still causing her to feel irritated. Suddenly, an idea came to mind.

Turning around, she looked at Zi Mo in the eyes, and said. “Hoho, senior-martial brother. I really have forgotten to bring a greeting gift, however, the moment I see this little niece of mind, I exceptionally... like her. Why don’t I take her as my disciple then?”

No matter what kind of BUG this little girl was, right now, she was just a baby who had just been born. The reason why Xiao Yi would bring the Five Spirits away, causing the apocalypse, was because of the experiences when he was young, which caused his three views to be distorted ever since he was young, and could not be reformed. However, this child was still young, she could completely bring her up from young, and have her become a kind person.

“Uh, this...” Zi Mo hesitated a little.

“You sure came up with a great idea!” Hongchou from the side suddenly cut in, snorting lightly. “You did not even bring a greeting gift, yet, you still wish to take away their daughter. Senior-martial brother, do not listen to him. I see that I have a better compatibility with your daughter, why don’t she become a disciple of mine?”

Zhu Yao turned her head and stared at her. You damnable lolicon.

Hongchou stared back at him. Miser who did not even bring a greeting gift.

Zi Mo looked at the two forceful people back and forth, and was hard pressed for a moment. He never planned on letting her daughter have a master. And, both him and his wife were Nascent Soul practitioners, so why must his daughter take someone else as her master!?

In the end, Zi Mo could only evade the topic by saying that his child was still young, and the matter could only be discussed after testing her spiritual veins. Then, he chased the two of them out.

After returning, Zhu Yao, however, could not calm down. She had yet to deal with Xiao Yi, yet now, another one popped up. She was really being treated as a GM, huh? With so many bugs around, how could she fix them all?

After that day, Zhu Yao had went to the Sword Mountain to see the little girl for a couple of times. Although she would always encounter that lolicon Hongchou, she had confirmed it, the exact same letters, BUG, were really written on the face of the little child. The only difference was, the one she saw back then on Xiao Yi was much deeper. And, that yellow exclamation mark did not appear above the little girl's head. Did this prove that she could still be reformed?

She believed that there was no bad people from birth. However, the main point was, how would she reform her?

“Big sis Zhu Yao, are you here?” From afar, she could hear little wimp's voice.

When she opened the door, he had once again entered with a big stack of documents. After knowing that she wished to take his own daughter as her disciple, Zi Mo enslaving her had become even more justifiable.

Hence, her enslaving little wimp had become even more natural as well.

Wang Xuzhi looked as though he had been born to do great things. The big and small matters between the various Mountains, caused her head to ache, yet, he was able to manage each and every one of them smoothly.

This was something she had to praise him for.

“Why did you come here so late in the night?” Zhu Yao took the documents from his hands, and placed them on the table. “You could have sent them over tomorrow.”

“I was afraid that you might be in an urgent need for them.” Little wimp smiled. Habitually, he poured a cup of tea for her, and then, poured one for himself. “Big sis Zhu Yao, did you just return from Sword Mountain?”

“Mn.”

He shook his head. “Big sis Zhu Yao, you should just give up. Master only have this one treasured daughter after so many years, furthermore, master-aunt risked the danger of losing her

cultivation just to give birth to little junior-martial sister, so how would they allow their own daughter to take someone else as her master?”

Zhu Yao rolled her eyes at him. What did this little wimp know? She did not want to bring up their child for them either. Didn't she have no other choice? And, there was something she was more worried about. Back then when she saw Xiao Yi's BUG, she had that precognitive dream. Now, even though she had slept everyday, she was unable to dream of the matters concerning the Sect Master's daughter.

Seeing that she was still not giving up, Wang Xuzhi sighed. Drinking a sip of his tea, he suddenly recalled something, and asked. “Oh right, big sis Zhu Yao. Why did you deactivate all of the prohibition formations at the entrance? Did something happen?”

“Prohibition? I didn't deactivate them.” Zhu Yao was startled, as she made eye contact with him.

Then, who closed them?

Her heart tightened, and just when she was about to stand up and take a look, a cloud of black smoke suddenly flew over. Zhu Yao hurriedly set up a defense formation, yet, she was still a step too late, and was struck by that black smoke.

Wang Xuzhi fainted instantly at that moment.

“Little wimp!” Zhu Yao became anxious. Just when she was about to circulate her spiritual energy, she felt a pain at her chest. The mystic powers in her entire body, seemed to have been completely sealed, and could not be released.

“We meet again.” A dark female voice rang next to her ears, and then, she was struck with a palm at the back.

In the next instant, she sank into a state of unconsciousness.

It was Rui Yu!

When Zhu Yao woke up, she was at a dark place. Her four limbs were being restrained by talisman chains, and she was being hanged above a huge black pool. That pool was exactly the same as the the pool used to refine demonic beasts she saw at the underground city. The only difference was that the pool before were refining the remains of demonic beasts, while the pool now was floating with human bones.

At that moment, Zhu Yao felt creeped out, and just when she was thinking of struggling, she realized that her mystic powers were sealed, even her four limbs were stiffened a little abnormally. It seemed like someone had casted an art on her.

“Yo, seems like you’re awake?” Rui Yu suddenly appeared in front of her. Stationing herself in the air, her smile was extremely bewitching, as she pointed to the surroundings. “This is a prison designed especially for you, how is it?”

“It’s you!” Rui Yu? Why did she capture her?

“Seems like you remembered me.”

“Why did you capture me?”

Rui Yu laughed, and then, suddenly, gave her a tight slap. “Why? After how you plotted against my Xiao-lang, shouldn’t I capture you?”

Plotted against? She’s talking about how she helped to matchmake Xiao Yi and Ling Long?

“I arranged a very good marriage for him, how could you say it’s a plot?” The hell. You captured the wrong person, right? If you have to capture someone, it should be Xiao Yi, shouldn’t it?

Rui Yu’s expression turned cold, raising her hand, she gave her another slap. “Don’t play with my mind, I will never believe it. I have never suspected Xiao Yi’s feelings for me. If you’re the least bit sensible, then take out your treasures. Otherwise...”

Zhu Yao was startled. “What treasures?”

Rui Yu frowned, reaching her hands out, she cast an art. At that moment, Zhu Yao felt as though her entire body was exposed to intense flames, her entire body even began to spasm from the pain.

“It doesn’t matter if you don’t speak.” Rui Yu laughed coldly. “In any case, I have all the time in the world to get you to speak.”

After she said that, she disappeared. As for Zhu Yao, she fainted from the pain.

Ever since then, she would come over everyday to ask that question. If she did not get an answer, she would torture Zhu Yao. Sometimes, it was flames. Sometimes, it was lightning. Sometimes, it was ice. The punishment meted out everyday was different.

And her cultivation just had to be completely suppressed, and she was completely unable to resist at all. If she had not once experienced the pain of a shattered Azoth Core, she would have already turned crazy from the torture.

When Rui Yu appeared before her for the eleventh time, and was about to torture her, she finally could not help but curse out.

“Xiao Yi, you motherf***ing coward, you have the guts to capture me, but not to appear before me?”

Rui Yu paused for moment, a hint of fluster instantly flashed past her face, and then, she immediately recovered. “What are you blabbering about? I’m the one who captured you, what does this have to do with him?”

“Do you think I’m motherf***ing stupid!?” Zhu Yao rolled her

eyes at her. “Without an insider, how would you, a single heretic practitioner, dare to infiltrate Ancient Hill Sect?” In these ten days, she finally understood, why the formation at her courtyard would deactivate by itself. And at that same moment, Rui Yu suddenly appeared in her room.

“Hmph, you’re rather smart.” A white figure revealed himself beside Rui Yu, and as expected, it was Xiao Yi. “No wonder you’re able to plot against me every single time.”

“Are you crazy? What did I plot against you?” Zhu Yao was even about to curse his mom. She saved him for so many times, why did they all turn into plots?

“Stop acting!” Xiao Yi’s expression turned cold, as he said, emphasizing on every single word. “Senior. Martial. Aunt. Zhu. Yao.”

Zhu Yao was stunned. The hell, how did he know about it?

“Are you wondering why I knew about it?” Xiao Yi snorted. “If I did not happen to hear Wang Xuzhi call out your name, I really wouldn’t have known, you’re actually Zhu Yao, the personal succeeding disciple of Sovereign Yu Yan, who should have died a hundred years ago.”

Zhu Yao turned solemn. She knew she should not have told little wimp the truth. Although he would always call her ‘elder’ whenever someone else was around, in private, he would still call her big sis ‘Zhu Yao’. But just when did Xiao Yi hear it?

“The matter about you taking over someone’s body doesn’t concern me, but you definitely shouldn’t have plotted against me every single time.”

“Stop!” The more Zhu Yao listened, the more confused she became. “I have never... Taking over a body, and plotting against you, is there even any relations between them at all?”

The hatred in Xiao Yi’s eyes deepened. “Don’t think I don’t know how you despicably stole my Wood Spirit and Water Spirit from my hands.”

Zhu Yao frowned. As expected, he had already known the matters concerning the Wood Spirit and Water Spirit. But...

“Wait a minute? Stolen from your hands?” Just where did that come from?

“Do you really think you could have done everything seamlessly?” Xiao Yi’s face was filled with resentment. “That old man who saved me from the Secret Realm, had long told me of your matters. It was just that my cultivation back then was still shallow, and I did not know that girl was actually metamorphosed by you as well.”

“Then, did he tell you this? Back then when your Azoth Core went berserk, I was the one who suppressed it. Otherwise, you would have already died from trying to maintain your Azoth Core.” At that moment, Zhu Yao felt it was a little funny. “Also,

you said I stole them from you. Were the Wood Spirit and Water Spirit ever in your hands? Or are you saying that your name is written on them somewhere?”

Xiao Yi was speechless for a moment, his embarrassment turned to rage, as he said. “Stop denying it. In any case, no matter what, I will never forgive you.”

“Who’s the one denying it!? Xiao Yi, do you even have brains at all!? Can you actually think logically!?”

“Shut up.” Xiao Yi once again tortured her, stopping her words. “There’s no point in speaking any further. If you don’t hand me the Wood Spirit, Water Spirit, and your Body-Takeover Mystic Treasure today, I will never let you off.”

In the end, aren’t all these just for your own benefits? Zhu Yao coldly laughed. She wanted to roll on the ground from the pain, however, she was firmly tied.

Chapter 85: A Small Universal Outbreak

Most probably, ever since Xiao Yi realized of the existence of the Wood Spirit, he had never given up on the Wood Spirit. Although he had long cleansed off his Wood Spirit Vein, he still wished to possess it. The reason why he did not have the slightest of objection against her suggestion to have her form a practitioner-pair with Ling Long, was probably because he had long known of her identity.

Yet, he contacted Rui Yu in the dark. No, most probably, ever since he returned to the Sect, he had already planned everything well. He wanted to obtain the Water Spirit, only to unexpectedly realize that the Wood Spirit was in her hands as well. Thus, he captured her, and wanted to obtain both of them.

However, clearly, she had already released the Water Spirit, and Feng Yi had personally saw it as well. Seeing Xiao Yi's look, he seemed to think that it was still in her hands. Could it be that Feng Yi did not tell Xiao Yi about this matter?

“And you don't have to hope that people will come save you.”

What did he mean?

Xiao Yi smiled coldly. “On the day you disappeared, several heretic practitioners had broken into Ancient Hill Sect. Although all of them had been captured, the strange thing was, Elder Soi Sauz of Beast-Taming Mountain had disappeared. How do you think everyone will think of this?”

Zhu Yao widened her eyes. The hell, this little white wolf.

He was planning to falsely accuse her for hooking up with heretic practitioners.

“So... No one will come to save you. And even there is, most probably, they will be here to kill you, a traitor who have hooked himself up with heretic practitioners.”

Momma’s egg! I really want to bite him to death!

Rui Yu grabbed her hair, and threatened. “If you’re sensible enough, hand over the items now. I can bestow you a quick death if you do?”

“I have already released the Water Spirit and Wood Spirit.” Zhu Yao said honestly. “If you don’t believe me, you can ask your master, she personally saw it.”

Xiao Yi was startled for a moment, revealing a hint of surprise. After pondering for a moment, as though he had believed her words, he changed his question. “Then, what about your Soul Takeover exotic treasure?”

Zhu Yao suddenly laughed. “That’s something I stole from you as well?”

What high-sounding words. In the end, wasn't he simply trying to steal her stuffs? Xiao Yi had always thought that he himself was always right. And even if he teamed up with Rui Yu, he would still righteously believe that what he did was correct.

Setting a deliberate plan. Capturing her, and imprisoning her. And even forcibly saying that the Wood Spirit and Water Spirit were his, saying that it was all in the name of returning to its rightful possessor. Then what about the matters regarding her Soul Takeover? How was he going to explain that then?

As expected, a trace of a troubled expression flashed past Xiao Yi's face, and then, waving his sleeves strongly, he walked away.

Having a guilty conscience? Clearly, he was a villain, yet, he liked to call himself a gentleman.

Zhu Yao had planned to ridicule him with a few words, when suddenly, the pain on her body intensified. She felt as though her blood veins in her body were about to explode, and she could not help but puke out a few mouthfuls of blood.

"I have already said it before, we're very patient." Rui Yi chuckled.

Zhu Yao decided to simply close her eyes and act dead. In any case, this was not the first time she died, she was already used to it. If you have the guts, then kill me.

Rui Yu and Xiao Yi tortured her for another three days, and every time she felt as though she was about to die, when she opened her eyes, she realized she was still there. Rui Yu was basically a devil, as she seemed to especially specialize in these sorts of torture methods, as though she had practiced this for a few thousand times. It seemed like she had done quite a few things like mistreating people.

“If you don’t wish to be tortured, then be honest about that exotic treasure which allows you to takeover bodies. And it’s even able to maintain one’s cultivation?” Rui Yu said cynically. “Don’t think of dying, we know that you have a Soul Takeover exotic treasure, so how can we release you to take someone else’s body? To tell you the truth, these chains are reinforced with a soul-locking curse. Even if you die, your soul will not be able to escape either.”

The hell? How could these two people be so ruthless? Did they even want her soul to dissipate?

“So you best tell us sooner, otherwise, even if you’re able to withstand it, most probably, that little brother we captured along with you...”

The one who was captured along with her? It’s little wimp!

Zhu Yao suddenly widened her eyes. “What did you two do to him?”

“Yo, looks like he’s rather important to you.” Rui Yu smiled. “If

you don't want him to die, you best tell us honestly.”

Zhu Yao clenched her fists, she really wanted to scratch her face. She was both furious and worried. She could care less if they captured her, but why did they have to capture little wimp? He could not resurrect himself like her.

Taking a deep breath, Zhu Yao told herself to calm down, and then, after a moment, she spoke up. “I do indeed have a divine item. My master gave it to me. However, this divine item recognizes its owner, so it's useless even if you two possess it.”

It was actually a divine item. Rui Yu's eyes brightened.

Even Xiao Yi had come over as well. Suppressing the excitement in his heart, he said. “Divine items do indeed recognize their owners. Since your master was able to give it to you, naturally, there's a way to have it recognize someone else as its owner, right?”

Zhu Yao did not say anything.

Xiao Yi, however, thought that it was a silent consent, and once again used Wang Xuzhi to threaten her.

Zhu Yao then suggested. “Release me, and allow me to see Wang Xuzhi. Otherwise, I won't hand it over.”

“No!” Rui Yu rejected.

“Then at the very least, you can release me and allow me to catch a breather, right? When I’m released, I can first pass you two the divine item, then, you two can lead me to where Wang Xuzhi is.”

Rui Yu and Xiao Yi made eye contact. They hesitated for a moment, and only after a while did they cast an art, releasing the chains that were restraining her.

The moment Zhu Yao fell on the ground, she realized how heavy the accumulated torture on her body was. She had always underestimated Xiao Yi, believing that although his three views were a little twisted, at the very least, he should still have a bottom line. But it seemed like his bottom line had long been twisted beyond repair, and had been completely distorted. He had turned into a person who only had himself as the center, someone who would resort to any means to achieve his objectives.

The “BUG” on his face had already lightened by a huge amount. Zhu Yao dared to make a conjecture that, without his Metal Spirit, he would no longer be a BUG that possessed a heaven-breaking fortune.

“Where’s the divine item?” Xiao Yi anxiously asked.

Zhu Yao smiled at him. Then, she took a deep breath, accumulating all of the strength in her body, she shouted out. “Open Sesame!”

A large roar resounded, and a white flash came flying in, turning

into a gigantic demonic beast as it landed.

Rui Yu's and Xiao Yi's faces changed.

“A ninth-ranked demonic beast.” Xiao Yi was startled. “I did not expect that you actually still have the strength to summon your contracted demonic beast.” Contracted demonic beasts and their masters had a very unique way of communication, and when there's a need, they could forcefully summon their demonic beasts. However, because the place she was restrained at earlier had a formation that could block off one's presence, she requested to be released. “Hmph. Do you think a mere ninth-ranked demonic beast, is able to deal with the two of us?”

“No, this isn't ninth-ranked.” Rui Yu's face was a little pale, as she closely stared at the demonic beast in front of her. “This demonic beast... is eleventh-ranked.”

“Correct.” Sesame boastfully replied with a swing of its tail.

And then, with a loud roar, it pounced towards the two people whose expressions had instantly paled.

Rooooar~~ ㄥ|`o'|ㄣ

Rooooar~~ ㄥ|`o'|ㄣ

Biting and chasing after the two of them, the pressure of the mighty demonic beast, as though it was playing with them, came

pressing down on them.

Although Rui Yu was a Demigod-stage practitioner, she was still, after all, an early-stage Demigod. She was basically unable to beat a demonic beast which was equal to an Ascension-stage practitioner. Even if Xiao Yi was helping by the side, they were only able to barely resist it.

“Don’t you want to save Wang Xuzhi?” Seeing that they were already at a disadvantage, Xiao Yi shouted out loud at Zhu Yao.

Zhu Yao really wanted to spit at his face. He still did not forget to threaten her in a time like this. Just how stupid was she in their eyes? “Even if I release you, you two still wouldn’t tell me of his whereabouts. So I might as well find him myself.”

Seeing that she did not fall for it, Xiao Yi’s face darkened. Then suddenly, he began to laugh out loud.

“Do you think that, you’re still able to see him?”

Zhu Yao was startled. “What do you mean?”

“That brat is very important to you, right?” Xiao Yi laughed. “Ever since we entered the sect, you have always stood up for him. But it’s a pity... No matter how much you protect him, there’s no use any longer. He’s already dead! At the very day when we captured you.”

Zhu Yao simply felt a buzz in her mind, as though something that had been clamped together tightly, broke. Her vision instantly began to turn blurry.

“Little wimp is dead... Little wimp is dead... Little wimp is...” In her mind, these words kept repeating over and over.

How could he die?

He should always be there for her to worry about. Shouldn't he?

No, this isn't true.

“You're lying!”

“Hmph. If we dared to head over to Ancient Hill Sect to capture you, how could we leave him alive?”

“No, no!” Zhu Yao muttered out these words. However, the more she muttered out, the more bleak that slim thread of hope became. She muttered it out a thousand times, however, in her heart, there were ten thousand voices reminding her of reality.

A pain that was even more severe than torture, suddenly enveloped her entire body. Uncontrollable tears came pouring out, and in front of her were all of little wimp's figures.

That prideful look he had when he was ten, that look when he

said he would definitely not marry her.

That fifteen-year-old youth, that look when he said he would protect her.

After forming his Azoth Core, that look when he said he wanted to exact revenge for her.

And that final day, that look when he passed her a cup of tea.

Even though she remembered them so vividly?

And she was even able to remember clearly what Doctor Wang said to her. “Deities are taking in disciples today in the city. I wish to trouble you to bring my child over.”

She clearly promised Doctor Wang, to watch over little wimp.

How could he be gone just like that?

Such a small little child, whom she had protected and watched as he grew up. He was both thoughtful, and obedient.

Even she herself could not bear to scold him.

On what basis could he disappear just like that?

On what basis!?

Zhu Yao simply felt an irregular fury surging from the depth of her heart, as though something had exploded in an instant. In her heart, there was only a single thought.

What's the use in saving such a world?

In an instant, the mountain shook, and the earth rumbled. The entire prison began to collapse inch by inch, turning into a deep, gigantic crater. The universe which was initially as clear as day, turned completely dark in an instant.

As though apocalypse had arrived, the bird-beasts hurriedly flew away, purple-colored heavenly lightning ruthlessly struck onto the earth one after another, surging up a huge storm.

“Mis... Mistress!” Sesame was frightened by this abnormal change as well. Due to the natural instinct of a demonic beast, he felt as though something of an extremely large scale was occurring, and a terrifying aura of death, was currently enveloping the entire world.

It turned to look towards the ground at the side, only to see Zhu Yao currently sitting there in a daze, as though she had lost consciousness. Her body was being surrounded by a huge amount of spiritual energy, yet, they were not the lightning spiritual energy her Spirit Vein needed, rather, they were chaotic spiritual energy combined by the five types of spiritual energy – Metal, Wood, Water, Fire and Earth.

And currently, Zhu Yao was at the very center of the turbulence.

“Mis... Mistress...” It stood still, as it did not dare to move either. This phenomenon felt as though the five types of spiritual energy were going berserk at the same time.

Even Rui Yu was frightened by this strange phenomenon as well. Initially, the reason why they revealed Wang Xuzhi’s death, was to disrupt Zhu Yao’s state of mind, so as to cut off her connection with the demonic beast.

But right now, just what in the world...

Xiao Yi simply felt a pain in his chest, as he went down on a single knee. The Metal Spirit in his body seemed as though it had received some sort of instructions, as it tried to break out from his body. He could barely suppress it any longer.

Chapter 86: The First Cannon Fodder

Zhu Yao still maintained that dazed look, as though she could no longer hear anything or anyone at all.

Yet, from all around, more and more things were being swept into this outbreak, and from the looks of it, it was becoming even more rampant.

A cold voice, suddenly sounded from the horizon.

“Yu Wang!”

The dazed Zhu Yao suddenly jolted, and all of the anomaly, stopped at that very instant. She turned her head blankly, as she looked at that white figure, who looked as though he was walking over step by step from the far horizon.

Bit by bit, his figure slowly showed itself in her eyes, until that person raised his hand, and lightly pressed it on her head.

“Mas... ter.” As though her strings had been reattached, tears began to fall, drop by drop.

Yu Yan squatted down, hugged her in his embrace, and said in a low voice. “Don’t cry.”

As though she had been reminded of it, Zhu Yao hugged his neck,

and burst out in tears. With her loudest voice, she screamed out with all her might. As though she wanted to cry out her lifetime worth of tears.

“Little wimp... little wimp...”

“I know, I know.” Yu Yan stroked her head, and said with the gentlest voice he ever had in his whole life.

“I don’t want to kill people... I have never thought of that before... Over there, ever since we’re young, our teachers teach us, to be kind, to be brave, to be good people...”

“Mn, I believe you.”

“But... I really can’t hold it in any longer. I wish to destroy everything! Everything!”

“Be obedient, you’re tired, sleep.”

Yu Yan raised his head and looked towards the nearby Sesame. Understanding his thoughts, in a flash, its figure entered Zhu Yao’s divine sense.

“Master, I’m so upset...” Her voice sank, she seemed to be extremely tired out.

Then, he lifted her hand, and circulated his spiritual energy,

erasing the curse that was imprinted on it.

“Sleep, master will come to wake you up.”

Zhu Yao simply felt a sudden giddiness, and her vision instantly blackened.

At that moment, she saw that familiar conversation window.

Zhu Yao was stunned for quite a while, and simply felt her mind was completely blank. After a long while, she sighed in hindsight. So she was already dead quite some time ago.

That was understandable. For someone who was so afraid of pain like her, how could she endure so many days of brutal torture? Most probably, she was already tortured to death a few days ago. Xiao Yi and Rui Yu had simply prevented her from using that so-called ‘divine item’ to “takeover” someone’s body again.

They sealed her soul in her body, and it was unable to come out. However, how could they have known that she had never taken over anyone’s body? Although she was unclear of the reason, for every body she resurrected into, basically none of them had a former owner. As though those bodies had appeared out of thin air.

Zhu Yao looked at that conversation window. Probably because it knew that her mood wasn’t good, the notification wasn’t as provocative as the previous two times.

There was only a single, simple sentence written.

Do you wish to resurrect?

Of course, there was only a single option, “Yes”.

Sighing deeply, Zhu Yao felt as though she was about to suffocate from that deep sorrow pressing down on her in the depths of her heart. “I’m feeling very uncomfortable, I want to calm down for a moment. Is that possible?”

The conversation window paused for a moment. However, it did not behave like it did in the past, refreshing itself wildly right after receiving her objection. Rather, it shook about, and the words on it disappeared. A single, simple word replaced them.

Alright.

“Thank you.”

She gave her thanks, and then, that conversation window disappeared. The view in front of her changed to the scene at the moment after her death. She looked at it a little numbly.

When Xiao Yi saw that his matters had been exposed, naturally, he wanted to run.

Yu Yan rooted the two of them to the ground.

Feng Yi, however, appeared at this moment. Zhu Yao thought that she was here to save her disciple, however, she looked straight at the corpse in Yu Yan's hands, her eyes were filled with sorrow.

In the next instant, she actually raised her hand and slapped Xiao Yi. Naturally, he had no strength to resist.

“Master~” Xiao Yi's face was filled with disbelief, as though he had never expected that his beloved and respected master would act against him.

“You betrayed the sect, and killed a fellow member of the same sect. You have even hooked yourself with a heretic practitioner. As of today, you're no longer a disciple of mine.” Feng Yi once again waved her hand, erasing the mark of a personal succeeding disciple on his forehead, and also, forcefully retrieving the Metal Spirit from his body.

“They forced me!” Xiao Yi clenched his teeth, and wanted to resist, however, he was pressed strongly onto the ground by Yu Yan's pressure. Adding that in that outbreak earlier, the Metal Spirit had strangely wanted to charge out of his body in the first place, hence currently, retrieving it was an easy feat.

The red Metal Spirit struggled a bit in Feng Yi's hands, as though it wanted to return to Xiao Yi's body. Feng Yi laughed coldly. “The Metal Spirit is supposed to be purest of gold in color, yet in your hands, it had turned into a sinister red. Only someone who

possesses the quality of a devil is able to bring up such a Metal Spirit. Did someone else force you to do that as well?”

Xiao Yi was startled, as though he had just realized this problem. He had always thought that the color of the Metal Spirit was irregular, and believed that it turned out this way because it had taken his blood, and recognized him as its owner. The quality of a devil? How could he possess the quality of a devil?

Feng Yi no longer bothered to look at him, hugged her fist, and spoke to Yu Yan. “Senior-martial uncle Yu Yan, he killed a fellow member of the same sect, a crime of the extremely heinous degree. Now, I shall hand him and the Metal Spirit to senior-martial uncle, and have senior-martial uncle pass the verdict.”

Yu Yan reached his hand out to take the Metal Spirit from her hands. Frowning, he circulated his spiritual energy and strongly grasped it. Flashes of lightning appeared in his hand, in an instant, the Metal Spirit turned into countless of golden light particles, and disappeared. A devil-corrupted Metal Spirit could not be left in the world, so he allowed it to return to the normal metal spiritual energy flow.

At the instant when the Metal Spirit disappeared, the BUG on Xiao Yi’s face instantly disappeared without a trace as well.

After Yu Yan dealt with the Metal Spirit, he turned his head towards Xiao Yi’s direction, his expression instantly turned as cold as ice. Taking a deep breath, as though he was strongly suppressing the anger in his heart, he waved his hand, and a ray of white light struck into Xiao Yi’s body. Xiao Yi simply felt the spiritual energy

in his body dispersing, and he was no longer able to accumulate them.

“I have already destroyed his Spiritual Vein and Dantian, henceforth, there’s no possibility of him ever cultivating into a deity.” That stupid disciple of his had always been soft, and could not bear to take lives. If he were to kill him now, once she regained her senses, she might regret it. “As for that heretic practitioner, similarly, her cultivation has been dispersed. Hand her over to Zi Mo to deal with.”

After saying that, he once again looked at the breathless Zhu Yao in his embrace. In a flash, his figure disappeared.

Zhu Yao took a deep breath. Xiao Yi was no longer a BUG, so her mission was accomplished. However, she was unable to feel happy in her heart at all.

Suddenly, the scenery in front of her changed once again. What appeared was a mountain and lush green fields. Beneath the mountain, there were plots of farmland which she was rather familiar with.

Wasn’t that the little mountain village she was at when she crossed over?

“Stop there, you stinky brat, let’s see where you will run off to!” A man was waving a small wooden pole as he charged out of the house, chasing after a child, who was running around the fields.

That was Doctor Wang!

Zhu Yao jolted. Then that person he's chasing was...

She looked towards that little child, and as expected, it was Wang Xuzhi when he was young. Zhu Yao was agitated, and wanted to step forward to greet them, yet, she suddenly recalled she was in a spiritual state, and they were unable to see her at all.

The only thing she could do was stand at a side and watch them. A moment later, the scenery changed. She saw that running youth growing up bit by bit, as he turned into a big boy.

He was no longer rowdy and mischievous, instead, he was diligently learning medical techniques from Doctor Wang.

That's not right? Wang Xuzhi had already went with her to cultivate into a deity when he was ten, how could he be learning medical techniques? Could it be... This was his original path in life?

Zhu Yao hurriedly ran back to the Widow Zhu's house. As she had thought, the widow did not have a daughter, and was alone.

The scenery in front of her changed once again. Wang Xuzhi slowly gained achievements with his medical techniques, and was famous far and wide. Many people came over to visit him for medical treatment.

After another few years, he married a wife, and had a wonderful family. Zhu Yao was happy for him as well. However, the good days did not last, as his personality was too stubborn, and had offended the dignitaries.

An argument happened between him and his wife.

The scene once again changed. He was lying on his sickbed, however, no one was safeguarding by his side. Even his wife's figure could not be seen. After looking around for a moment, she saw his wife, currently packing up, and leaving the house without even turning back for a look.

And Wang Xuzhi who had crawled up from the bed, was currently looking at his own wife from afar, as he let out a sigh.

And then, she saw Wang Xuzhi taking his last breath as he laid on the bed. He was merely thirty six years old.

So this was Wang Xuzhi's original path?

The scenery she saw before her once again changed. She arrived at a dark and scary place. Zhu Yao was startled for a moment, however, she saw a figure, as translucent as a ghost, currently crossing a bridge.

Was this the Underworld told in legends?

Zhu Yao's guess was correct, and in the next moment, she saw

Wang Xuzhi's soul. Similarly, no matter how much she shouted, he was unable to hear her at all.

He was simply looking blankly as he crossed that bridge.

And then, he saw a crying male infant. Was this... reincarnation?

Zhu Yao inspected her surroundings. Looking at the degree of luxury, it should be a family with a pretty good background.

A moment later, a gorgeous woman came over. She carried him up and coaxed him softly. There was a man behind her as well, and he was currently looking at his own wife and child with an affectionate expression.

Simply with a single glance, one could feel that this was a beautiful family.

Zhu Yao stood there quietly for a few moments, and then, she sighed deeply. She didn't know what to say? Was the person, who got her to cross over to this place, trying to get her to let go by telling her all these?

But, so what? Even if he was initially only able to live for thirty six years, she had, after all, already changed his life. In the end, he died because of her as well. To her, this was reality.

How could she use things that never happened, to let go of the things that had already happened?

The people of this world, kept talking about deity cultivation, and more deity cultivation. But after cultivating into a deity, so what? In the end, everyone was still as greedy, as haughty, and some of them were even more brutal than regular people, as they held no regard for human life.

She once again lowered her head and glanced at the cradle. She could not see Wang Xuzhi's facial appearance from that baby at all. She did not know why, but she could not help but feel sad.

So what if he reincarnated? Only Wang Xuzhi himself could be Wang Xuzhi. Even if he reincarnated, even if he were to look the same when he grow up, he would not be the same little wimp as before.

She had never approved of things like three lives, reincarnations and connected fates. With different experiences, and different feelings, how could they be considered as the same person?

That resurrection conversation window once again appeared in front of her, she knew that she had ran out of time. There was another BUG waiting for her at the cultivation world, however, she completely did not have the slightest bit of will to move at all.

Taking a deep breath, she tapped on that "Yes" button. She then closed her eyes, and waited for her resurrection this time.

At that moment when she closed her eyes, a string of red words appeared on the screen.

“A great emotional problem has occurred to the target.
Emergency Response Measure Activated.”